GENETIC ANALYSIS OF POPULATIONS OF HIV-1 VARIANTS INFECTING DIFFERENT TISSUES *in vivo*.

ELIZABETH.S.HUGHES

Thesis presented for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy.

The University of Edinburgh.

1997.

DECLARATION

All of the procedures and investigations described in this thesis have been preformed by the author.

The contents of this thesis were composed by the author.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to take this opportunity to thank Dr Myra Arnott, my colleagues from the Molecular Virology Laboratory and the staff of the Hepatitis Reference Laboratory for all their help and support. I would also like to thank my supervisors Dr Pete Simmonds and Dr Jeanne Bell for their unending efforts in guiding me through my PhD.

My thanks also go to my family and close friends without whom I would not have made it through this experience sane.

This study was funded by an MRC ADP studentship grant.

ABSTRACT

Infection with human immunodeficiency type 1 (HIV-1) is associated with a slow irreversible impairment of the immune system eventually leading to AIDS. Many studies have been carried out to elucidate the infection mechanisms and pathogenicity of HIV-1 although a number of questions still remain. This study was carried out to investigate the relationship between HIV-1 populations infecting different tissues to determine when infection to non-lymphoid tissue occurs during the course of infection.

The time of spread of HIV-1 to non-lymphoid tissue was investigated by sequence comparisons of variants infecting a range of tissues from three individuals with AIDS in the $p17_{gag}$ gene, and flanking regions of V1/V2. In both regions, phylogenetic analysis revealed several lineages in each individual that contained sequences from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissue, such as brain. This observation contrasted strongly with the previously described organ-specific sequences in the V3 region in this study population and in other investigations.

By estimating mean synonymous pairwise distances in the $p17_{gag}$ region, it was possible to calculate the time of divergence of variants infecting lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues. In lymphoid tissue the mean diversity of *gag* sequences implied an approximate population age of 2.65 to 5.6 years, while those infecting brain were significantly more variable, suggesting an even earlier time of diversification (4.1 to 6.2 years). In two of the three individuals, these times of divergence indicate that infection of the brain may have occurred as an early event in the progression of the disease, preceding the onset of AIDS by several years.

This is the first report in which it has been possible to estimate times of diversification in different tissues *in vivo* and is of importance in understanding the dynamics of the spread of HIV-1 into non-lymphoid tissue, and its possible adaptation for replication in different cell types.

Phenotypic variation between different isolates of HIV-1, such as macrophage tropism and syncytium induction have been mapped to specific regions in the *env* gene, including the V3 and V1/V2 hypervariable regions. In this study I have analysed variability in the V1 and V2 regions of HIV-1 proviral sequences amplified from lymphoid tissue, brain and other non-lymphoid tissue collected at autopsy from three HIV-infected individuals with giant cell encephalitis. As previously found by analysing $p17_{gag}$ region I found no evidence for any tissue-specific grouping of variants in the V1/V2 regions. Furthermore, I found no correlation of charge, length or number of glycosylation sites with tissue origin, or inferred phenotype.

Length polymorphism analysis is a rapid method to compare whole populations of HIV-1 variants within a sample, and provides information on the length and diversity of the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions. Based upon a comparison of 42 individuals with CD4 counts ranging from 802 to <1, at time of death, I found no evidence for changes in the length of V2. Using the number of length variants in the V1 and V2 hypervariable region as a measure of the overall degree of variability within HIV populations, I found no evidence for an increase or a decrease in diversity between those with or without AIDS defining illness.

In summary, both analysis of the $p17_{gag}$ and V1/V2 regions revealed high levels of heterogeneity of HIV-1 in tissue such as brain producing multiple lineages

upon phylogenetic analysis. I have therefore found no evidence for specifically neurotropic variants of HIV-1 and question the idea that spread into the central nervous system (CNS) or other non-lymphoid tissues requires specific adaptation.

ABBREVIATIONS

ADCC	antibody dependent cellular cytotoxicity
ADC	AIDS dementia complex
ADP	AIDS directed programme
AIDS	acquired immune deficiency syndrome
ALV	avian leukaemia virus
ARV	AIDS related virus
AZT	3'-azido-3-deoxythymidine (zidovudine)
β-2-M	beta-2-microglobulin
BIV	bovine immunodeficiency virus
BMVEC	brain microvascular endothelial cells
BSA	bovine serum albumin
BW	binding and washing buffer
Ca^{2+}	calcium ion
CAT	chloramphenicol acetyltransferase
CD	cluster determinant
CDC	Centre for Disease Control
CDR	complementary determining region
CHO	glycosylation
CMI	cell mediated immunity
CNS	central nervous system
CSF	cerebrospinal fluid
CTL	cytotoxic T lymphocyte
CTLp	cytotoxic T lymphocyte precursor

dATP	deoxyadenosine triphosphate
ddC	2',3'-dideoxycytidine (zalcitabine)
ddI	2',3'-dideoxyinosine
d4T	stavudine
DMSO	dimethylsulphoxide
d_N	rate of nonsynonymous substitutions
DNA	deoxyribonucleic acid
DNA dep RNA pol	DNA dependent RNA polymerase
ds	double stranded
d_S	rate of synonymous substitutions
dNTP	deoxyribonucleotides
DTT	dithiothreitol
EIA	enzyme immunoassay
EM	electron microscopic
FeLV	feline leukaemia virus
FIV	feline immunodeficiency virus
FMDV	foot and mouth disease
GCE	giant cell encephalitis
GM-CSF	granulocyte macrophage colony stimulating factor
gp	glycoprotein
HIV	human immunodeficiency virus
HTLV	human T-cell leukaemia virus
IDU	intravenous drug users
IFN	interferon

Ig	immunoglobulin
IL	interleukin
IN	integrase
Kb	kilobases
Kd	kilodalton
LAV	lymphadenopathy associated virus
LCMV	lymphocytic choriomeningitis virus
LFA-1	leucocyte function accessory-1 molecule
LPA	length polymorphism analysis
LTR	long terminal repeat
MA	matrix
MGC	multinucleated giant cell
MHC	major histocompatibility complex
mRNA	messenger RNA
MuLV	murine leukaemia virus
NK	natural killer cells
NMDA	N-methyl-D-aspartate
NSI	non-syncytium inducing
OD	optical density
OTUs	operational taxonimic units
PAGE	polyacrylamide gel electrophoresis
PBL	peripheral blood leukocyte
PBMC	peripheral blood mononuclear cell
PBS	phosphate buffered saline

PBS'	primer binding site
PCR	polymerase chain reaction
PHA	phytohaemagglutinin
PML	progressive multifocal leukoencephalopathy
RME	receptor mediated endocytosis
PR	protease
RNA	ribonucleic acid
RNA dep DNA pol	RNA dependent DNA polymerase
RNP	ribonucleo-protein complex
RRE	rev responsive element
RT	reverse transcriptase
SDS PAGE	sodium dodecyl sulphate PAGE
SI	syncytium inducing
SIV	simian immunodeficiency virus
SNV	spleen necrosis virus
ss	single stranded
SU	surface
TAR	trans-activation response element
TCID	tissue culture infective doses
TE	tris-EDTA buffer
TGF	transforming growth factor
TM	transmembrane
TNF	tumor necrosis factor
t-RNA	transfer RNA

UPGMA	unweighted pair group method with arithmetic mean
WHO	World Health Organization

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF TABLES

LIST OF FIGURES

PUBLICATIONS AND PRESENTATION OF WORK.

PUBLICATIONS.

Hughes, E. S., J. E. Bell, and P. Simmonds. (1997). Relationship between sequence diversity in the V1/V2 hypervariable region of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) env gene with the distribution of HIV-1 in different tissues *in vivo* (*Journal of General Virology*, in press).

Hughes, E. S., J. E. Bell, and P. Simmonds (1997). Investigation of the evolution of HIV-1: Estimating the time of spread from lymphoid to non-lymphoid tissue. *Journal of Virology*, **71**: 1272-1280.

Donaldson, Y. K., J. E. Bell, E. C. Holmes, **E. S. Hughes**, H. K. Brown, and P. Simmonds. (1994). In vivo distribution and cytopathology of variants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 showing restricted sequence variability in the V3 loop. *Journal of Virology*, **68**: 5991-6005.

ORAL PRESENTATIONS.

Society for General Microbiology, University of Warwick, March 1996. Title: Investigation of the dynamics of HIV spread to the brain by phylogenetic analysis of sequences in $p17_{gag}$ and V1 and V2 regions from *env*.

POSTER PRESENTATIONS.

MRC- 9th Annual AIDS Research Workshop, The Manchester Conference Centre, September 1995. Title: Estimation of the time of spread of HIV-1 to non-lymphoid tissue by phylogenetic analysis of sequences from $p17_{gag}$.

MRC- 8th Annual AIDS Workshop, The Manchester Conference Centre, September 1994. Title: Investigation of *in vivo* sequence variation of V1 and V2 hypervariable regions within lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues upon disease progression.

CHAPTER 1. INTRODUCTION: HUMAN IMMUNODEFICIENCY TYPE 1 (HIV-1).

1.1 CLINICAL ASPECTS OF HIV-1 INFECTION.

1.1.1 IDENTIFICATION AND ISOLATION OF HIV-1.

Infection with the human immunodeficiency virus type-1 (HIV-1) is associated with a slow, progressive and irreversible impairment of the immune system eventually leading to severe immunodeficiency clinically known as AIDS. It is now universally accepted that HIV-1 is the main aetiological agent of the acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS). Studies to determine how widely disseminated the virus was eventually led to the discovery of a second related virus, HIV-2, which was found to be capable of inducing the same clinical symptoms in humans as HIV-1 (Clavel *et al.,* 1986; Barin *et al.,* 1985). Approximately 15 years ago, Gottlieb and colleagues reported an unusually high number of young homosexual males presenting with *Pneumocystis carinii* pneumonia and other unusual opportunistic infections (Gottlieb *et al.,* 1981). Following this report a succession of observations involving young male homosexuals presenting with unusual opportunistic infections and immune deficiencies were reported (Stahl *et al.,* 1982; Friedman Kien *et al.,* 1982; Klein *et al.,* 1984; Metroka *et al.,* 1983; Mildvan *et al.,* 1982; Siegal *et al.,* 1981; Drew *et al.,* 1981; Masur *et al.,* 1981). Thus far, this new illness was considered by most to be a 'gay' disease. In 1981 this issue was further confused when an increasing number of Haitian immigrants to the United States were reported to have died with

toxoplasmosis and cytomegalovirus in their brains (Moskowitz *et al.,* 1983) and was further compounded by the appearance of cases in women. The juxtaposition of these various reports proved to be fortuitous as events following these observations led to the conclusion that a single infectious agent was responsible for this epidemic of immune deficiency.

Isolation of this infectious agent was finally accomplished in 1983 when the virus was cultured in T lymphocytes, from a lymph node biopsy of a homosexual patient with multiple lymphadenopathies (Barre-Sinoussi *et al.,* 1983). It was suggested that this novel virus was a member of the human T-cell leukaemia virus (HTLV) family. Serum from this patient strongly reacted with surface antigens of HTLV-1 and the divalent cationic requirements of the viral reverse transcriptase (RT) were similar to that for HTLVs. However, it was thought to be a distinct virus since core proteins of this novel virus were immunologically unrelated to those of HTLV-1 (Barre-Sinoussi *et al.,* 1983). This virus was further identified as a retrovirus using a sucrose density gradient and electron microscopy illustrating particles budding from the surface of umbilical cord lymphocytes characteristic of retroviruses. This virus was therefore designated lymphadenopathy-associated virus (LAV). An association of members of the HTLV family with patients with AIDS was subsequently reported from numerous independent sources (Levy *et al.,* 1984; Essex *et al.,* 1983; Gelman *et al.,* 1983; Gallo *et al.,* 1984). For some time there was a certain degree of confusion regarding the nomenclature of this virus implicated in AIDS. Initially there were three claims on the nomenclature: LAV (Barre-Sinoussi *et al.,* 1983), HTLV-III (Gallo *et al.,* 1984) and AIDS related virus

(ARV; Levy *et al.,* 1984). However, it is now universally known as the human immunodeficiency virus type-1 (HIV-1; Coffin *et al.,* 1986b).

1.1.2 CLASSIFICATION OF HIV-1 DISEASE STATUS.

Infection with HIV-1 can result in a spectrum of clinical conditions, ranging from asymptomatic infection to severe immunodeficiency and the acquisition of numerous opportunistic infections and neoplasms. The Centres for Disease Control (CDC) have constructed a classification system which catalogues the manifestations of HIV-1 into four clinical stages: Group I-IV (CDC, 1986; Table 1). CDC group I identifies those patients who have recently undergone seroconversion, shortly following initial infection, which may be accompanied by an acute seroconversion illness, with clinical features such as a mononucleosis-like illness, fever and malaise (Cooper *et al.,* 1985). CDC group II includes asymptomatic patients showing no signs or symptoms of HIV-1 infection. This asymptomatic period can last from a few months to a number of years before any signs of clinical disease are apparent. Patients presenting with persistent generalized lymphadenopathy are classified as CDC group III. CDC group IV describes a number of clinical manifestations and has been subdivided into five subgroups A to E. Subgroup A (constitutional disease) includes individuals with one or more of the following afflictions: fever (> 1 month), diarrhoea (> 1 month) and/or involuntary weight loss (> 10% of baseline). Infection must be unattributable to any infection other than HIV infection. Subgroup B (neurological disease) includes individuals suffering

TABLE 1: CLASSIFICATION SYSTEM FOR HIV INFECTION

CDC group	Clinical manifestation
Group I	Acute infection
Group II	Asymptomatic infection
Group III	Persistent generalized lymphadenopathy
Group IV	Other diseases
Subgroup A	Constitutional disease
Subgroup B	Neurological disease
Subgroup C	Secondary infectious diseases
Category C-1	Specified secondary infectious diseases listed in the CDC surveillance definition for AIDS[a]
Category C-2	Other specified secondary infectious diseases[b]
Subgroup D	Secondary cancers[c]
Subgroup E	Other conditions

[a]Appendix I
[b]Appendix II
[c]Appendix III

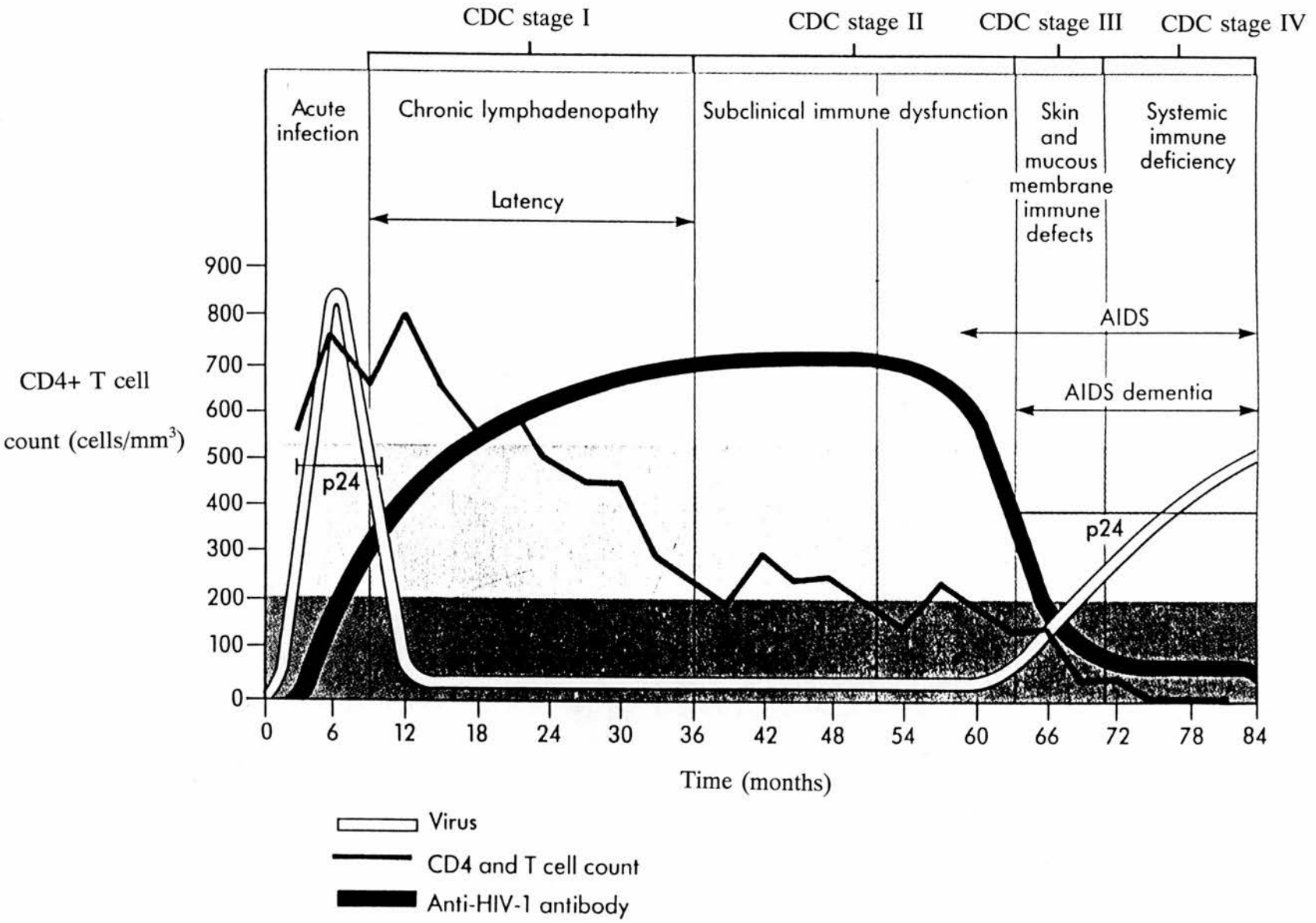
from one or more of the following neurological diseases: dementia, myelopathy or peripheral neuropathy. Infection must solely be due to invasion of the nervous system by HIV and not attributable to any other illness or condition. Subgroup C is divided into two categories (C1 and C2) and includes individuals with clinical disease associated with secondary infectious diseases and a defect in cell-mediated immunity. Subgroup D is associated with the development of secondary cancers and a defect in cell mediated immunity. Subgroup E includes other clinical disorders, previously unclassified, which may be attributable to HIV infection. The CDC produced a revised classification system that extended the diagnosis of AIDS to asymptomatic individuals with CD4+ T-cell counts of < 200 cells/μl. Similarly, the number of previously defined clinical categories, group IV, has been expanded to include further clinical conditions (CDC. 1992).

1.1.3 NATURAL HISTORY OF HIV-1 INFECTION.

The natural history of HIV-1 infection can be viewed as a progression of three distinct clinical stages: an initial acute stage associated with primary infection (CDC stage I), a chronic stage resulting in a period of clinical, but not virological, latency (CDC stages II and III) and finally, a crisis stage representing a period of profound immunodeficiency manifest by the development of opportunistic infections and neurological disorders (CDC stage IV; Fig 1).

During primary infection, plasma HIV-1 titres increase dramatically manifested by high levels of viraemia and serum p24 antigen (Simmonds, 1990a;

Fig. 1. Clinical course of HIV-1 infection (modified from Medical Microbiology, 2nd edition, 1996).


CDC stage I
CDC stage II
CDC stage III
CDC stage IV
Acute infection
Chronic lymphadenopathy
Subclinical immune dysfunction
Skin and mucous membrane immune defects
Systemic immune deficiency
Latency
AIDS
AIDS dementia
p24
p24
CD4+ T cell count (cells/mm³)
900
800
700
600
500
400
300
200
100
0
0
6
12
18
24
30
36
42
48
54
60
66
72
78
84
Time (months)
Virus
CD4 and T cell count
Anti-HIV-1 antibody

Fiscus *et al.,* 1995a; Ferbas *et al.,* 1996a; Clark *et al.,* 1991a; Daar *et al.,* 1991a). This plasma viraemia is only transient (up to 10^3 to 10^4 tissue culture infective doses (TCID) per ml have been detected in plasma; Clark *et al.,* 1991; Daar *et al.,* 1991), and generally only lasts for a few weeks subsiding when a specific antibody response is mounted. However, a cellular cytotoxic immune response almost certainly contributes to the initial containment of primary HIV-1 infection. The immune mechanisms responsible for this viral clearance are discussed in detail below. In addition, the acute stage of infection may coincide with an acute seroconversion illness characterized by fever, rash and myalgia (Clark *et al.,* 1991; Daar *et al.,* 1991). CD4 cell counts fall dramatically during this stage of infection, although it is not clear whether this is a result of a cytopathic effect by HIV-1 or redistribution to extravascular sites (Fahey *et al.,* 1990; Bofill *et al.,* 1996; Ferbas *et al.,* 1996). Following the curtailment of acute primary infection a chronic, clinically asymptomatic stage ensues. This is often termed the latent period and although clinically latent recent studies have revealed HIV-1 infection as a dynamic process in which a stable steady state hides a very high rate of viral replication and turnover of infected cells (Wei *et al.,* 1995; Ho *et al.,* 1995; Ho *et al.,* 1989; Coombs *et al.,* 1989; Saag *et al.,* 1991; Michael *et al.,* 1992). Similarly, a number of studies have reported active replication of HIV-1 in lymphoid tissue (Pantaleo *et al.,* 1991; Graziosi *et al.,* 1993; Pantaleo *et al.,* 1993). During this chronic stage of persistent infection only low levels of plasma viraemia can be detected (30 $TCID_{50}$ per ml; Ho *et al.,* 1989) and few infected CD4+ cells are present in the peripheral

blood (1 in 10,000; Harper *et al.,* 1986). As disease progresses the development of clinical immunodeficiency follows the reappearance of significant levels of plasma viraemia and an increase in the expression of HIV-1 DNA and RNA (Michael *et al.,* 1992), which is associated with an accelerated depletion of CD4+ cells (MacDonell *et al.,* 1990; Ho *et al.,* 1989; Coombs *et al.,* 1989; Saag *et al.,* 1991; Ferbas *et al.,* 1996). As the number of CD4+ cells decreases so the percentage of infected lymphocytes increases. Indeed, in one study of patients with clinical AIDS the number of infected lymphocytes was found to exceed 1 in 40 (Ho *et al.,* 1989). Similarly, a number of studies have shown that the number of CD4+ cells decreases as the plasma viraemia increases and may exceed 10^4 $TCID_{50}$ per ml (Coombs *et al.,* 1989; Ho *et al.,* 1989; Saag *et al.,* 1991). Saag *et al.*, also studied the clinical course of infection in children infected perinatally with HIV-1 and found that they frequently exhibited significantly high plasma levels and accelerated disease irrespective of CD4+ cell counts (Coombs *et al.,* 1989). This is most likely due to the immature nature of these childrens' immune response failing to control the initial viraemia.

The rapid decline in viraemia after primary infection suggests a potent antiviral role for the host immunity. A number of studies suggest that HIV-1 specific cytotoxic T lymphocytes (CTL) may play an important role in the clearance of acute infection (Rouse *et al.,* 1988; Plata *et al.,* 1987; Walker *et al.,* 1987). Following HIV-1 infection CTL precursors (CTLp) are produced in regional lymph nodes followed by the accumulation of virus specific CD8+ CTL at sites of virus replication. This CTL activity reaches a peak shortly after viral replication,

and in some cases prior to a specific antibody response (Koup *et al.,* 1994; Walker *et al.,* 1986; Walker *et al.,* 1990). Koup *et al.*, detected CTLp specific for cells expressing HIV-1 *gag, pol* and *env* antigens within three weeks of infection and found that they remained elevated for at least three to six months following acute viral infection (Koup *et al.,* 1994). The CTL response is the first virus specific immune response detected suggesting CTL activity is responsible for viral clearance and predict the consequences of the acute stage of infection. Neutralizing antibodies are undetectable until several weeks after viraemia has subsided. It is possible that CTL are not the only mechanism involved in the clearance of acute viraemia during primary HIV-1 infection. Natural killer (NK) cells are also likely to play a role although they have not been studied in detail. However, they are important in the clearance of other acute viral infections such as acute infectious mononucleosis (Tomkinson *et al.,* 1989; Nahill *et al.,* 1993), and transient elevations in their numbers have been observed in acute HIV-1 infection (Koup *et al.,* 1994).

Following seroconversion, approximately four weeks after infection, antibodies to different structural components of HIV-1 can be detected by enzyme immunoassays (EIA). These do not appear simultaneously and antibodies to the envelope glycoprotein, gp120, are the first to be detected. Subsequently, antibodies to the regulatory proteins, p24 from *gag* and p53 and p64 from *pol*, are produced. Antibodies to the transmembrane glycoprotein, gp41, are often not detected until several weeks later. Although detection of antibodies to HIV-1 structural and regulatory proteins are indicative of infection, their role as an antiviral component

of the immune system is less certain. The presence of anti-HIV-1 neutralizing antibodies in infected individuals has been reported by several investigators. The envelope glycoproteins gp120 and gp41 are among the principal targets for the host humoral immune response to HIV-1 (Fung *et al.,* 1992; Matsushita *et al.,* 1988; Javaherian *et al.,* 1990; Ho *et al.,* 1991; Looney *et al.,* 1988; Haigwood *et al.,* 1990; Broliden *et al.,* 1991; Weiss *et al.,* 1986). Virtually all neutralizing activity in the sera of infected individuals is directed against these proteins and particularly against regions of gp120. The V3 hypervariable region has been found to be the principal neutralization determinant in HIV-1 infection (Kuiken *et al.,* 1993; Wolfs *et al.,* 1991; Zwart *et al.,* 1991; Javaherian *et al.,* 1990; Javaherian *et al.,* 1989; Skinner *et al.,* 1988). V3 neutralizing antibodies can prevent HIV-1 entering target cells, although they do not necessarily abrogate binding to the cell via the gp120-CD4 interaction (Linsley *et al.,* 1988; Skinner *et al.,* 1988). The V3 loop can present both linear and conformational determinants for antibody recognition. A second major neutralizing region is the CD4 binding site located in the carboxy terminal region of gp120 (Pinter *et al.,* 1993; Ditzel *et al.,* 1995; Kang *et al.,* 1991). This determinant is generally conformation-dependent and antibodies block the binding of HIV-1 to the cellular receptor. Neutralizing antibodies directed against the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions of gp120 have also been detected (Mankowski *et al.,* 1994; Warrier *et al.,* 1994; McKeating *et al.,* 1993; Gorny *et al.,* 1994; McKeating *et al.,* 1993; Moore *et al.,* 1993). As with the V3 loop, linear and conformational determinants appear to be involved. The envelope glycoprotein gp41 has not been analysed as extensively as gp120 although, neutralizing

antibodies have been detected (Purtscher *et al.,* 1994; Sattentau *et al.,* 1995; Purtscher *et al.,* 1996; Back *et al.,* 1993). Generally neutralizing antibodies to gp41 are recognized following the gp120-CD4 interaction suggesting that receptor binding induces conformational changes exposing the gp41 domain (Sattentau *et al.,* 1993). The role of neutralizing antibodies in clearing viraemia during the acute phase of infection remains controversial. Several studies have found the decline in viraemia precedes the production of neutralizing antibodies, although it is possible that antibodies are present at very low levels prior to the decline in viraemia undetectable by current assays.

1.1.4 MONITORING THE RESPONSE TO HIV-1 INFECTION.

1.1.4.1 DIAGNOSTIC TECHNIQUES.

The diagnosis of infection with HIV-1 is dependent on the detection of specific HIV antibodies, detection of circulating viral antigens, isolation of the virus from clinical specimens, or detection of viral genetic material. Routine diagnostic procedures used to identify HIV-1 infected individuals rely largely on the presence of antibodies to viral antigens in the serum. Antibody tests combining a screening assay and a confirmatory test have been the most widely used techniques for establishing the presence of HIV-1 infection (Phair *et al.,* 1992). Most HIV antibody screening assays use the rapid and convenient EIA. Originally EIAs used whole viral lysates obtained from cultivation of HIV in lymphocytes

(Jackson *et al.,* 1988; Johnson, 1992). These preparations however, resulted in false positive results due to the reaction of serum antibodies to cellular components. Subsequent assays have been developed that use recombinant HIV-1 proteins to *env* and *gag* products and synthesized peptides corresponding to conserved regions of *env* and p24 core proteins (Johnson, 1992). These assays have proven to be more sensitive and specific than the original EIAs.

Diagnosis of HIV-1 infection is not always possible based on the presence of antibodies in the serum. For example antibodies are not present in the acute phase of infection (serological window period) and can be lost in the advanced stages of disease. Therefore diagnostic tests for either direct detection of the virus or its components may be important in monitoring the disease when no antibody is present. Virus culture can provide definitive information about the presence or absence of HIV-1 infection. However it is costly, time consuming and labour intensive with the potential for exposure to high concentrations of infectious virus. Therefore although it is a good reference method for identifying HIV-1 infection it is of limited practical use for diagnosis, and is not suitable for measurement of circulating virus load.

HIV-1 antigenaemia is thought to be significant during two periods of HIV-1 infection, initially during the acute phase, prior to the production of antibodies, and at the terminal stages of infection and development of AIDS when virus production increases dramatically (Gaines *et al.,* 1987; von Sydow *et al.,* 1988; Pedersen *et al.,* 1987). During these brief periods p24 antigen can be detected in both serum and plasma using an EIA based antigen capture technique (Goudsmit *et*

al., 1986). However, direct detection of p24 antigen in infected sera is unreliable following seroconversion in most cases because of the small amount of circulating antigen (MacDonell *et al.,* 1990). In general p24 antigen cannot be detected in the serum of 85% or more asymptomatic HIV-1 seropositive individuals (Fahey *et al.,* 1990). The low detection rate of p24 antigen in serum from asymptomatic patients may be due to low levels of antigen production or to the formation of immune complexes. In order to increase the sensitivity of this diagnostic test Nishanian *et al.*, developed an acid dissociation procedure designed to disrupt p24 antigen-antibody immune complexes (Nishanian *et al.,* 1990). This method improved the detection and quantitation of p24 antigen EIA testing allowing a more accurate assessment of *in vivo* viral replication.

In more recent years, PCR-based methods have been developed to quantify specific DNA and RNA sequences present in small amounts of biological specimens. These methods were developed as an alternative to conventional diagnostic molecular hybridization methods such as Southern and Northern blots, dot hybridization and spot hybridization, as these methods show inadequate sensitivity for HIV *in vivo*. PCR based applications provide a specific and efficient method for direct detection of HIV-1 infection and can detect DNA and RNA in plasma of HIV-1 infected individuals regardless of clinical condition (Zhang *et al.,* 1991; Piatak *et al.,* 1993; Ottmann *et al.,* 1991). This technique will therefore be valuable for identifying HIV-1 infected individuals prior to seroconversion and identifying infected babies born to HIV-1 infected mothers in whom maternal antibodies can persist for 5 to 14 months (Rogers *et al.,* 1989). Similarly, this

technique has important advantages for resolving equivocal serologic results from HIV-1 infected patients (Jackson *et al.,* 1990).

1.1.4.2 PROGNOSTIC MARKERS.

Numerous markers have been studied in patients infected with HIV-1 in an effort to monitor and predict progression to disease. Monitoring of HIV-1 infection can be classified into three categories: the direct detection of the virus or its antigens, methods which quantitate the immunosuppression of HIV-1 and evaluation of the immune response to HIV-1.

Previously detection of infectious HIV-1 in plasma was carried out following co-cultivation with phytohaemagglutinin (PHA) stimulated donor PBMCs (Coombs *et al.,* 1989). Quantification of plasma viraemia was carried out using serial dilution co-culture and detection of p24 antigen production *in vivo* (Ho *et al.,* 1989; Coombs *et al.,* 1989). These studies concluded that plasma viraemia correlated well with progression to disease since plasma viraemia was detected more frequently in symptomatic individuals than in asymptomatic individuals. More recently a more sensitive quantitative approach has been developed using a novel PCR based method. Several investigators have coupled a reverse transcriptase (RT) reaction step to conventional RNA PCR and have detected HIV RNA in HIV-1 cell cultures and PBMCs from infected individuals (Arrigo *et al.,* 1989; Byrne *et al.,* 1988). These studies have confirmed that a low level of viral replication occurs throughout the clinically latent stage of infection, although they do not determine

absolute quantities of RNA. In order to quantify actively replicating virus a number of methods have been proposed including competitive RT-PCR (cRT-PCR) and a limiting dilution assay (Zhang *et al.,* 1991; Menzo *et al.,* 1992). Both studies provide evidence that quantitation of plasma viraemia using an RT-PCR approach is a more accurate method for the detection and quantitation of virus production. Therefore, these methods provide a better marker for the progression of disease, in contrast with p24 antigen assays which are limited by the production of immune complexes preventing the detection of p24 antigen.

During HIV-1 infection and progression to AIDS a marked decrease in CD4+ T cells is apparent. These cells are central to the regulation of the immune system and the sharp decline in numbers is thought to be central to the resulting immunodeficiency. During the asymptomatic phase there appears to be an increase in CD8+ T cells (cytotoxic) suggesting that this cell subset may contribute to the limiting of HIV-1 replication during this phase (Giorgi *et al.,* 1987; Lang *et al.,* 1989). An initial inversion of the CD4+:CD8+ T cell ratio is another prominent feature of HIV-1 infection, although it is unclear whether this inversion is due to a decrease in the number of CD4+ T cells or augmentation of CD8+ T cells. Many studies have been carried out to determine the prognostic value of these immunological markers (Miedema *et al.,* 1990a; Giorgi *et al.,* 1987a; Fahey *et al.,* 1984a; Bogner *et al.,* 1991a; Lang *et al.,* 1989a; Phillips *et al.,* 1991a). Results from these studies indicate that following seroconversion a rapid decrease in CD4+ T cells occurs as a result of the pathogenic effects of HIV-1. This is followed by a continual fall in CD4+ T cells but at a much slower rate and for a variable period

of time during the asymptomatic phase. Prior to the progression to AIDS (approximately two years) CD4+ T cell counts begin to fall more rapidly again and low counts are common just prior to progression to AIDS. There are various methods available to monitor the CD4+ T cell count: the absolute CD4+ T cell number in blood, the percentage of CD4+ T cells and the CD4+:CD8+ T cell ratio. It is now widely accepted that CD4+ T cell counts are a reliable prognostic marker to determine progression to AIDS and may be a suitable marker for monitoring the effects of antiviral treatments.

There are various soluble products of immune activation present in the serum that can be readily measured. Beta-2-microglobulin (β-2-M) is a low molecular weight protein (11,800 Da) that forms the light chain of the class I major histocompatibility complex found on the surface of most nucleated cells (Jacobson *et al.,* 1989; Hofmann *et al.,* 1990). β-2-M is normally present in the serum and urine and normal levels reflect the balance between production and removal of this molecule. Serum levels are generally increased in diseases characterized by increased cell turnover including malignancies and chronic inflammation. It is also associated with renal failure and has been reported to be elevated in various diseases affecting lymphocytes, such as cytomegalovirus, hepatitis and HIV infection (Hofmann *et al.,* 1990; Fuchs *et al.,* 1991). Due to the immunosuppression caused as a result of HIV-1 infection and a reduction in CD4+ lymphocytes β-2-M was considered to be a good prognostic marker during progression to AIDS. Various investigations have been carried out to determine how infection with HIV-1 affects the levels of β-2-M (Mastroianni *et al.,* 1990;

Jacobson *et al.,* 1989; Hofmann *et al.,* 1990; Fuchs *et al.,* 1991). Analysis of asymptomatic and symptomatic individuals has shown that β-2-M levels increase during progression to AIDS. Similarly, analysis of HIV-1 seroconverters showed that changes in β-2-M levels after exposure to HIV-1 were associated with the decline in CD4+ T cells.

Neopterin is another serum marker associated with immune cell activation, a low molecular weight compound derived biosynthetically from guanosinetriphosphate (Fuchs *et al.,* 1988b). It is predominantly produced following macrophage stimulation with interferon gamma (IFN-γ) released from activated T cells (Huber *et al.,* 1984). Increased neopterin levels have been demonstrated in individuals with diseases associated with or caused by cell mediated immunity (CMI), including allograft rejections, autoimmune disorders, viral infections, bacterial infections, parasitic infections and various malignancies (Fuchs *et al.,* 1991; Fuchs *et al.,* 1988). Neopterin levels behave similarly to β-2-M during the course of HIV-1 infection and parallel disease progression. Various studies have investigated the levels of neopterin in asymptomatic and symptomatic individuals and found much higher levels of this molecule in symptomatic individuals (Fuchs *et al.,* 1991; Fuchs *et al.,* 1988a; Fuchs *et al.,* 1988b). Detection of neopterin was found to be as sensitive a prognostic marker as the CD4+ T cell count and increased levels of this molecule correlated with the rapid decrease in CD4+ T cell counts. Both β-2-M and neopterin have been found to have good predictive power, probably on a parallel with CD4+ T cell counts, acting independently of each other and indeed of CD4+ T cell measurements. Therefore the level of β-2-M or

neopterin used in conjunction with CD4+ T cell counts may provide a better method for monitoring progression to disease than CD4+ T cell counts alone.

1.1.5 TRANSMISSION OF HIV-1.

HIV transmission can primarily be defined into three major groups depending on the mode of transmission: (1) unprotected sexual intercourse, (2) inoculation of infected blood or blood products and, (3) vertically from mother to child. The risk factors involved in transmission of HIV in each of these three groups vary depending on the nature of the activity through which transmission occurs. However, in each case one unifying risk factor exists, that is the stage of disease. An HIV infected individual appears to be more infectious in the very early stages (prior to antibody production) and again in the late stages of clinical AIDS due to higher levels of virus present in the blood during these stages of disease than during the asymptomatic stage (European study group., 1989; Jacques *et al.,* 1994; Lazzarin *et al.*, 1991).

Transmission of HIV through unprotected sexual activity can occur from male to male, male to female and female to male (Caceres *et al.,* 1994; European Study Group, 1992). Female to female transmission remains extremely rare (Raiteri *et al.,* 1994). A number of factors influence transmission of HIV through sexual contact. Generally the receptive partner in either homosexual or heterosexual activity is more susceptible to HIV infection (Rodrigues *et al.,* 1995). Anal intercourse carries the risk of trauma to the mucosal lining and hence increased risk

of infection. During heterosexual intercourse male to female transmission is more effective than female to male transmission (European study group., 1989; European study group., 1992). The frequency of sexual contacts is thought to be the most important factor in creating the worldwide epidemic of sexually transmitted HIV infection, although a single contact can be sufficient to transmit HIV. An important biological factor increasing the probability of HIV transmission is the presence of variable sexually transmitted diseases, such as genital ulcers (Rodrigues *et al.,* 1995).

The second mode of transmission is through blood and blood products. Contaminated blood is highly infectious upon parenteral exposure. The primary risk group for HIV transmission via blood is through intravenous drug abuse (Des Jarlais *et al.,* 1988). This route of transmission is significant due to an epidemic of drug abuse and a change from oral to intravenous administration over the past few decades. Also an increase in needle sharing behaviour, especially in countries where 'shooting galleries' exist, provides a fertile field for the transmission of HIV among a large network of drug injectors. Also exposure is often repeated due to the addictive nature of these drugs. There is also an increased risk of transmission to sexual partners of intravenous drug users (Ronald *et al.,* 1993). Similarly, frequent drug abuse is associated with other high risk behaviours such as sexual promiscuity. For example, prostitution is frequently motivated by the cost of drug addiction (Celentano *et al.,* 1994).

Transmission of HIV-1 to blood transfusion recipients and haemophiliacs receiving blood clotting factors, such as factor VIII and IX, was originally a

significant risk of infection. However, this route of transmission is now very rare in countries where blood is screened for HIV antibodies and viral inactivating steps, such as heat inactivation, are routinely carried out in blood product manufacture, such as factors VIII and IX (Lackritz *et al.,* 1995; Mannucci, 1993). Unfortunately contaminated blood is still a route of infection for HIV in some developing countries where difficulties have been encountered in setting up safe blood transfusion systems (Lackritz *et al.,* 1993). Health care workers have been infected after a needle stick injury from a needle containing HIV infected blood or, less frequently, through an open cut or splashes into a mucous membrane (e.g. eyes, inside of nose). To date there has only been one case where a health care worker has infected patients. This involved the transmission of HIV from a dentist to a number of patients (Ou *et al.,* 1992). Other practices which hold a potential risk of transmission through blood include those that involve piercing of the skin which acts as a natural barrier to infection. For example, infection may occur through tattooing, acupuncture or the use of other invasive instruments that may have come in contact with contaminated blood and have not been properly disinfected.

The third mode of transmission is vertically from an infected mother to her child. The parameters involved in this mode of transmission are not well defined. It is thought infection may occur *in utero* (intrauterine or transplacental; Conaldi *et al.,* 1995), during delivery through the birth canal (perinatal) or after birth through breast milk (infancy; Palasanthiran *et al.,* 1993; Looney *et al.,* 1988; Toniolo *et al.,* 1995). Transmission from mother to child ranges from 15% to 35% with the lowest rates reported in Europe and the highest in Africa (Stlouis *et al.,* 1993; Newell *et*

al., 1993; Dabis *et al.,* 1993; Peckham *et al.,* 1995).

1.1.6 EPIDEMIOLOGY OF HIV-1 INFECTION.

The global pandemic of HIV infection comprises many separate epidemics in different geographical areas and is influenced by many factors including the time of introduction of the virus, population density and diverse cultural and social variables. Previously HIV infection in distinct geographical areas could be separated according to the major mode of transmission. However this distinction is becoming less relevant as the epidemic develops. For example, in Europe the main mode of transmission was initially through homosexual contacts. Increasingly, however transmission through drug abuse and heterosexual routes are becoming apparent. Similarly, in South America the initial AIDS epidemic was focused in homosexual communities but heterosexual transmission is now considered to be a major route of exposure to HIV infection. Spread of HIV infection has varied considerably between developed and developing countries, depending on cultural, social and behavioural patterns.

In Africa, HIV infection is the leading cause of adult death in many cities and has greatly increased childhood mortality (Gregson *et al.,* 1994). The World Health Organization (WHO) has estimated that approximately 16 million individuals in Africa have been infected with HIV, most of them in sub-Saharan Africa (World Health Organization. 1995). Heterosexual transmission is the main mode of transmission among African adults. As a result of the increasing numbers

of women becoming infected through heterosexual transmission, the prevalence of paediatric infections from mother to child is extremely high and expected to rise.

In most Asian countries, HIV infection was not recognised until much later than in the USA or Africa. However over 4 million people are now thought to be infected (Quinn, 1996). Thailand was the first Asian country in which HIV infection was recorded. Transmission was notably through drug abuse and high risk heterosexual activity, such as female sex workers (Morris *et al.,* 1996). HIV seroprevalence increased from 1.2% to 45% in intravenous drug users (IDU) between 1988 and 1991 in Thailand (Quinn, 1996). In addition, HIV prevalences of 43% to 82% were detected in IDU in China (Cheng *et al.,* 1994). HIV seroprevalence among female sex workers and their contacts are also surprisingly high with a prevalence of 30% to 65% reported among female sex workers in Thailand and India (Bollinger *et al.,* 1995; Kaldor *et al.,* 1994). A similar pattern to that observed in Thailand and India may be expected in many other countries in Asia that share the same prevalence of female sex workers and high frequency of IDU.

The number of infected individuals in the Pacific Islands has been estimated to be about 75 000, with most in Australia and New Zealand (World Health Organization. 1995). Most infections in these regions have occurred among homosexual men. The frequency of infection among IDU is relatively low compared to Europe and North America although this mode of transmission remains a significant route for the dissemination of HIV infection.

HIV infection amongst individuals in the Americas has been estimated at

three million, with over one million in North America and two million in Latin America and the Caribbean (World Health Organization. 1995; Quinn, 1996). There is a trend in these countries for a marked decline of HIV-1 among homosexual individuals and a substantial increase in the heterosexual population (Heverkos *et al.,* 1995). For individual countries, the highest number of reported cases in the world originate in the USA with over 500 000 cases by the end of 1995 (Centres for Disease Control and Prevention. 1995).

Half a million individuals are thought to be infected in Western and Eastern Europe with transmission routes differing significantly between countries. For example, in Italy, Spain and Poland almost two thirds of infections are attributable to IDU, whereas homosexual individuals constitute the majority of infections in Scandinavia, Czech and Slovak republics. In Europe as a whole, the number of cases attributable to homosexual transmission decreased significantly from 62% to 36% between 1985 and 1992 (Quinn, 1996). The opposite trend for IDU has been reported with an increase from 16% to 40% in recent years. Similarly, transmission through heterosexual intercourse has shown an increase and seroprevalence studies indicate that between 14% and 18% of infected individuals may have acquired HIV infection heterosexually.

Future predictions of the global pandemic of HIV infection are very difficult to make with any degree of confidence. However, predictions by the WHO are that there will be approximately 26 million HIV infected individuals by the year 2000 (Quinn, 1996). It is suspected that the incidence of infection in younger populations (15 to 25 years old) will increase, as is already evident in the USA and

sub-Saharan Africa. The number of cases in sub-Saharan Africa and Asia are expected to continue to rise although, in America and Europe the number of HIV infected individuals are expected to remain fairly constant as the number of new infections are likely to parallel the number of fatalities. Therefore, future efforts to control the AIDS epidemic must be focused on educating people, to influence change in social and cultural behaviour until an effective vaccine regime or better therapeutic interventions are available.

1.2 VIROLOGICAL ASPECTS OF HIV-1 INFECTION.

1.2.1 CLASSIFICATION OF HIV-1.

HIV is a member of a large group of viruses known as the *Retroviridae*. Retroviruses display a variety of common features specific to this virus group. They are surrounded by a spherical envelope, which is acquired as the virion buds from the plasma membrane. The envelope surrounds a core protein encapsidating two copies of a positive strand ribonucleic acid (RNA) genome. The genome of retroviruses possess a common viral structure organised into three polyprotein genes: group specific antigens (*gag*), polymerase (*pol*) and envelope (*env*). The life cycle of a retrovirus involves the insertion of the viral genome into the host genetic material utilizing a virally encoded enzyme, integrase (IN). Replication proceeds through a deoxyribonucleic acid (DNA) intermediate again utilizing a virally encoded RNA-dependent DNA polymerase (RT). The *Retroviridae* were originally

classified into three subfamilies: *Oncovirinae* (*onkos*-Greek word meaning 'tumour'), *Lentivirinae* (*lenti*-Latin word meaning 'slow') and *Spumavirinae* (*spuma*-Latin word meaning 'foam'; Matthews, 1979). This family has since been re-classified by disease, tissue tropism, host range, virion morphology and more recently by genome relationships, and is now divided into 7 genera (Table 2). The oncoviruses are the only genera of retroviruses that can transform target cells and are associated with cancers and neurological disease. They are also characterised by the morphology of their core in electron micrographs as type A, B, C and D. HTLV-I and HTLV-II are members of this genera. Spumaviruses cause a distinct cytopathological effect (vacuolated 'foamy' cytopathology) but do not appear to cause clinical disease. Lentiviruses (slow viruses) characteristically display long periods of latent infection prior to causing immunological and neurological disease. They contain a characteristic cylindrical nucleocapsid core, obvious in electron micrographs, tapering at one end. The genomes of this genera carry a complex combination of regulatory genes in addition to *gag*, *pol* and *env*. The prototype members were visna virus, equine infectious anemia virus and caprine arthritis-encephalitis virus. More recently, human and simian immunodeficiency viruses (HIV and SIV) and the more distantly related feline and bovine immunodeficiency viruses (FIV and BIV) have been classified as members of this genera (Table 2).

TABLE 2: CLASSIFICATION OF RETROVIRUSES

Genus	Examples
Avian-leukosis-sarcoma	RSV
Mammalian C-type	Mo-MLV, FeLV
B-type viruses	MMTV
D-type viruses	MPMV
HTLV-BLV group	HTLV-1 and-2, BLV
Spumavirus group	HFV, SFV
Lentivirus group	HIV, SIV

RSV, Rous sarcoma virus; Mo-MLV, Moloney murine leukemia virus; FeLV, Feline leukemia virus; MMTV, Mouse mammary tumor virus; HTLV, Human lymphotropic virus; BLV, Bovine leukemia virus; HFV, Human foamy virus; SFV, Simian foamy virus; HIV, Human immunodeficiency virus; SIV, Simian immunodeficiency virus.

1.2.2 BIOCHEMICAL STRUCTURE OF HIV-1.

The morphology of HIV has been determined by thin section electron microscopy and by negative staining (Christie *et al.,* 1988; Standard *et al.,* 1987). HIV-1 is an enveloped virion 80-100nm in diameter (Matthews, 1979). The lipid bilayer is densely studded with 72 knob like projections (Gelderblom, 1991), derived from a single precursor protein (gp160) encoded by the *env* gene, of approximately 8nm in diameter (Gelderblom, 1991; Matthews, 1979). Cleavage of gp160 produces gp41 (transmembrane protein-TM) and gp120 (outer surface glycoprotein-SU) which are found in close association on the surface of the virion in the form of a heterodimer. Host cell components have been shown to be present on the viral membrane, such as major histocompatibility complex (MHC) class I or II depending on the infected cell from which the virus buds (Henderson *et al.*, 1987; Arthur *et al.*, 1992; Frank *et al.*, 1996; Fig 2). The morphology within the virion is provided by the protein products of the *gag* polyprotein gene which form two distinct constituents. Thin section electron micrographs have indicated an electron dense layer underlying and in close proximity to the lipid membrane (Gelderblom *et al.,* 1989). This layer has since been characterised as the matrix (MA) protein encoded by the p17 region of *gag* and is vital for the structure and integrity of the virion. The second constituent provided by the *gag* gene is the viral core generated by the p24 region and has a characteristic cone shape prominent in electron micrographs (Gelderblom, 1991). The core contains an RNA genome that

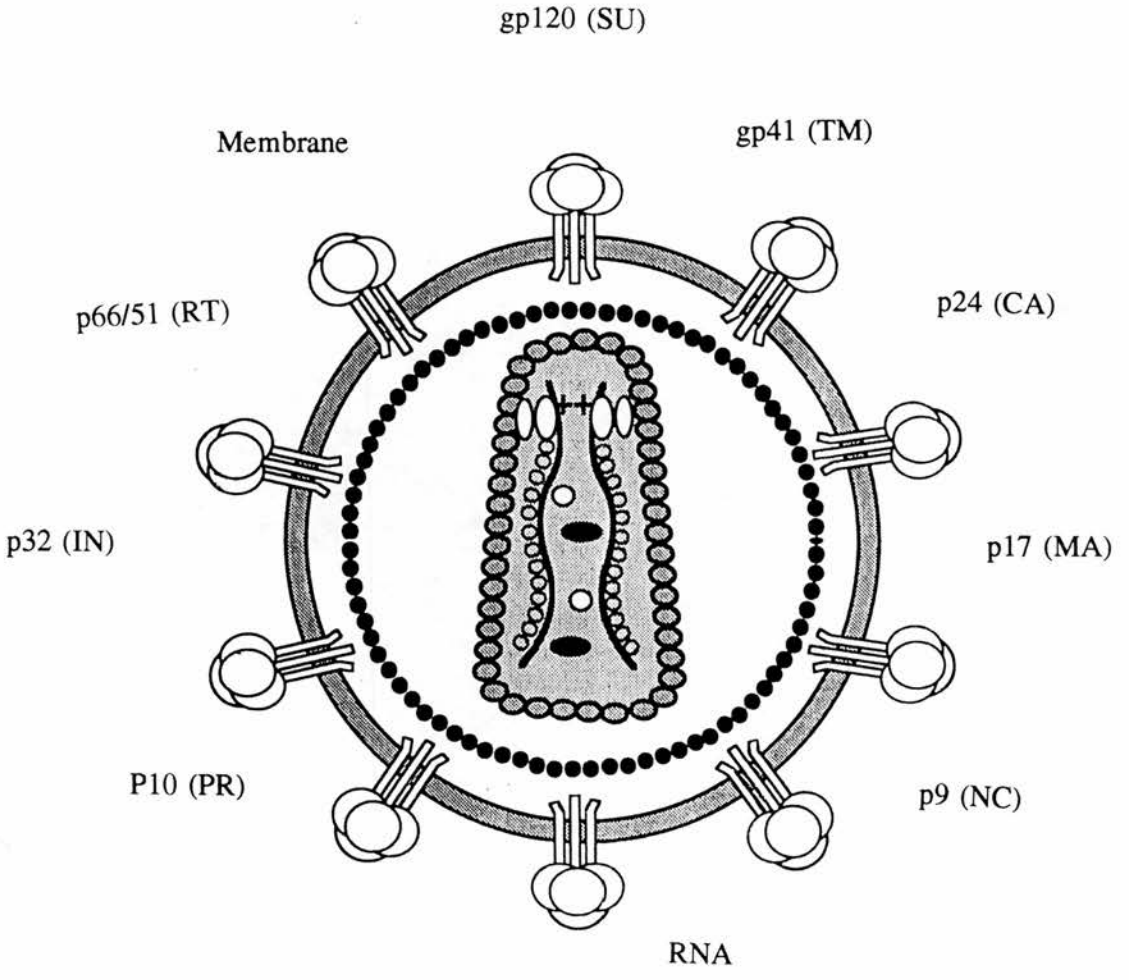


Fig. 2. Biochemical structure of HIV-1 (modified from Fields Virology, 1996).

encodes genetic information required for the replication of HIV. It consists of two identical copies of RNA found in close association with the viral RNA-dependent DNA polymerase (RT), and the nucleocapsid proteins encoded by the *gag* gene (p6 and p9). The association between the nucleocapsid proteins and RNA genome forms the ribonucleo-protein complex (RNP). The core also contains two other virally encoded enzymes required for the replication of HIV, these are protease (PR) and integrase (IN). There is some evidence to suggest a link between the cone shaped core and the matrix protein. Hoglund *et al* have proposed a core-envelope link protein attaching the narrow end of the core to the matrix protein (Hoglund, 1990). Nomenclature for the various HIV proteins mentioned has been taken from the revised standardized nomenclature for proteins common to all retroviruses by Leis *et al* and is summarised in Table 3 (Leis *et al.,* 1988).

TABLE 3: STANDARDIZED NOMENCLATURE FOR HIV PROTEINS

HIV protein	Function	Nomenclature
p17	Matrix protein	MA
p24	Capsid protein	CA
p9	Nucleocapsid protein	NC
p10	Protease	PR
p66/p51	Reverse transcriptase	RT
p32	Integrase	IN
gp120	Surface protein	SU
gp41	Transmembrane protein	TM

1.2.3 GENOMIC ORGANISATION OF HIV-1.

The HIV proviral genome has been well characterised through molecular cloning and extensive sequencing (Fig 3; Hahn *et al.,* 1984). Every HIV particle has two identical positive strands of RNA, each of which is approximately 9.2 kilobases (Kb) long. Common to all retroviruses the HIV genome encodes the three main protein coding genes *gag*, *pol* and *env* flanked by long terminal repeat (LTR) sequences that are required for replication. However, HIV is more complex than conventional retroviruses, such as HTLV-I and HTLV-II, encoding an additional 8 genes; *tat*, *rev*, *nef*, *vif*, *vpr*, *vpu*, *vpx* and *tev*. For convenience *gag*, *pol* and *env* have been classified as structural genes, *tat*, *rev* and *nef* as regulatory genes, and *vif* (virion infectivity factor), *vpr* (virion protein R), *vpu* (virion protein U), *vpx* and *tev* as accessory genes. In order to facilitate the synthesis of at least 11 distinct proteins, from a genome of less than 10kb, HIV displays great economy in its coding potential employing a complex array of differential RNA splicing and overlapping translational reading frames.

1.2.4 STRUCTURAL GENES OF HIV-1.

Transcription of the HIV genome is characterised by a transition from the synthesis of short multiply spliced messenger RNAs (mRNAs; approximately 2kb), which encode the regulatory proteins early in infection, to the production of larger singly spliced (4.5kb) and full length unspliced (9.2Kb) mRNAs encoding the

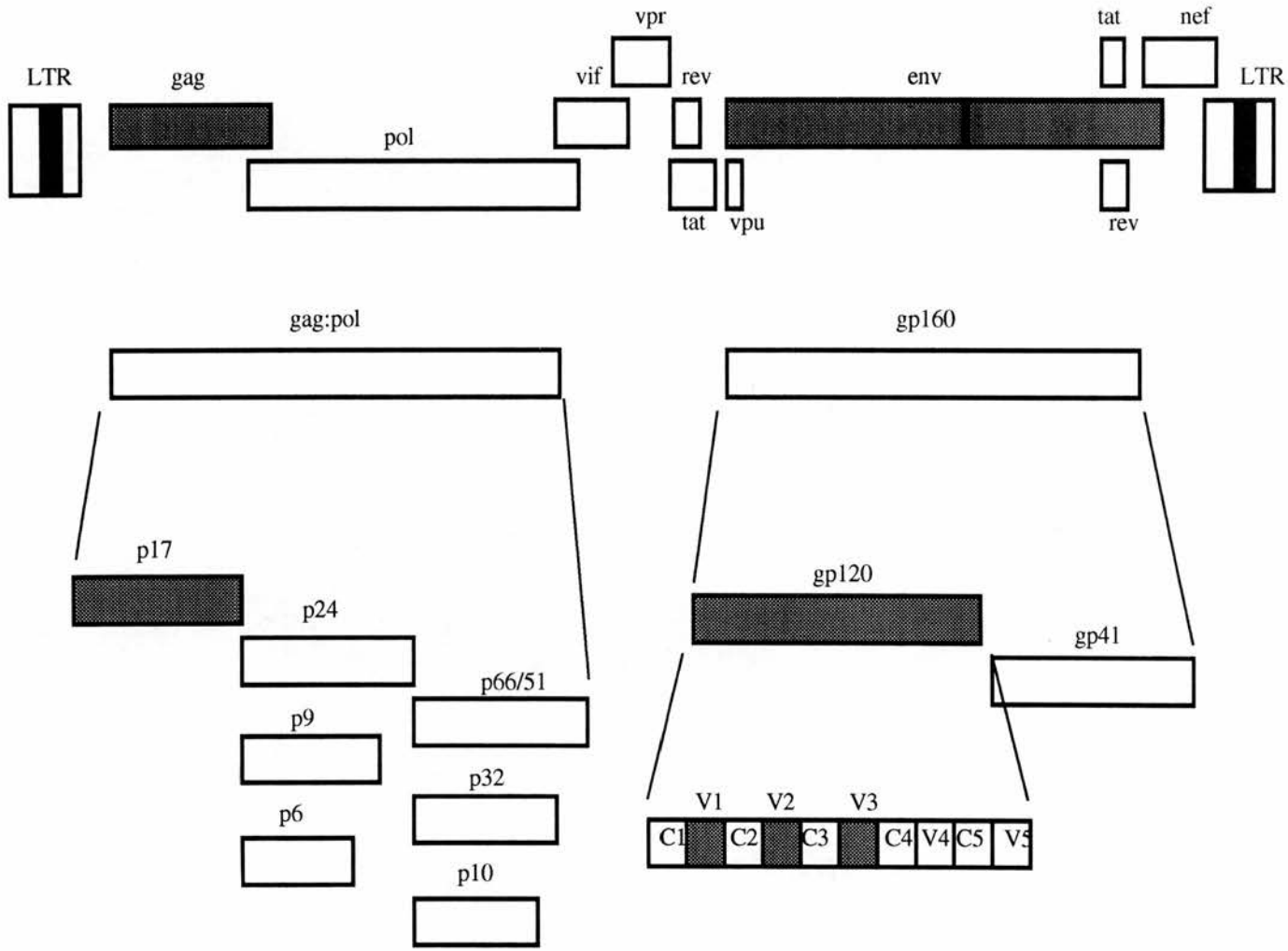


Fig. 3. Genomic organization of HIV-1 (modified from Fields Virology, 1996).

structural proteins of HIV. The transition from early gene expression to late gene expression is controlled by the viral *trans*-activator proteins *tat* and *rev*. The function of these two regulatory proteins will be discussed more fully in section 1.2.5.

The *gag* gene codes for the main non-glycosylated structural components of the virus particle. Initially a polyprotein precursor (p55) is translated from full length mRNA and is subsequently cleaved by the viral protease to produce four distinct *gag* proteins; p17 (matrix protein), p24 (major capsid protein), p9 (nucleic acid binding protein) and p6 (proline-rich protein). Various domains of this gene play pivotal roles in the assembly and release of virus particles (Mervis *et al.*, 1988) and are discussed more fully in section 1.2.8.6.

The *pol* gene codes for several enzyme activities required during the life cycle of HIV. To date the *pol* gene of all retroviruses have been shown to be expressed initially as a *gag:pol* fusion protein (Weiss *et al.*, 1985). In HIV the *gag* and *pol* genes overlap by 241 nucleotides and the *pol* gene is in a -1 reading frame with respect to *gag* (Vaishnav *et al.*, 1991). Expression of the *pol* gene is facilitated by a ribosomal frameshift which occurs at a low frequency (5%) and is directed by a short homopolymeric sequence located in the overlap between the *gag* and *pol* open reading frames that allows a 'slip back' of the ribosome into the -1 position (Jacks *et al.*, 1988). This results in the production of large quantities of the *gag* structural genes and relatively small quantities of the *pol* gene products. This p160 *gag:pol* polyprotein precursor is cleaved by the viral protease to produce three distinct enzymes; p10 (PR), p66/p51 (RT) and p32 (IN) and four distinct gag

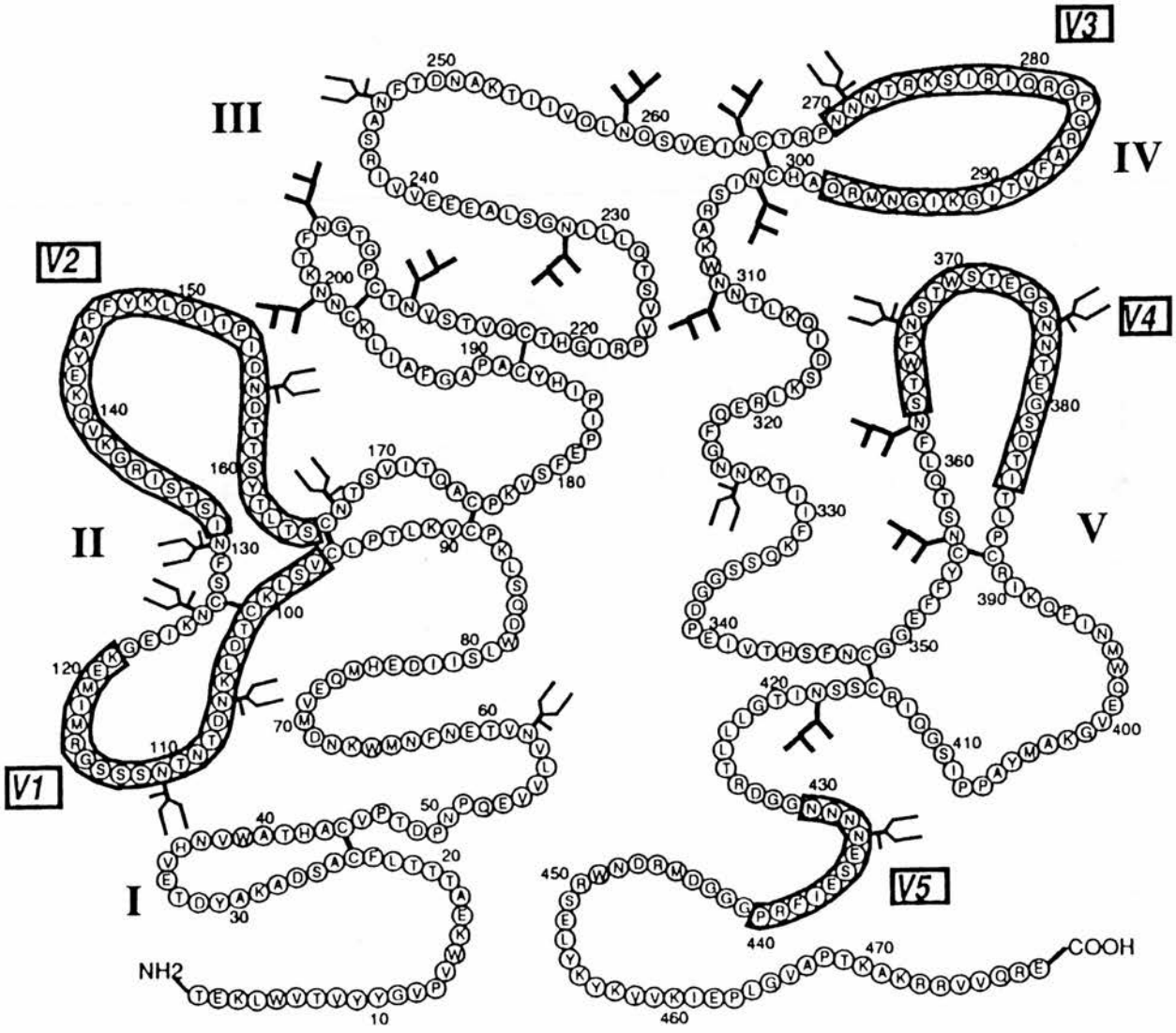
proteins (mentioned above).

The *env* gene codes for the viral glycoproteins which are produced by cleavage of the gp160 polyprotein precursor by a cellular protease in the Golgi. Two glycoproteins are produced, gp120 and gp41, which are located on the surface of the virion embedded into the plasma membrane. gp120 is an external glycoprotein (gp), whereas gp41 is a transmembrane glycoprotein anchoring the envelope complex to the virus. Both gp120 and gp41 are extensively glycosylated and contain complex N-linked carbohydrates. gp120 is thought to be associated with tissue tropism of the virus while gp41 is thought to mediate fusion of the virus and cellular membranes prior to entry. gp120 and gp41 are non-covalently associated and are thought to form tetramers composed of dimers of each glycoprotein (Vaishnav *et al.,* 1991). The envelope protein, gp120, consists of five hypervariable regions (V1-V5) interspersed with five more conserved regions (C1-C5; Modrow *et al.,* 1987; Fig 4). Leonard *et al.*, have determined the location of 9 disulphide bonds in a prototypic gp120 and have proposed a secondary structural model in which gp120 is composed of five major cysteine loops (Leonard *et al.,* 1990).

1.2.5 REGULATORY GENES OF HIV-1.

The *tat* gene is encoded by two exons, one of which is found 5' of the *env* gene and the other is found within the coding region of the *env* gene (Fig 3; Karn *et al.,* 1991). The *tat* gene encodes a 14Kd protein that is essential for viral

Fig. 4. Secondary structural model of gp120 (modified from Leonard *et al.*, 1990). Y, high mannose or hybrid-type oligosaccharide structures. Ψ, complex-type oligosaccharide structures. Hypervariable regions 1 to 5 are are indicated by enclosed boxes.


V1
V2
V3
V4
V5
I
II
III
IV
V
NH2
COOH

replication. This nuclear protein is a transactivator of LTR-directed gene expression and binds to a nascent RNA structure located within the LTR known as the trans-activation response element (TAR; Sodroski *et al.,* 1985; Vaishnav *et al.,* 1991). Tat can act at multiple levels in the viral life cycle although its main function is to increase the level of transcripts from genes linked to the HIV-1 LTR. However, it has also been shown to function at the post-transcriptional level and has recently been shown to decrease the activity of the MHC class 1 gene promotor (Howcraft *et al.,* 1993; Felber *et al.,* 1993).

The *rev* gene is also encoded by two exons, one is found 5' of the *env* gene and the other, as with the *tat* gene, is found within the coding region of the *env* gene (Fig 3; Karn *et al.,* 1991). The *rev* gene encodes a 19Kd nuclear protein, which binds to a specific RNA target sequence, found within the *env* coding region, known as the rev responsive element (RRE; Arrigo *et al.,* 1989). The rev protein appears to affect the nuclear-cytoplasmic distribution of HIV RNAs post-transcriptionally by either inhibiting spliceosome function or by activating the export of the singly spliced (4.5Kd) and unspliced (9.2Kd) HIV RNAs from the nucleus to the cytoplasm. This function promotes the expression of the larger structural proteins required for virus assembly and maturation.

The *nef* gene is encoded by a single exon which is located at the 3' end of the genome overlapping the 3' end of the *env* gene and the 3' LTR (Fig 3). The *nef* gene encodes a 25-27Kd protein (Allan *et al.,* 1985), which is found in association with the inner membrane courtesy of post-translational myristoylation (Kan *et al.,* 1986). The function of this regulatory protein is somewhat uncertain. It

was originally thought to act as a negative regulatory factor inhibiting HIV replication (Niederman *et al.,* 1989; Ahmad *et al.,* 1988). However, more recently it has been suggested that this protein may play a role in disease pathogenesis (Schwartz *et al.,* 1995; Miller *et al.,* 1994; Schwartz *et al.,* 1995; Kestler *et al.,* 1991). It has also been found that expression of this protein is inversely linked to the expression of the cell surface CD4 receptor (Garcia *et al.,* 1991) indicating it may act to downregulate CD4 expression of infected cells.

1.2.6 ACCESSORY GENES OF HIV-1.

The *vif* gene is encoded by a single exon overlapping the *pol* gene and encodes a 23Kd protein (Fig 3; Kan *et al.,* 1986). The function of this protein is uncertain although there is some evidence to indicate that it may promote infectivity of cell free virus since *vif* negative mutants show a profound reduction in their infectivity (Fisher *et al.,* 1987). Although the exact mechanism by which vif affects viral infectivity has not been determined it is thought this protein acts during the late phases of viral replication (Kan *et al.,* 1986; Fisher *et al.,* 1987).

The *vpu* gene is located at the 5' end of the *env* gene and encodes a 15-20Kd protein (Fig 3; Cohen *et al.,* 1989). *vpu* is unique to the HIV-1/SIV_{CPZ} group of primate lentiviruses and is not found in either HIV-2 or other SIV isolates. Mutational analyses using *vpu* negative isolates have suggested that this protein may be involved in facilitating assembly and/or release of virus particles (Klimkait *et al.,* 1991; Strebel *et al.,* 1989).

The *vpr* gene is encoded by a single exon which overlaps the *vif* gene and encodes a 15Kd protein (Fig 3). This protein accelerates the replication and cytopathic effects of HIV and appears to act at an early step in the replication cycle (Ogawa *et al.,* 1989). Unlike onco-retroviruses HIV does not require mitosis for entry of viral nucleic acid into the host cell nucleus (Bukrinsky *et al.*, 1992). It has been suggested that *vpr*, in association with MA protein from the *gag* region, may be crucial in the translocation of the pre-integration complex into the nucleus of a non-dividing cell (Freed *et al.*, 1995; Heinzinger *et al.*, 1994). A role for vpr in the regulation of cellular functions has also been suggested. It has been demonstrated that vpr causes terminal differentiation of rhabdomyosarcoma cells (Levy *et al.*, 1993), and expression of vpr in the yeast *Saccharomyces cerevsiae* resulted in cell growth arrest and gross cell enlargement (Macreadie *et al.*, 1995). Hence, vpr may function to bring about growth arrest to enable genomic integration to occur.

The *vpx* gene has, to date, only been found in HIV-2 and SIV isolates but not in HIV-1. It encodes a 14Kd protein (SIV) and a 16Kd protein (HIV-2; Yu *et al.,* 1988; Franchini *et al.,* 1988). It has been suggested that the *vpx* gene arose from a duplication in the *vpr* gene (Tristem *et al.,* 1992). A number of studies have suggested that vpx is required for efficient replication in PBMCs (Guyader *et al.,* 1989; Kappes *et al.*, 1991; Yu *et al.*, 1991). One such study showed that mutant *vpx* negative isolates infect primary lymphocytes with a reduced efficiency (Guyader *et al.,* 1989). Also mutations in two adjacent regions of this gene have been shown to disrupt the incorporation of this protein into the mature virion (Park

et al., 1995).

The *tev* gene encodes a 28Kd protein and is a hybrid protein expressed by a novel multiply spliced mRNA. This mRNA begins with the first exon of *tat* continues through *env* and ends in the second exon of *rev*. The function of this protein is not clear, although it has been shown to contain both tat and rev properties. Expression is decreased in the presence of rev suggesting it is produced early on in the virus life cycle and may play a regulatory role in the initial stages of virus expression (Benko *et al.,* 1990).

1.2.7 ORIGIN AND EVOLUTION OF HIV-1.

Primate lentiviruses include HIV-1, HIV-2 and a number of viruses isolated from nonhuman primates collectively known as simian immunodeficiency viruses (SIV). Extensive genetic analysis has been carried out on these primate lentiviruses and they have been found to be more closely related to each other than they are to lentiviruses of other mammals (Myers *et al.,* 1992b). In order to further classify these primate lentiviruses phylogenetic trees have been constructed, derived from *pol* protein sequences, which have identified five distinct groups (Sharp *et al.,* 1994). One group contains viruses present in humans (HIV-1) and chimpanzees, a second group contains viruses found in humans (HIV-2), macaques and sooty mangabeys, and the final three groups consist of viruses currently found within single species (African green monkey, the mandril and Sykes' monkey).

Theories of the origin of HIV viruses have remained extremely

controversial. Serological studies on nonhuman primates have been carried out to identify animals with antibodies cross-reactive with HIV or closely related viruses. Seropositive nonhuman primates include African green monkeys, mandrills and sooty mangabeys (Kanki *et al.,* 1985). Similar serological studies carried out in humans from West Africa have suggested infection with a virus closely related to SIV (Barin *et al.,* 1985). This virus, designated HIV-2, was isolated by Guyader *et al.*, who found it to be closely related to a virus isolated from a captive macaque (SIV_{mac}), but significantly different from HIV-1 (Guyader *et al.,* 1987). This finding was somewhat puzzling since the natural habitat for macaques is Asia not Africa, and Asian macaques have not been found to be infected with SIV in the wild. Hirsch *et al.*, suggested that macaques could probably have been infected with SIV through a cross species transmission from an African primate (Hirsch *et al.,* 1989). Epidemiological data point to sooty mangabeys as the source of SIV_{mac}. There would therefore appear to be good phylogenetic evidence to suggest that the sooty mangabey is the natural reservoir for HIV-2 and that infection of man probably represents a cross species transfer.

The natural reservoir for HIV-1 remains unclear, although it is highly likely that known strains of HIV-1 have arisen in a similar fashion to HIV-2, namely following a cross species transmission(s). Phylogenetic analysis has shown a close relationship between HIV-1 and SIV infecting chimpanzees (SIV_{cpz}), which may indicate that the natural reservoir for HIV-1 is in fact the chimpanzee (Peeters *et al.,* 1992; Huet *et al.,* 1990). However, in a seroepidemiological study of 94 chimpanzees (originating from Gabon, Zaire and Cote d'Ivoire) only three animals

were found to be infected (Peeters *et al.,* 1992), casting doubt on these primates being the natural host. It is therefore possible that both humans and chimpanzees have been infected following cross species transmission from a third, yet unidentified primate. Gojobori *et al.*, have constructed phylogenetic trees for a number of primate lentiviruses, comparing nucleotide sequences from five regions of the genome (LTR, *gag, pol, env, nef*; Gojobori *et al.,* 1990a). They analysed SIV_{agm} and SIV_{mnd} and found that these isolates grouped with either HIV-1 or HIV-2 depending on the gene analysed. For example, analysis of the *env* region suggests SIV_{agm} is closely related to HIV-2, while analysis of the *nef* region suggested SIV_{agm} is more closely related to the HIV-1 group. These results suggest a recombination event may have occurred between simian viruses prior to the emergence of HIV-1 and HIV-2. It is therefore possible that HIV-1 and HIV-2 have evolved from two separate cross species transfers from non human primates to humans, with one occurring in Central Africa, possibly from chimpanzees giving rise to HIV-1 and a second in Western Africa most probably from sooty mangabeys giving rise to HIV-2.

Divergence times between HIV-1, HIV-2 and SIVs have been estimated by a number of groups. A comparison between the complete genome of SIV_{agm} (isolated from an African green monkey) and known HIV and SIV sequences suggested that HIVs and SIVs have "diverged gradually in concert with the evolution of primates" and that HIV-1 and HIV-2 have been present in the human population for some time, having diverged during human evolution (Fukasawa *et al.,* 1988). This implies a diversification time of millions of years. For more closely

related viruses Hircsh *et al.*, suggested that SIV_{sm}/SIV_{mac} may have diverged from HIV-2 approximately 30 years ago (assuming a mutation rate for the *gag* gene of 0.5% per virus per year; Hirsch *et al.,* 1989), similar to other estimates (Sharp *et al.,* 1988). Extension of this investigation for the divergence of HIV-1 from HIV-2 predicts a time of hundreds of years. Similarly, Yokoyama *et al.*, estimated HIV-1 and HIV-2 diverged about 280 years ago , assuming the *pol* gene of lentiviruses evolved at the same rate as viral oncogenes (0.5×10^{-3} nonsynonymous substitutions per site per year; Yokoyama, 1988). Yet another study estimates that HIV-1, HIV-2 and SIV_{agm} all diverged approximately 150 years ago (Sharp *et al.,* 1988), although in this study the rate of evolution of the *pol* gene was estimated to be 0.96×10^{-3}. All these studies are inconsistent with the proposal that HIV-1 and HIV-2 diverged from a common ancestor as recently as 40 years ago (Smith *et al.,* 1988). The range in estimated times of divergence illustrates the weakness of this aspect of evolutionary analysis in reconstructing convincing histories of virus evolution.

Attempts have been made to further classify the five groups of primate lentiviruses. This is especially important within the two lineages containing human viruses since development of a successful vaccine will require knowledge of the extent of HIV genetic diversity worldwide. Phylogenetic analysis of HIV-1 strains has produced a classification system in which different subtypes or clades have been distinguished. The first attempt at describing HIV-1 subtypes was accomplished by Myers *et al.*, using *env* gene sequences (Myers *et al.,* 1992a). This analysis provided evidence of at least 6 distinct *env* subtypes, designated A to

F. Subtype A is representative of sequences from Central Africa (Zaire, Uganda and Rawanda; Myers *et al.,* 1991). Subtype B is found most prevalent in North and South America and Western Europe although subtype B sequences have been detected in most continents (Pfeifer *et al.,* 1991). Subtype C includes isolates from South Africa (Myers *et al.,* 1992a), India (Dietrich *et al.,* 1993), Zambia (McCutchan *et al.,* 1992b) and Djibouti (Louwagie *et al.,* 1993). Subtype D includes isolates from Central Africa (Myers *et al.,* 1991). Subtype E isolates are mainly found in Thailand although isolates from Central Africa (McCutchan *et al.,* 1992a) and India (Grez *et al.,* 1994) have been described. Subtype F includes viruses from Brazil, Romania and Zaire (Louwagie *et al.,* 1993; Dumitrescu *et al.,* 1994; Potts *et al.,* 1993; Louwagie *et al.,* 1994). Among subtypes A to F, viruses that belong to different subtypes exhibit up to 30% variation in their *env* coding sequences.

An independent study by Louwagie *et al.*, examined the diversity of HIV-1 among 70 sequenced isolates from 15 different countries using a different region of the genome, the *gag* gene (Louwagie *et al.,* 1993). This analysis described 7 distinct subtypes originally denoted A to G. Unfortunately when Louwagie *et al.*, characterised the three new subtypes, E to G, only four *env* subtypes had been proposed. However by the time this *gag* data had been published a fifth new *env* subtype had been identified and named 'E' on the basis of the established nomenclature (Myers *et al.,* 1992a). However, *gag* E and *env* E isolates were found to belong to distinct viral groups (Louwagie *et al.,* 1994), and so *gag* E to G had to be renamed to *gag* F to H, illustrating the problems which may arise during the

naming of new subtype sequences. The subtype of most HIV-1 isolates have been found to be congruent for *gag* and *env* sequences, although some discrepant sequences are apparent. For example, the African isolates (MAL, from Zaire), have an *env* sequence similar to subtype D viruses but a *gag* sequence similar to subtype A (Alizon *et al.,* 1986). Also, viruses characterized from Thailand (CM238 and CM243), have a subtype E *env* sequence but a subtype A *gag* sequence (Louwagie *et al.,* 1993). This switching of subtype between different regions of the genome suggests that some subtypes may have arisen through recombination between two divergent viruses. More recently, four additional sequence subtypes have been assigned on the basis of their *env* sequences, termed G, H, I and J. These include viruses from Gabon, Cameroon and Zaire (Jansens *et al.,* 1994). Collectively subtypes A to J are classified as group M (major subtypes).

Recently much more diverse variants of HIV-1 have been identified. Two independent studies have isolated HIV-1 isolates which, although they are more closely related to HIV-1 than any of the other four groups of primate lentiviruses, are considerably more diverse than the previously described subtypes of HIV-1. De Leys *et al.*, report a novel isolate obtained from two individuals, originally from Cameroon, which exhibit major differences in immunological and biological properties and in the U3 region of the viral LTR. This isolate has been designated ANT 70 (Deleys *et al.,* 1990). Gurtler *et al.*, also report a novel isolate from a Cameroonian AIDS patient with a V3 configuration which has not yet been described for other HIV strains. This isolate has been designated MVP-1580 (Gurtler *et al.,* 1994). Both novel isolates, ANT-70 and MVP-1580, are considered

to constitute a new subtype, group O (meaning outlier; Peeters *et al.,* 1996). Although these two isolates have been grouped together they are as divergent from each other as subtypes A and B and could therefore represent separate subtypes themselves. No doubt as more novel isolates are recovered this may be resolved.

A highly divergent HIV-1 related virus ($SIV_{cpz\text{-}ant}$) was isolated from a wild captured chimpanzee originating from Zaire (Vanden-Haesevelde *et al.,* 1996). Phylogenetic analysis using regions from *gag* and *pol* revealed that this isolate was more closely related to HIV-1 isolates and other chimpanzee isolates than to the other four major lineages. However, this isolate grouped outwith this lineage being no more similar to $SIV_{cpz\text{-}gab}$ than to HIV-1 isolates. The isolation of this SIV isolate is important regarding the origin(s) of HIV-1 and SIV_{cpz} viruses. The phylogenetic position of $SIV_{cpz\text{-}ant}$ suggests that the two major HIV-1 clusters, groups M and O, must have arisen through two independent transmission events. Whether this cross-species transmission occurred from chimpanzee to human is unknown, although the low seroprevalence among chimpanzees argues against it. Therefore, it is possible that both humans and chimpanzees have acquired their lentiviruses from a third, as yet unidentified, African primate species.

1.2.8 LIFE CYCLE OF HIV-1.

The life cycle of HIV-1 requires the infection of a human cell (Fig 5). It can be divided into a number of phases summarised below. (1) Prior to infection an interaction with a receptor molecule occurs facilitating the attachment of the virus to the cell surface. The high affinity receptor for the virus has been shown to be

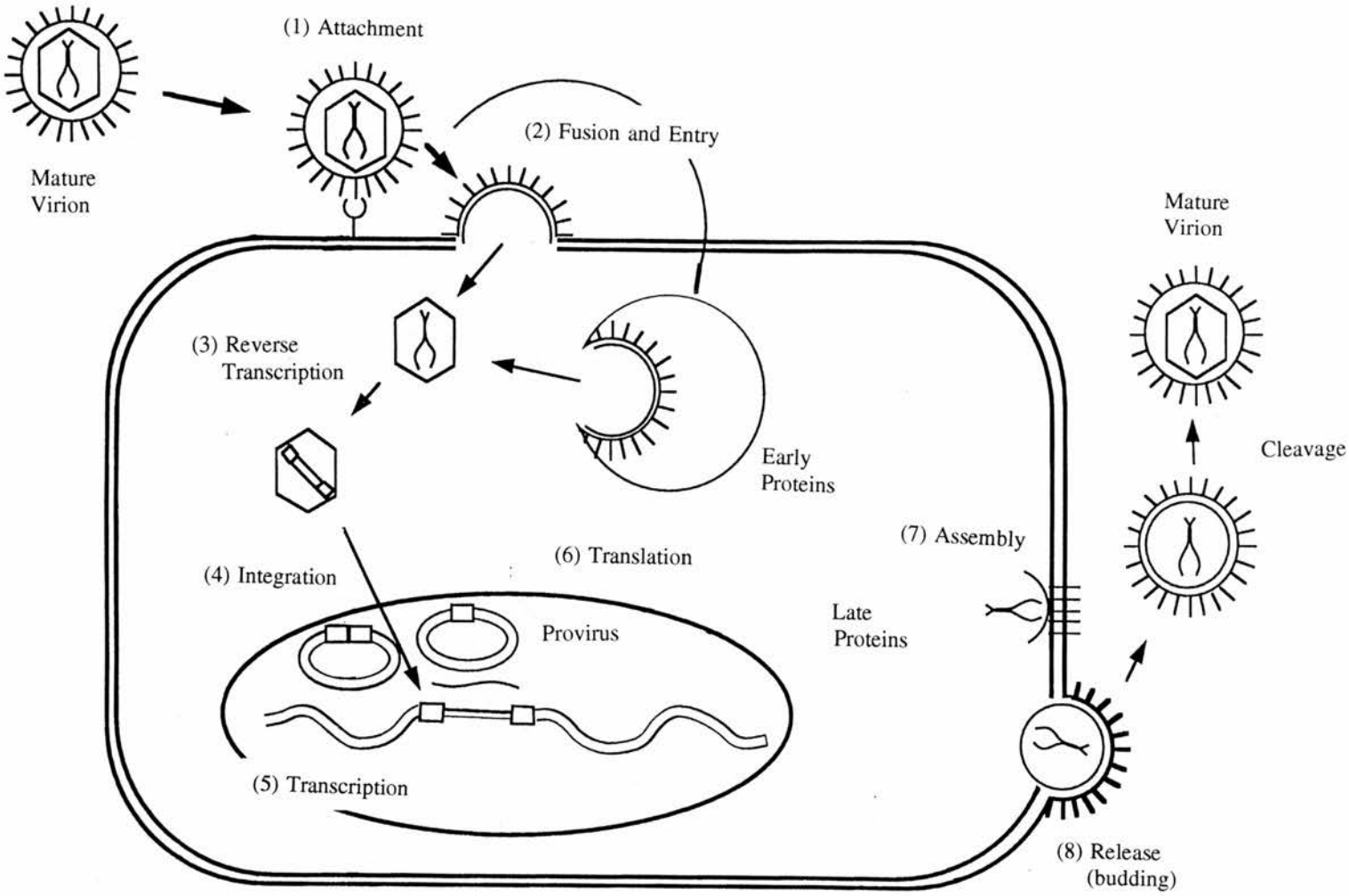


Fig. 5. Life cycle of HIV-1 (modified from Fields Virology, 1996).

the CD4 molecule found on the surface of a number of human cells. (2) Following attachment the virus is internalized and uncoated. The mechanism of entry is somewhat controversial and a number of mechanisms have been proposed, including pH dependent and independent processes. (3) Once internalized, the genomic RNA is transcribed into DNA using the viral enzyme RT. (4) The proviral DNA is then integrated into the host chromosomal DNA utilizing another virally encode enzyme IN. (5) A latent phase may follow viral integration restricting the life cycle until the infected cell is activated allowing the transcription of viral genomic RNA and mRNA. (6) Protein synthesis and processing then occur followed by virus assembly and maturation as the virion buds from the cell surface acquiring its coat.

1.2.8.1 ATTACHMENT.

The first step in the initiation of infection is the binding of the virus to the surface of a susceptible cell via an interaction with a specific receptor. In the case of HIV this specific receptor was found to be dependent on the surface presentation of cluster determinant 4 (CD4; Maddon *et al.,* 1986; McDougal *et al.,* 1986; Dalgleish *et al.,* 1984; Klatzmann *et al.,* 1984). The CD4 molecule is a transmembrane glycoprotein of 58Kd and consists of a extracellular region, transmembrane region and a cytoplasmic region at the C-terminal. The extracellular region is folded into four domains, D1 to D4 (Maddon *et al.,* 1985). CD4 is a member of the immunoglobulin superfamily and is present predominantly on T

helper cells but can also be found on B cells, cells of the monocyte-macrophage lineage and specialized cells of the CNS (Maddon *et al.,* 1986). The CD4 molecule interacts with the envelope glycoprotein gp120 prior to infection. A number of studies have been carried out which have precisely mapped the regions on both the CD4 molecule and gp120 involved in this highly specific interaction (Clayton *et al.,* 1989; Arthos *et al.,* 1989; Lasky *et al.,* 1987; Kowalski *et al.,* 1987; McDougal *et al.,* 1986). The carboxy-terminal of gp120 is thought to interact with a region located in the first domain of the CD4 molecule homologous to the second complementary determining region (CDR2) of immunoglobulin variable region. This interaction is also thought to facilitate the fusion of the virus membrane with the cell membrane and will be discussed in section 1.2.8.2.

Chemokine receptors have been found to act as secondary receptors for HIV-1 infection. A member of the α chemokine receptor family was the first to be identified which acts as a co-receptor for T cell line tropic strains (Feng *et al.,* 1996). This receptor was previously named LESTR/fusin and has recently been redesignated CXCR-4 (Bleul *et al.,* 1996). Subsequent studies revealed that a member of the β chemokine receptor family, CCR-5, serves as a co-receptor for macrophage tropic isolates or dual tropic primary isolates (Alkhatib *et al.,* 1996; Deng *et al.,* 1996; Dragic *et al.,* 1996). Bruel *et al.*, have shown that infection of HeLa-CD4+ cells, PBMCs and CXCR-4 transfectants were inhibited by the CXC chemokine stromal cell derived factor-1 (SDF-1), the natural ligand for CXCR-4, but did not affect CCR-5 mediated infection of macrophage tropic or dual tropic primary HIV-1 isolates (Bleul *et al.,* 1996). Similar inhibition studies have revealed

that RANTES, MIP-1α and MIP-1β (natural ligands for CCR-5) blocked infection of lymphocytes but failed to block infection of macrophages (Cheng-Mayer *et al.,* 1997; Schmidtmayerova *et al.,* 1996). These findings suggest that HIV-1 variants may utilise different co-receptors for infection of macrophages. A further difficulty with understanding the tropism of HIV for macrophages has arisen from the observation that macrophages, common with most human cells *in vivo*, express the CXCR-4 receptor but are non-permissive for infection by SI strains that specifically use this second receptor. A recent study by Rana *et al.*, found that primary CD4+ T cells recovered from individuals homozygous for a mutation in the CCR-5 chemokine receptor (see below) were resistant to infection with macrophage tropic strains but permissive to infection with T cell tropic and dual tropic isolates that use CXCR-4, CCR-5, CCR-3 or CCR-2b (Rana *et al.,* 1997). Clearly expression of CD4 and CXCR-4 in macrophages is insufficient to confer susceptibility. However, transfection of these genes into non-human cells such as cat, hamster and mink was sufficient to permit infection with SI isolates.

There is little information on the distribution of chemokine receptors amongst different cell types *in vivo*. However, CXCR-4 is thought to be widely distributed in human cells and tissues (Feng *et al.,* 1996) and has been detected in PBMCs and a number of CD4+ cell lines (Loetscher *et al.,* 1994). CCR-5 has been found to be expressed in primary monocytes/macrophages, primary T cells and granulocyte precursors (Alkhatib *et al.,* 1996; Deng *et al.,* 1996), while CCR-3 has so far only been detected in eosinophils (Daugherty, 1996) and microglia (He *et al.,* 1997).

Differential chemokine secondary receptor usage of T cell tropic and macrophage tropic variants suggests that the cellular host range of HIV-1 may be determined by utilization of co-receptors. Recent studies have shown that the V3 region is a determinant of chemokine receptor usage (Cocchi *et al.*, 1996; Choe *et al.*, 1996). Choe *et al.*, demonstrated that recombinant viruses containing chimaeric glycoproteins with a V3 loop from primary macrophage tropic isolates were able to infect HeLa-CD4 cells more efficiently when either CCR-3 or CCR-5 was exposed on the target cell (Choe *et al.*, 1996). Wu *et al.*, and Trkola *et al.*, have shown that binding of MIP-1β to CCR-5 was blocked by the gp120/CD4 complex, suggesting gp120 specifically interacts with this co-receptor (Wu *et al.*, 1996; Trkola *et al.*, 1996). The gp120-CCR-5 interaction was enhanced by CD4 suggesting an interaction between gp120 and CD4 may result in a conformational change within gp120 facilitating the binding of CCR-5. These findings are consistent with previous observations that the V3 region is an important determinant of HIV-1 tropism and phenotype (see section1.4.3).

Secondary receptor usage has also been shown to influence infection of microglia in brain. Recently, He *et al.*, reported that macrophage tropic HIV-1 viruses that use CCR-5 and CCR-3 as co-receptors were able to efficiently infect microglia but that a T cell tropic virus that uses CXCR-4 was not (He *et al.*, 1997). These findings suggest that both CCR-3 and CCR-5 serve as co-receptors for infection of brain microglia. This is supported by the observation that CCR-5 and CCR-3 ligands can inhibit infection of microglia by several primary neurotropic HIV-1 isolates (He *et al.*, 1997). This is an interesting finding and may help to

explain the overlap observed between macrophage tropism and that of microglia since blood derived monocyte/macrophages express CCR-5 but do not express CCR-3.

The discovery of co-receptors for HIV-1 infection also has important implications regarding disease pathogenesis. Two recent studies have identified a mutant allele of CCR-5 that is homozygous in two exposed, yet uninfected individuals (Liu *et al.,* 1996; Samson *et al.,* 1996). This allele was found to contain a 32 base-pair deletion, resulting in a truncated protein which was unable to mediate chemokine signalling. These findings have far reaching implications suggesting CCR-5 is a major determinant of HIV-1 infection *in vivo* and that the absence of CCR-5 may confer protection against HIV-1 infection. Consistent with this hypothesis, Samson *et al.*, reported that out of 723 HIV-1 infected individuals none were found to harbour this mutant allele while 8 out of 704 uninfected individuals were found to express this allele (Samson *et al.,* 1996). They also found a reduced frequency of heterozygotes in the HIV-1 infected group compared with the uninfected group suggesting a single copy of this mutant allele may confer some degree of protection. Hwang *et al.*, reported evidence for an association between the heterozygous genotype with a slower rate of CD4+ T cell decline and a lower viral load (Huang *et al.,* 1996). These studies were fairly small and more extensive analysis of the populations will be required to determine the true relevance of these observations in disease pathogenesis.

The observation of some degree of protection awarded by the presence of CCR-5 mutants is potentially important in viral transmission. Mutant CCR-5 alleles

may confer resistance to infection following sexual transmission since macrophage cells are likely to be the first cell type encountered by the virus upon transmission. This would be consistent with previous reports that macrophage tropic isolates are predominantly detected following transmission (Zhu *et al.,* 1993). However, further epidemiological studies will be required to examine the distribution of mutant alleles in other risk groups to determine if this is an important factor during transmission and if this mutation alone confers natural resistance to infection with HIV-1. Indeed, a combination of genotypic variation within virions and co-receptor usage may determine the transmission of HIV-1 variants.

1.2.8.2 FUSION AND ENTRY.

Enveloped animal viruses, such as HIV, enter host cells following fusion with the cell membrane. The mode of entry of enveloped viruses can be broadly divided into two mechanisms. The first is by a pH-dependent process involving internalization of the virus by receptor mediated endocytosis (RME) into acidic compartments (endosomes), where a reduction in pH induces a conformational change in the TM glycoprotein, exposing the hydrophobic fusion domain thereby facilitating fusion of viral and endosomal membranes. The second possible mode of entry is via a pH independent process. This mechanism involves the direct fusion of the virus envelope with the plasma membrane of the cell and is independent of a decrease in pH. The mechanism by which HIV enters cells is one of the most poorly understood aspects of the virus life cycle. Thin section EM studies on viral

fusion and uptake have provided evidence for both RME (via clathrin coated pits) and direct fusion with the cell membrane (Pauza *et al.,* 1988; Stein *et al.,* 1987; Grewe *et al.,* 1990). Early studies on the fusion and uptake of HIV concentrated on determining whether uptake was pH dependent or independent. To enable this distinction to be made a number of studies have been carried out using various methods. HIV infection was reported to be inhibited by treating cells with lysosomotropic agents (weak bases) such as ammonium chloride and amantadine (Maddon *et al.,* 1986). Subsequently, however, it was reported that lysosomotropic agents and carboxylic ionophores, such as monensin, did not abrogate HIV fusion and infectivity (McClure *et al.,* 1988; Stein *et al.,* 1987). Following these studies Maddon *et al* constructed cell lines expressing defective CD4 molecules that were unable to undergo RME, yet found they remained susceptible to HIV infection. This suggests a mechanism whereby binding of the virus to the CD4 molecule is followed by the direct introduction of its RNA into the cell by fusion with the cell membrane (Maddon *et al.,* 1988).

Little more is known about the fusion event itself, how the fusion process is triggered and the intra- and intermolecular associations involved. It is likely that this step is mediated by a region of hydrophobic amino acids at the amino terminal end of the TM protein, gp41 (Kowalski *et al.,* 1987; Freed *et al.,* 1990). Substitutions within gp41 which insert charged amino acids into this hydrophobic region have been found to impair syncytium formation (Kowalski *et al.,* 1991). Regions in the carboxy and amino terminal 30 residues of gp120 have been found in association with gp41 (Ivey Hoyle *et al.,* 1991; Helseth *et al.,* 1991), and are

thought to form a molecular pocket masking the amphipathic regions of gp41. Interaction of gp120 with the cell surface receptor CD4 is subsequently thought to trigger conformational changes resulting in dissociation from gp41 exposing the fusogenic domain (Freed *et al.,* 1990). This also results in the shedding of gp120 since both glycoproteins are weakly associated through non-covalent bonds on the virion surface (Gelderblom *et al.,* 1987). Epitope mapping studies have shown that upon binding of soluble CD4 to gp120 conformational changes important for fusion occur in the V3 loop (Sattentau *et al.,* 1991). Similarly, neutralizing antibodies against V3 can inhibit HIV infection without preventing CD4 binding, suggesting the V3 loop is involved in post-binding events (Skinner *et al.,* 1988).

1.2.8.3 REVERSE TRANSCRIPTION.

All retroviruses must reverse what is generally thought to be the normal flow of genetic information, DNA to RNA to protein, because their genome is entirely composed of RNA and hence must convert genomic RNA into DNA prior to protein synthesis. This phenomenon is achieved in the cell cytoplasm by the action of the virally encoded enzyme RT. The viral RNA genome is synthesised using a host DNA-dependant RNA polymerase (DNA-dep RNA pol) and as a consequence contains cellular post-translational modifications, namely the 5' end of the genome is capped (Gppp) and the 3' end has a poly A tail (AAA; Weiss *et al.,* 1985). Reverse transcription is initiated at the 5' end of the RNA genome and requires a host cell molecule, transfer RNA (tRNA), to act as the initial primer of

DNA synthesis. This tRNA is complementary to a region of the genome known as the primer binding site (PBS) near the 5' end of the viral genome. An RNA-dependant DNA polymerase (RNA-dep DNA pol) activity of RT uses this primer to synthesise a DNA copy of the 5' U5 and R regions of the genome. A second component of RT, RNaseH, then degrades the RNA copied by the polymerase allowing the newly synthesised DNA region to act as a second primer binding site to the complementary R sequence at the 3' end of the genome. This transfer is known as the first jump. Synthesis of the (-) DNA strand is then completed using the RNA-dep DNA pol, while the RNaseH degrades the remainder of the RNA template. A small region is left upstream of the 3' U3 and R regions which acts as the primer for (+) strand DNA synthesis. Synthesis of the (+) strand begins at the 3' end of the (-) DNA strand and continues through U5 and the tRNA primer. A second jump occurs, as the tRNA primer is complementary to the 5' PBS, completing the synthesis of the (+) DNA strand. Synthesis of the (+) DNA strand can occur as an intermolecular or an intramolecular event.

1.2.8.4 INTEGRATION.

Following reverse transcription double stranded HIV DNA is transported to the nucleus in association with a nucleoprotein complex. Once in the nucleus HIV is integrated into the host genome in its linear form. Integration is catalyzed using the virally encoded enzyme IN. This process can be separated into three stages, the first being the removal of two bases from the 3' ends of both DNA strands.

Second, the 3' ends of the viral DNA are joined in a concerted reaction to previously nicked sites in the host DNA. Finally, the gaps in the mismatched intermediate are repaired (Engelman *et al.,* 1991). The integrated HIV DNA genome is known as the HIV provirus. This integration process was thought to occur at random sites within the host genome however there is some evidence that integration occurs at 'hot spots' in the host genome (Scherdin *et al.,* 1990). Following integration some retroviruses persist for the lifetime of the cell, and may spread further amongst the descendants of the cell as each harbour copies of the original provirus in their genome.

1.2.8.5 SYNTHESIS OF HIV-1 RNA.

Synthesis of HIV RNA is initiated by cellular proteins called transcription factors. The 5' LTR of HIV contains similar sequences to regions of the host genome which bind these proteins initiating transcription. The HIV provirus can therefore effectively *hijack* the cellular transcription machinery. As previously mentioned transcription occurs in two stages, early and late. Cellular transcriptional factors initiate mRNA synthesis and maintain it at a basal level which is insufficient to drive replication. Significant levels of fully spliced HIV mRNA are achieved by the action of the regulatory protein tat. This protein binds a specific region at the 5' end of the mRNA termed *trans*-activation response element (TAR). It is thought that tat acts to stimulate elongation by RNA polymerase II leading to the synthesis of complete mRNAs. When sufficient mRNA is produced rev acts as

a balance shifting the synthesis of short, multiply spliced mRNAs to the production of late, singly spliced and unspliced mRNAs encoding the structural proteins.

1.2.8.6 ASSEMBLY AND RELEASE.

Retroviral assembly and release is controlled by interactions between the gag proteins, viral genomic RNA and the plasma membrane of the cell. The *pol* and *gag* gene products are incorporated into virions in the form of their polyprotein precursors, p160 (*gag:pol*) and p55 (*gag*). They undergo proteolytic cleavage during or after budding from the cellular membrane to form mature virus particles. The amino-terminus of these precursors are post-translationally modified by the addition of myristic acid which facilitates the interaction with the membrane (Vazeux *et al.,* 1992). The *gag* and *gag:pol* precursors are cleaved by the viral PR enabling morphological maturation of virions. Incorporation of envelope glycoproteins during virus budding is essential for the formation of infectious virions. HIV envelope glycoproteins are incorporated as a gp120-gp41 complex which mediates attachment and membrane fusion. The process by which this complex is incorporated into virions is not well understood. However, a number of studies suggest that the MA protein and the cytoplasmic tail of gp41 may interact during virus assembly and release (Freed *et al.,* 1996; Dorfman *et al.,* 1994). Finally the virion buds from the host cell membrane simultaneously acquiring a lipid bilayer envelope.

1.2.9 THERAPEUTIC STRATEGIES.

1.2.9.1 ANTI-RETROVIRAL AGENTS.

The quest to abrogate HIV infection has proved to be a very difficult task. The complex nature of this virus and its life cycle has impeded and mystified scientists in this field for almost 15 years. A number of strategies have been employed, not only to try and prevent infection and replication of this elusive virus, but also to prolong and improve the lives of those infected. A great deal of effort has been directed towards the identification of viral receptor(s) and elucidating the life cycle of HIV since its discovery in 1982. An important impetus for such investigations is the possibility of the development of effective antiviral agents. A number of potential targets, during the life cycle of HIV-1, have been identified which may present opportunities for antiviral therapy (Table 4). Reverse transcription is a phenomenon unique to retroviruses. The first successful inhibitor of RT activity was a dideoxynucleoside analogue that had initially been synthesized as a potential therapy for cancer, 3'-azido-3-deoxythymidine or AZT (zidovudine). It acts as a competitor for nucleotides used by the polymerase and is a potent chain terminator of viral DNA synthesis. Initial studies on the efficacy of this antiviral drug demonstrated increased levels of CD4+ T cell counts, and delayed development of AIDS-defining symptoms in symptomatic and asymptomatic individuals (Volberding *et al.,* 1995; Fischl *et al.,* 1990; Fischl *et al.,* 1987). There has been a great deal of debate regarding when, during infection, AZT should be

TABLE 4: POTENTIAL TARGETS FOR THERAPEUTIC DRUGS.

Steps in viral replication	**Identified drugs**
Attachment	sCD4, CD4-peptides, CD4-Ig
Reverse transcription	AZT, ddI, ddC, stavudine
Integration	none
Viral replication	saquinavir, idinavir, ritonavir, nelfinavir
Protein synthesis	Ribozymes
Virion assembly	Myristic acid analouges
Virion release	INF-α

Ig, immunoglobulin; AZT, 3'-azido-3-deoxythymidine; ddI, 2',3'-dideoxyinosine; ddC, 2',3'-dideoxycytidine.

administered to provide the greatest benefit. A number of early studies demonstrated that early administration was more effective in slowing progression to disease (Fauci, 1993a; Cooper *et al.,* 1993a; Graham *et al.,* 1992a; Volberding *et al.,* 1995a). However, the Concorde trial revealed that patients who received AZT prior to developing symptoms progressed to AIDS as quickly as those who were given AZT once symptoms had developed (Concorde coordinating committee. 1994). The benefits of AZT monotherapy have been shown to be of limited duration with resistant strains emerging, especially after prolonged therapy, associated with mutations at four positions in HIV RT (Boucher *et al.,* 1992). Other nucleoside analogues that inhibit RT activity have also been developed, didanosine (2',3'-dideoxyinosine [ddI]; Lambert *et al.,* 1990), zalcitabine (2',3'-dideoxycytidine [ddC]; Yarchoan *et al.,* 1994; Yarchoan *et al.,* 1988) and stavudine (d4T; Broune *et al.,* 1993; Anonymous., 1993). Combinational therapy with one or more nucleoside analogue drug may reduce the emergence of resistance through synergistic or additive effects (Fischl *et al.,* 1995; Knox *et al.,* 1996; Larder *et al.,* 1996).

The limited success of nucleoside analogue RT inhibitors (AZT, zalcitabine, ddI, ddC) in HIV infected patients led to the development of drugs that use alternative viral targets. The protease of HIV is essential for replication of the virus. It cleaves the *gag* (p55) and *gag:pol* (p160) polyproteins into the structural *gag* proteins and three virally encoded enzymes, RT, IN and PR itself. HIV protease is also distinct from human proteases making it a very favourable target for antiviral therapy. To date four protease inhibitors have shown antiviral activity

in patients; saquinavir, idinavir, ritonavir and nelfinavir (Nelson, 1996; Vella, 1994). It was initially thought that due to the nature of this enzyme the development of resistance would be less of a problem than that encountered with RT inhibitors. However, resistance was seen to accumulate rapidly (Eastman *et al.*, 1995; Molla *et al.*, 1996; Jacobsen *et al.*, 1996; Markowitz *et al.*, 1995; Condra *et al.*, 1995; Danner *et al.*, 1995). For example the antiviral effects of idinavir were lost within 12-24 weeks. Fortunately, increasing the dose given resulted in inhibition of virus replication and delayed drug resistance without increased toxicity (Markowitz *et al.*, 1995; Danner *et al.*, 1995).

An accumulation of three or more mutations was found to confer resistance to these viral variants. Also cross resistance with other protease inhibitors was evident raising concern that treatment with one protease inhibitor would confer resistance to all (Condra *et al.*, 1995). These observations reflect the commonality in the action of these antiviral drugs and suggest that divergent, as opposed to convergent, strategies may have a more favourable outcome for combination therapy. A number of studies have been carried out to investigate the therapeutic potential of combination therapies using two and three combined drug regimes (Caliendo *et al.*, 1994 and references within). A randomised double blind controlled trial (Delta) compared combinations of RT nucleoside inhibitors with therapeutic potential of AZT alone (Delta co-ordinating committee., 1996). Treatment with AZT combined with ddI or ddC resulted in prolonged survival when compared with AZT alone. A similar double blind trial comparing the combination of three drugs (AZT, saquinavir and zalcitabine) was found to result in a considerably more

favourable outcome than with combinations of AZT and saquinavir or AZT and zalcitabine (Collier *et al.*, 1996). This triple combination resulted in a reduction in HIV-1 replication, increased CD4+ T cell counts and decreased the level of serum β-2-M and neopterin. Another trial investigating the combination of AZT, lamivudine and idinavir in symptomatic patients and found this triple combination resulted in the clearance of HIV viraemia to below the limit of detection by PCR (500 copies per ml; Delfraissy, 1993). More recently, the potential use of combination therapy in infants with maternally acquired HIV-1 infection was investigated (Luzuriaga *et al.*, 1997). Previous therapeutic strategies for infants has primarily consisted of a single RT inhibitor showing moderate efficacy with limited duration. The three drug regime investigated (AZT, ddI and nevirapine) was found to reduce plasma RNA levels within four weeks of administration. Also, of the 8 infants examined 7 were found to have reduced levels of HIV-1 RNA in plasma (0.5 log) for the duration of the trial (6 months).

1.3 DIVERSITY OF HIV-1.

Following the discovery of HIV-1 it was reported that the viral genome displayed a high degree of variability (Hahn *et al.,* 1984). In early studies restriction mapping of molecularly cloned provirus was used to describe this heterogeneity. Saag *et al.*, described variation within three HIV-1 isolates (RJS4, WMF1 and WMF3) by restriction mapping of 17 to 27 clones (Saag *et al.,* 1988). This study revealed 17 of 27 RJS4 clones, 9 of 17 WNF1 clones and 13 of 18

WMF3 clones had distinct cleavage patterns, although intrapatient variation was decidedly less than interpatient variation. However, two sequential isolates recovered 16 months apart (WMF1 and WMF3) contained no identical clones (estimated nucleotide divergence of 2 to 7%) indicating a rapid rate of change of HIV-1, a finding consistent with results obtained by Fisher *et al* (Fisher *et al.,* 1988). Shaw *et al.*, compared the restriction patterns of HIV-1 from a number of AIDS patients in a number of different T cell lines and found varying restriction patterns (Shaw *et al.,* 1984). HIV-1 has been cloned and sequenced by a number of independent research groups and a large number of nucleotide differences were detected (Muesing *et al.,* 1985; Sanchez-Pescador *et al.,* 1985; Ratner *et al.,* 1985). Both restriction mapping and complete sequencing of clones proved to be very labour intensive and the resolution obtained by restriction mapping was low. The introduction of the polymerase chain reaction (PCR) heralded a new era in molecular biology making it possible to amplify small quantities of DNA, such as those found in PBMC's (Ou *et al.,* 1988). In a study by Goodenow *et al.*, two regions of the HIV-1 genome were amplified by PCR (*gag* and *env* segments) and multiple clones sequenced (Goodenow *et al.,* 1989). They detected sequence heterogeneity in both regions with varying degrees of complexity. A number of other studies have been carried out which report findings of genomic heterogeneity in HIV-1 (Hahn *et al.,* 1986; Wong-Staal *et al.,* 1985; Alizon *et al.,* 1986; Ratner *et al.,* 1985; Benn *et al.,* 1985), both within and between patients, reminiscent of other RNA viruses such as influenza A (Young *et al.,* 1979; Webster *et al.,* 1982), poliovirus (Nottay *et al.,* 1981), foot and mouth disease virus (FMDV; Domingo *et*

al., 1980), enterovirus 70 (Takeda *et al.,* 1984)} and other retroviruses such as visna virus (Lutley *et al.,* 1983) and equine infectious anemia virus (Montelaro *et al.,* 1984). Genomic heterogeneity of this nature has given rise to the concept of a quasispecies commonly used to describe a population of closely related yet genetically distinct viral variants.

There is a great deal of discussion regarding the generation of diversity in HIV-1. The complex nature of the HIV-1 life cycle provides many opportunities for mutation. Retroviruses require three enzyme systems during replication, reverse transcriptase, cellular DNA polymerase and RNA polymerase, of which the most attention has centred on the reverse transcriptase. Secondly, HIV-1 has the ability to transfer from one template to another during DNA synthesis, known as strand transfers or 'jumps', which are required to generate the LTR's at either end of the viral genome. However, other factors may enhance genetic diversity such as the high turnover rate of HIV-1 and various selective forces imposed by the host immune response and requirements for cell tropism.

Genetic variability is determined by three separate variables: the mutation rate per replication cycle, the number of replication cycles in a given time and the selective advantage or disadvantage of a particular variant. A number of studies have attempted to calculate the *in vivo* mutation rate of a number of retroviruses. However, experiments of this nature are problematic in that the accumulation of mutations in a single round of replication must be measured to eliminate the effects of selection. In order to circumvent this difficulty Dougherty and Temin used a retroviral DNA vector system to measure the mutation rate of spleen necrosis virus

(SNV; Dougherty *et al.,* 1988), using selectable marker or reporter genes, in which the replication cycle was limited to one round. They determined that the mutation rate for a single base pair substitution was 2×10^{-5} per base pair per replication cycle and an insertion rate of 10^{-7} per base pair per replication cycle. Using a different SNV based vector, the base substitution mutation rate over a longer sequence was found to be 0.7×10^{-5} per base per replication cycle, corroborating the findings of Dougherty and Temin (Pathak *et al.,* 1990). Monk *et al.*, determined the point mutation rate of a murine retrovirus by direct examination of RNAs from viruses isolated after a single replication cycle, reporting a mutation rate of 2×10^{-5} bases per replication cycle (Monk *et al.,* 1992). Studies on Rous sarcoma virus have estimated the mutation rate to be in the order of 10^{-3} to 10^{-4} (Leider *et al.,* 1988; Coffin *et al.,* 1980). From these studies the mutation rate for HIV-1 was previously estimated to be of the order of 10^{-4} per base per replication cycle (Nowak *et al.,* 1991b; Wain-Hobson, 1993b), comparable to the error rate of purified HIV-1 RT (Gregson *et al.,* 1994). However, a recent study by Mansky *et al.*, determined the mutation rate of HIV-1 to be 3.4×10^{-5} mutations per base pair per replication cycle, 20 fold less than previous error rates (Mansky *et al.,* 1995). The point mutation rates for retroviruses are in the range of estimates for RNA viruses in general, for example, influenza virus (1.5×10^{-5}; Parvin *et al.,* 1986) and poliovirus (2×10^{-6}; Sedivy *et al.,* 1987; Parvin *et al.,* 1986). This suggests that the extraordinary diversity of HIV-1 is not only due to a relatively high mutation rate but may also reflect the number of replication cycles and the fixation rate of mutations.

The high level of RNA virus diversity has been attributed to error prone replicating enzymes. For example, nucleotide misincorporation in retroviruses is uncorrected as RT does not encode an exonuclease activity (Battula *et al.,* 1976; Roberts *et al.,* 1988), and hence any errors arising during transcription are not subject to proofreading. A number of studies have been carried out to measure the fidelity of HIV-1 RT (Bebenek *et al.,* 1989; Roberts *et al.,* 1988; Preston *et al.,* 1988). Using nonsense codon reversion assays, the error rate of HIV RT was 1/1700 (Roberts *et al.,* 1988) to 1/4000 (Preston *et al.,* 1988), translating to approximately 5 to 10 errors per HIV-1 genome per round of replication *in vivo*. Error rates for HIV RT are approximately 10 fold higher when compared with avian myeloblastosis virus or murine leukaemia virus, both lacking an RT proofreading mechanism, with error rates of 1/9000 (Preston *et al.,* 1988) to 1/17000 (Roberts *et al.,* 1988) and 1/30000 (Roberts *et al.,* 1988) respectively. These findings suggest that the lack of a proofreading activity alone may not completely explain the infidelity of HIV-1 RT. Indeed a number of studies have described a variety of other types of errors or rearrangements in addition to base pair substitutions which may greatly increase the infidelity of this enzyme. These include frameshifts, deletions, insertions and recombination events (Katz *et al.,* 1990; Coffin, 1992; Bebenek *et al.,* 1989; Temin, 1993). Furthermore, these studies have revealed that certain regions of the genome have a significantly higher error rate suggesting there may be 'hotspots' for mutation in the HIV-1 genome. For example Bebenek *et al.*, suggested the mutation rate for *env* was in the region of 10^{-3} nucleotide substitutions per site per year while that for *gag* was in the region

of 10^{-4} nucleotide substitutions per site per year (Bebenek *et al.,* 1989). Indeed, the *env* region itself is composed of conserved and hypervariable regions (Willey *et al.,* 1986; Starcich *et al.,* 1986; Modrow *et al.*, 1987). Regions of hypermutation have also been documented, characterised by a large number of G to A changes particularly within GpA dinucleotides (Bebenek *et al.,* 1989; Pathak *et al.,* 1990; Vartanian *et al.,* 1991). It was proposed that hypermutation may be due to slippage and realignment during reverse transcription, termed dislocation mutagenesis (Wain Hobson, 1992; Bebenek *et al.,* 1989; Vartanian *et al.,* 1991).

Although the above experiments reveal a high rate of mutation they do not distinguish between the enzyme systems utilized during HIV-1 replication. The fidelity of RNA polymerase II is not known but it is likely to be of the same order as other viral RNA polymerases i.e. approximately 10^{-4}. Therefore, errors incorporated in genomic RNA during synthesis may be equally important as those produced by RT during transcription in the generation of sequence variation. An alternative mechanism has been proposed, by Temin, who suggested variation may be a direct consequence of strand transfers during DNA synthesis, required to generate LTR sequences at either end of the proviral DNA (Temin, 1993). Hence, (-) strand synthesis may transfer back and forth between the two RNA templates present, using a similar mechanism to the production of the LTR's, increasing genetic diversity.

Genetic recombination is frequently observed during the life cycle of retroviruses. Both avian and murine type C viruses display a high frequency of genetic recombination (Wyke *et al.,* 1979; Vogt, 1971; Linial *et al.,* 1979; Hunter,

1978; Coffin, 1979; Blair, 1977). Recombination within lentiviruses has not been well documented although recombination between HIV-1 genomes has been shown to occur (Hu *et al.,* 1990; Vartanian *et al.,* 1991; Srinivasan *et al.,* 1989; Clavel *et al.,* 1989). The above studies may have produced somewhat erroneous results since recombination events described occurred in tissue culture systems and may not be observed during in vivo infection. Recently a study by Robertson *et al.*, analysed a number of published HIV-1 sequences and reported a large number of apparent recombinant viruses (Robertson *et al.,* 1995), implying co-infection with divergent HIV-1 stains may not be as rare as previously predicted (Sabino *et al.,* 1994). Interestingly all the possible recombinant viruses originated from geographic regions where multiple subtypes are known to co-circulate, for example, Central Africa, South America and South East Asia (Clavel *et al.,* 1989). Therefore, recombination is increasingly being recognised as a biological phenomenon among HIV-1 isolates/subtypes and may play an important role in viral evolution.

Evolution of the virus is greatly enhanced by the very high rates of replication. It has been known for some time that HIV-1 actively replicates throughout the course of infection (Embretson *et al.,* 1993; Pantaleo *et al.,* 1993). However, recent findings have revealed that HIV-1 infection is a highly dynamic process in which very high levels of virus replication and CD4+ cell turnover are apparent. By treating patients with a number of antiviral drugs Wei *et al.*, and Ho *et al.*, were able to show that both virus and CD4 cells in the peripheral blood exhibit fast rates of turnover (Ho *et al.,* 1995; Wei *et al.,* 1995). Extrapolating from changes seen in the blood they estimated that between 10^8 and 10^9 virions were

cleared daily. Since a steady state is observed during infection the number of virions cleared daily must be equal to the number produced daily. Therefore with approximately 10^9 virions produced each day the scope for creating diversity must be extremely high.

Regardless of how the extensive variation in HIV-1 is generated the ultimate result will be determined by the selective forces acting on HIV-1 variants. For example, a number of studies have described the isolation of minor variants upon *in vitro* cultivation in PBMC's, suggesting the preferential selection of those viruses best adapted to tissue culture conditions (Vartanian *et al.,* 1991; Meyerhans *et al.,* 1989). The degree of diversity among different strains of HIV-1 may be partly due to selection by the host immune system. This is supported by *in vivo* studies which have demonstrated the generation of viruses that have escaped neutralization by serum antibodies (Robert-guroff *et al.,* 1986; Reitz *et al.,* 1988; McKeating *et al.,* 1989). Similarly, resistant mutants can also be selected for in the presence of antiviral drugs, such as AZT (Larder *et al.,* 1989). Differences have also been reported regarding the cellular host range among HIV-1 strains. Various studies have shown that some viruses grow in certain T, B and monocyte cell lines while others do not (Schwartz *et al.,* 1989; Sakai *et al.,* 1997; Levy *et al.,* 1985; Fenyo *et al.,* 1988; Cloyd *et al.,* 1990). Different strains have also been found during early and late stages of infection showing substantial variability in replicative abilities in T cell lines and macrophages (Schwartz *et al.,* 1989; Fenyo *et al.,* 1989). Similarly, selective forces can act on coding regions which may result in the accumulation of mutations that generate new functions. For example, various

groups have shown that the sequence of the V3 envelope region can influence tropism for T cell lines or macrophages (Westervelt *et al.,* 1992; Westervelt *et al.,* 1991; Shioda *et al.,* 1991; O'Brien *et al.,* 1990; Hwang *et al.,* 1991; Rhim *et al.,* 1991; Chesebro *et al.,* 1992). Therefore, diversity of HIV-1 may facilitate infection of different cell types *in vivo*.

1.4 TROPISM OF HIV-1.

1.4.1 HIV-1 INFECTION OF DIFFERENT CELL TYPES.

HIV infects a wide variety of tissues *in vivo*, and has been detected in a number of human cell lines in culture. Using various techniques, such as cell culture, *in situ* hybridization, immunohistochemistry, electron microscopy and PCR, HIV has been detected *in vivo* in cells of the haematopoietic lineage (Freedman *et al.,* 1991; Livingstone *et al.,* 1996; Tsubota *et al.,* 1989; Patterson *et al.,* 1994; Knight *et al.,* 1993; Ali *et al.,* 1993; Uittenbogaart *et al.,* 1996; Shattock *et al.,* 1996; Nicholson *et al.,* 1986; Levy *et al.,* 1985; Scottalgara *et al.,* 1993; Kunzi *et al.,* 1993; Gartner *et al.,* 1986; Cullen, 1991), brain (Wiley *et al.,* 1996; Wiley *et al.,* 1986; Pang *et al.,* 1990; Koenig *et al.,* 1986; Price *et al.,* 1988; Li *et al.,* 1991; Moses *et al.,* 1993; Wiley *et al.,* 1990; Gartner *et al.,* 1986), gastrointestinal tissue (Kotler, 1993; Pumarola Sune *et al.,* 1987; Gill *et al.,* 1992), heart (Luginbuhl *et al.,* 1993; Grody *et al.,* 1990), lungs (Plata *et al.,* 1990; Dolei *et al.,* 1992; Chayt *et al.,* 1986), kidneys (Cohen *et al.,* 1989), adrenals (Barboza *et al.,* 1992), eye

(Cantril *et al.,* 1988), salivary glands (Qureshi *et al.,* 1995), cervix (Nuovo *et al.,* 1993), prostate (da Silva *et al.,* 1989), testes (Bagasra *et al.,* 1994; da Silva *et al.,* 1989) and skin (Tschachler *et al.,* 1987). Similarly, cell culture studies have shown a wide variety of human cells to be susceptible to infection with HIV-1. Initial studies carried out to delineate the host cell range of HIV-1 suggested that CD4+ lymphocytes were preferentially infected (Klatzmann *et al.,* 1984a; Coffin *et al.,* 1986a; Dalgleish *et al.,* 1984a).

The concept of differential tropism arises from several studies which have shown HIV-1 strains differ in their ability to productively infect various human cells in *in vitro* culture (Folks *et al.,* 1986; Evans *et al.,* 1987; Levy, 1988; Kikukawa *et al.,* 1986; Levy *et al.,* 1985). Established T cell lines expressing similar amounts of CD4 antigen on their surface displayed widely varying degrees of virus production and induction of cytopathic effect (Evans *et al.,* 1987; Kikukawa *et al.,* 1986). A similar variation in virus production was observed following infection of human peripheral blood lymphocytes, from a number of seronegative individuals, with HIV-1 (Folks *et al.,* 1986; Evans *et al.,* 1987).

The host range or tropism of a virus may be controlled at the entry level or post entry level. In some retroviral systems tropism of the virus is determined at the entry level by a receptor-ligand interaction at the cell surface. For example, in feline leukaemia virus (FeLV) the 3'*pol*-5'*env* region of the FeLV genome determines the host range of the virus (Reidel *et al.,* 1988). The envelope protein of Avian leukosis virus, gp85, specifically interacts with distinct cellular receptors (Dorner *et al.,* 1986). However, in other retroviral systems the expression of other

viral genes contributes to the host range of the virus. It has been suggested that sequences within murine leukaemia virus (MuLV) LTR region and *gag* gene interact with cellular factors influencing host range and tissue tropism (Evans *et al.,* 1987; Celander *et al.,* 1984). In a murine retrovirus, involvement of multiple genes has been suggested to enhance tropism and oncogenesis (located mainly in the 3' half of the genome, although sequences in the 5' half have also been identified; Holland *et al.,* 1985). When the effect of each gene was examined alone a markedly reduced effect was apparent and only moderately increased when using a combination of two.

Several studies have identified the CD4+ molecule as the major receptor for HIV-1 infection (Fisher *et al.,* 1988; McDougal *et al.,* 1986; McDougal *et al.,* 1986; Maddon *et al.,* 1986). Maddon *et al.*, expressed the CD4+ molecule in a number of human CD4- cell lines and found that expression of the CD4+ molecule was sufficient to render human cells susceptible to HIV-1 infection (Maddon *et al.,* 1986). McDougal *et al.*, carried out binding and blocking experiments to show the direct binding of HIV-1 to CD4+ molecules and reciprocally, the inhibition of this action with anti-CD4+ antibodies (McDougal *et al.,* 1986b). A number of groups have constructed truncated soluble forms of the CD4+ molecule (Berger *et al.,* 1988; Deen *et al.,* 1988; Smith *et al.,* 1987). All were shown to block HIV-1 infection of CD4+ cells measured by the inhibition of infectivity, syncytium production and binding. Further studies have delineated the region on the CD4 molecule involved in the highly specific interaction with the virion surface proteins, namely the D1 domain (see section 1.2.8.1).

Although CD4 is recognised as the major receptor for HIV, it has been known for some time that CD4 expression alone was not sufficient for HIV infection. This was first demonstrated by Maddon *et al* who showed that when human CD4 is expressed in mouse cells, HIV is unable to gain entry (Maddon *et al.,* 1986). Subsequently, a number of cells that do not express the CD4 antigen on their surface have been productively infected with HIV-1 (Li *et al.,* 1990; Chesebro *et al.,* 1990; Cao *et al.,* 1990; Tateno *et al.,* 1989; Harouse *et al.,* 1989; Folks *et al.,* 1988; Chiodi *et al.,* 1987; Cheng Mayer *et al.,* 1987; Clapham *et al.,* 1989; Dewhurst *et al.,* 1987). HIV molecular clones have been transfected into a wide variety of cells including human T lymphocytes and monocyte cell lines (permissive for HIV-1 infection) and human, mouse, mink and monkey fibroblast cell lines (resistant to direct HIV-1 infection; Nowak *et al.,* 1991b; Cichutek *et al.,* 1992b). Both these studies demonstrate the production of infectious virus particles in all cell lines examined, suggesting the block to HIV-1 infection primarily occurs at the cell surface. Intracellular mechanisms may also participate in controlling virus replication since virus production by human and animal fibroblast cell lines was greatly reduced when compared with that of human lymphocytes (Nowak *et al.,* 1991b). Similar findings were observed using phenotypically mixed particles or pseudotypes produced through co-infection with HIV-1 and an animal retrovirus. For example, murine amphotropic retrovirus (Spector *et al.,* 1990), or the xenotropic or dual tropic mouse type C virus (MuLV; Canivet *et al.,* 1990). Both human and animal cell lines became productively infected, however replication was best in human cells and very limited in murine and avian cells. These findings lead

to the speculation that a co-factor or possible second receptor may be required for infection. A number of candidates have been proposed as accessory molecules, including MHC class I and II (Grassi *et al.,* 1991), LFA-I (Hildreth *et al.,* 1989), tryptase II (Hattori *et al.,* 1989), CD26 (Alizon *et al.,* 1994; Callebaut *et al.,* 1993) and a number of undefined molecules (Henderson *et al.,* 1993). Recently a number of proteins from the superfamily G-protein-coupled-receptors with a characteristic seven transmembrane domain have been implicated as co-factors required for HIV-1 entry. The first to be characterised was CXCR-4 which facilitates the infection of T cell lines but not infection of macrophage tropic stains of HIV-1 (Feng *et al.,* 1996). A second co-receptor for HIV which facilitates infection of macrophage tropic strains was identified simultaneously by three research groups and is called CCR-5 (Alkhatib *et al.,* 1996; Dragic *et al.,* 1996; Deng *et al.,* 1996).

1.4.2 DIFFERENTIAL PROPERTIES IN THE HOST RANGE OF HIV-1.

A large number of studies have been carried out to investigate the biological properties of variants of HIV-1 infecting different tissues. Several studies have demonstrated that different HIV-1 isolates infect monocytes more readily than T cells (Koyanagi *et al.,* 1987; Gartner *et al.,* 1986; Cheng Mayer *et al.,* 1990; Gendelman *et al.,* 1990; Schuitemaker *et al.,* 1991; Briesen *et al.,* 1990; Valentin *et al.,* 1990). Gartner *et al.*, compared viral isolates obtained from lung and brain derived macrophages, and found they displayed a significantly higher ability to infect macrophages than T cells (Gartner *et al.,* 1986b). These findings are in

contrast with the properties of the laboratory adapted isolate, HIV-$_{IIIB}$, which showed a 10,000 fold lower ability to infect macrophages than T cells. A second study compared isolates from cerebrospinal fluid (CSF) and brain tissue from patients presenting with AIDS encephalopathy (Koyanagi *et al.,* 1987). Both isolates were found to replicate efficiently in PBL's, although efficient and productive infection of macrophages was only accomplished using isolates obtained from brain tissue.

Kinetic studies have described differences in cytopathogenicity and replicating abilities among HIV-1 isolates. Initially pathogenic strains of HIV were identified using the MT-4 plaque assay which identified HIV variants with enhanced replication kinetics and cytopathogenicity isolated from patients with clinical disease compared to healthy seropositive individuals (Tateno *et al.,* 1988). Subsequently, an increasing number of studies have reported a relationship between the clinical severity of HIV-1 infection and the *in vitro* replication potential of HIV-1 (Tersmette *et al.,* 1988; Fenyo *et al.,* 1989; Sakai *et al.,* 1988; Fenyo *et al.,* 1988; Schwartz *et al.,* 1989; Asjo *et al.,* 1986). It has been suggested that HIV-1 exists in two different states early and late in infection. Viruses isolated from asymptomatic individuals are thought to be less virulent, displaying low replication rates, do not produce syncytia and replicate efficiently in macrophages but not transformed T cell lines. These have been designated as slow/low, non syncytium inducing viral isolates (NSI). During disease progression more virulent strains can be isolated displaying higher replication rates and decreased ability to replicate in macrophages (SI). In approximately 50% of all infected individuals SI isolates

emerge which have the capacity to cause syncytia and replicate in transformed T cell lines. These have been designated rapid/high viral isolates.

In order to understand the differences involved during replication of these isolates Schwartz *et al.*, were able to distinguish between slow/low and rapid/high isolates using the CAT bioassay (Schwartz *et al.,* 1989). Rapid/high isolates can activate CAT expression in T lymphoid and monocytoid cell lines, whereas slow/low viruses only activate CAT expression in monocytoid cell lines. This assay is based on the ability of HIV-1 isolates to activate an LTR derived from the HXB2c molecular clone (isolated from the laboratory adapted strain HIV_{IIIB}). A block in productive infection of T cell lines by the slow/low isolates must therefore take place early in the infection cycle and is probably associated with a lack of entry.

1.4.3 ROLE OF THE V3 REGION OF gp120 IN CELLULAR TROPISM

Regions located in the *env* gene of gp120 outwith the CD4 binding domain (carboxy terminal) have been associated with viral tropism. These include the V1, V2 and V3 hypervariable regions. While most HIV-1 stains are capable of replication in primary lymphocytes, replication in other cell types is more restricted (Schuitemaker *et al.,* 1991). HIV-1 isolates capable of infecting macrophages are generally unable to infect T cell lines and *vice versa* (Cheng-Mayer *et al.,* 1988). The restriction of HIV-1 isolates for replication in macrophages is thought to be at the level of virus entry, the critical determinant being within the V3 region of

gp120. V3 also serves as a major target for neutralizing antibodies (Rusche *et al.*, 1988; Matsushita *et al.*, 1988; Javaherian *et al.*, 1989). Additional studies have shown that V3 contains epitopes that elicit CTL responses (Takahashi *et al.*, 1989; Clerici *et al.*, 1991). Extensive sequence analysis has been carried out on the V3 region to identify the regions of the virus responsible for macrophage tropism. Hwang *et al.*, demonstrated that the V3 loop was a major determinant of cell tropism. They substituted a 20 amino acid sequence from the V3 loop of a macrophage tropic isolate (HIV_{BAL}) into a T cell tropic virus ($HTLV_{IIIB}$). This provirus (IIIB/V3-BaL) replicated in macrophages equally as well as the HIV_{BAL} proviral clone but was no longer able to infect T cell lines (Hwang *et al.*, 1991). Shioda *et al.*, constructed recombinant viruses between molecular clones of HIV-1 isolates showing differential abilities to infect T cell lines and macrophages (HIV-1_{SF2}: T cell line tropic and HIV-1_{SF162}: macrophage tropic; Shioda *et al.*, 1991a). They found that infection of primary macrophages was associated with a 159 amino acid region encompassing the V3 hypervariable region. A similar finding was reported by O'Brien *et al.*, following examination of the molecular clone HIV-1_{JR-FL} (O'Brien *et al.*, 1990).

A number of studies have reported an accumulation of amino acid substitutions within the V3 region during the course of infection, some of which alter the cellular host range of HIV-1 variants (Morris *et al.*, 1994; Shioda *et al.*, 1994; Wolfs *et al.*, 1991; Chesebro *et al.*, 1992). Macrophage-tropic isolates showed remarkable similarity in V3 while T cell tropic isolates were found to be highly heterogenous (Chesebro *et al.*, 1992; Yamashita *et al.*, 1994). Morris *et al.*,

found that a single amino acid substitution at position 312 (threonine to alanine) in the V3 loop resulted in the generation of a revertant virus, infectious for Sup-T1 cells (T cell-line) but not for AA5 cells (Epstein barr virus transformed B cell line highly permissive for HIV-1 infection). A subsequent mutation at position 306 (arginine to serine) restored the ability of the virus to infect AA5 cells (Morris *et al.,* 1994). Substitution of an acidic amino acid (aspartic acid) for a basic amino acid (lysine) at position 30 (from the first cysteine) in the V3 loop altered the capabilities of a recombinant virus to grow in a human T cell line (Oka *et al.,* 1994; Shioda *et al.,* 1994). A study by Wolfs *et al.,* observed a reduction in the binding affinity of a patients antibodies following an amino acid substitution at position 308 in the V3 loop. Subsequently, a specific humoral immune response was mounted against this new variant indicating antigenic variation within the viral population (Wolfs *et al.,* 1991). This amino acid has previously been reported to be a critical determinant of antibody binding specificity (McKeating *et al.,* 1989).

Analysis of V3 loop sequences obtained from cloned and primary HIV-1 isolates has revealed a distinct pattern of amino acid substitutions within this region that correlated with virus phenotype (Millich *et al.,* 1993). It was found that a combination of non-conservative basic amino acid substitutions in positions 11, 24, and 32 plus a basic or uncharged amino acid residue at position 25 were predictive of an SI phenotype. The presence of an acidic amino acid at position 25 was found to correlate with an NSI phenotype. These findings are consistent with previous analyses of this hypervariable loop (de Jong *et al.,* 1992; Koup *et al.,* 1994; Fouchier *et al.,* 1992; Shioda *et al.,* 1992; Shioda *et al.,* 1994; Morris *et al.,* 1994).

Several studies have shown that amino acid substitutions flanking the GPGR sequence (found predominantly in V3 sequences) were sufficient to alter virus tropism to T cell-line tropic (de Jong *et al.,* 1992; Chesebro *et al.,* 1992). De Jong *et al.*, found a correlation between a high charge in the V3 region, due to basic amino acid substitutions, and an SI phenotype (de Jong *et al.,* 1992). A more recent study has examined the V3 loop in a number of HIV-1 group O isolates of known phenotype, as determined by the MT-2 assay (de Jong *et al.,* 1996). SI isolates were found to have a high net positive charge with a positive amino acid at positions 11 or 25, while NSI isolates had a low positive net charge accompanied by a positive charge at position 37.

A recent study carried out by Donaldson *et al.*, investigated the *in vivo* distribution and cytopathology of HIV-1 (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a). The aim of this study was to investigate whether there were consistent differences between HIV-1 variants obtained from lymphoid tissue (lymph node, spleen and PBMCs) with those from non-lymphoid tissues (brain, spinal cord, lung and colon). Comparisons of variants from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues between asymptomatic and symptomatic individuals were not possible as it has previously been shown that HIV-1 is not detected in non-lymphoid tissue until the onset of AIDS (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994b). In the group of patients dying in AIDS, distinct HIV-1 populations were detected in different organs, although a general observation was of a common set of sequences present at varying frequencies within the tissues sampled. For example, the major V3 sequence present in brain and spinal cord (12 of 17 and 6 of 7 respectively) was also detected in this individuals colon, lung and lymph node

as minor variants (5 of 16, 7 of 15 and 1 of 16 respectively). In some instances, however variants appeared to be more restricted in distribution. For example, variants detected in the colon of patient 4, the brain of patient 5 and the colon of patient 6 were not detected elsewhere in each respective patient (10 of 16, 17 of 17 and 12 of 15 respectively). In addition, in patient 9 two distinct populations were detected in left and right brain tissue suggesting a random component in the *in vivo* distribution of *env* sequences. Previously, Millich *et al.*, proposed a method whereby the phenotype of a virus could be inferred from the overall charge of the V3 sequence combined with the number of observed differences from a subtype B consensus sequence. This type of analysis provided an almost complete spatial separation of published HIV-1 variants of known phenotype (Millich *et al.,* 1993). This method was employed to infer the phenotype of post mortem sequences in this study. Almost all sequences were found to have a predicted NSI/macrophage tropic phenotype with low charge and few changes from the subtype B consensus irrespective of disease status.

1.4.4 NEUROTROPISM OF HIV-1.

Virological analysis, of HIV-1 infection in the CNS, has shown infection of the brain occurs preferentially in microglia (Koyanagi *et al.,* 1987; Vazeux *et al.,* 1987; Bagasra *et al.,* 1996; Koenig *et al.,* 1986; Khabbaz *et al.,* 1994). In addition, only macrophage tropic HIV-1 isolates establish productive infection in primary human brain explant cultures (Watkins *et al.,* 1990). T cell tropic strains were

generally found unable to replicate in brain explant cultures (Watkins *et al.,* 1990). These findings lead to the suggestion that specific neurotropic strains of HIV-1 may exist. Previously, Power *et al.*, reported that a histidine at position 305 in the V3 loop was predominant in patients with dementia, suggesting that this residue may determine neurotropism (Power *et al.,* 1994). However, later studies have been unable to reproduce these findings. Di Stephano *et al.*, (1996) analyzed the V3 region from brain and CSF of individuals at different stages of disease and found a histidine at position 305 in both demented and nondemented individuals A similar study reported no evidence for conserved differences in this region between brain and spleen isolates (Reddy *et al.,* 1996). A comparison of isolates derived from blood and brain tissue in the V3 region described a monophyletic population of brain derived compared to blood derived isolates (Korber *et al.,* 1994). In contrast, two further studies comparing isolates from the CSF and blood observed no consistent differences between nucleic acid sequences from the distinct compartments (Kuiken *et al.,* 1995; Keys *et al.,* 1993). A more recent study examined the tissue distribution of HIV-1 variants from HIV-1 infected individuals dying in AIDS and those dying from unrelated causes while asymptomatic. Although organ-specific differences in V3 were observed, the majority of individuals were found to harbour NSI macrophage tropic isolates regardless of tissue origin or disease status (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a). Infection of the CNS may be determined solely by the ability to infect cells of the macrophage lineage, as conclusive evidence for a specific neurotropic HIV-1 variant has not been obtained. The limited amino acid substitutions observed in the V3 region, between different

tissues, would be unlikely to alter biological properties to such an extent as to confer different tropic properties.

1.5 PATHOGENESIS OF HIV-1 INFECTION.

Since the identification of HIV-1 as the aetiological agent for AIDS enormous progress has been made in our understanding of this virus. As discussed is sections 1.2.2 to 1.2.8 the biological and molecular characterization of HIV has revealed a complex genomic structure that encodes proteins with structural and regulatory functions. It is also clear that an important event in the pathogenesis of HIV is the binding of the HIV surface glycoprotein, gp120, to the CD4 receptor present on the surface of CD4+ lymphocytes and a number of other cells (see section 1.2.8.1). However, the precise mechanisms whereby HIV causes the dramatic decline in CD4+ T cells, resulting in severe immunosuppression and the development of opportunistic infections and neoplasms, are presently unknown or speculative at best. A number of mechanisms have been proposed involving both direct and indirect methods by which HIV could destroy CD4+ T cells. Similarly, the way in which this increase in immunosuppression relates to disease progression is currently a topic of great discussion. Why does the immune system fail to control HIV-1 infection, ultimately resulting in the plethora of clinical manifestations associated with AIDS? Again a number of mechanisms have been proposed involving the direct action of HIV and indirect mechanisms related to the host immune response.

1.5.1 MECHANISMS OF HIV-1 INDUCED CYTOPATHICITY.

1.5.1.1 DIRECT MECHANISMS.

The direct relationship between the high levels of viraemia and a precipitous drop in CD4+ T cells during the acute phase of HIV-1 infection suggests that HIV-1 is directly responsible for the death of CD4+ cells. The mechanisms involved, however are not fully understood. A number of studies have suggested disturbances in membrane permeability may lead to cell death. Formation of holes in the cell membrane may occur as a result of virion budding. In a cell that is producing very high levels of HIV-1 virions, consistent budding from the cell surface may weaken the integrity of the cell membrane resulting in cell lysis. Cloyd and collaborators reported findings which demonstrated a perturbation of the host cell membrane and lipid synthesis leading to an inability of the cell to control the influx of Ca^{2+} which accumulated in the cell (Lynn *et al.,* 1988; Cloyd *et al.,* 1991). The loss in control of the intracellular ionic strength may lead to the impairment of cellular functions and the eventual lysis of the cell.

Previously, it has been shown that HIV infected individuals, regardless of clinical stage, exhibit persistent plasma viraemia in the range of 10^2 to 10^7 virions per ml (Piatak *et al.,* 1993). More recently a number of novel experiments have been carried out to measure the dynamics of HIV-1 replication *in vivo*. Wei *et al.* (1995) and Ho *et al.* (1995), recently provided estimates of viral replication and CD4+ T cell destruction in the peripheral blood following the administration of

potent anti-retroviral drugs. Both studies showed very high rates of turnover, with approximately 30% of the total virus population and 5% of the total CD4+ T cell population being replaced each day. By measuring the reduction in plasma viraemia following antiretroviral treatment both groups estimated the half life of the virion population to be approximately two days. The rate of virus production was calculated by factoring in the patients blood volume and initial virus density and was found to be approximately 10^9 virions per day consistent with later studies (Perelson *et al.,* 1996). Therefore, the vast turnover of CD4+ cells throughout the course of infection may have a significant effect on the pathogenesis and clinical course of HIV-1 infection.

HIV-1 has been found to persist in substantial amounts in cells as unintegrated linear DNA (Shaw *et al.,* 1984). Pauza *et al.*(1990), reported that the accumulation of unintegrated DNA was directly associated with death of the culture. A similar phenomenon has been reported for a number of animal retroviruses where accumulation of unintegrated DNA in the cytoplasm of infected cells has been associated with subsequent cell death (Keshet *et al.,* 1979; Weller *et al.,* 1980). These studies support the conclusion that high levels of unintegrated viral DNA may be toxic to the cell and could contribute to the observed depletion of CD4+ cells. However, in a more recent study, single cell lysis was reported to occur in the absence of the accumulation of unintegrated DNA (Bergeron *et al.,* 1992), suggesting other mechanisms are involved in cell death.

High levels of viral RNA have been detected in the cytoplasm of HIV-1 infected cells *in vitro* (Koga *et al.,* 1988; Somasundaran *et al.,* 1988).

Somasundaran *et al.*(1988), reported HIV-expressing cells contained from 300,000 to 2,500,000 copies of viral RNA per cell. However, more recent work has indicated substantially lower copy numbers of viral RNA, in the region of 40,000 copies per cell (Robinson *et al.,* 1990). Koga *et al.*, have shown that HIV infection of a T cell line (HUT-78) results in the accumulation of high levels of large molecular weight heterodisperse RNAs (containing repetitive sequences; Koga *et al.,* 1988). More specifically, significantly increased levels of viral RNA in mitochondria compared with that in the cytoplasm or nucleus have been detected (Somasundaran *et al.,* 1994). Therefore, the presence of high levels of viral RNA may result in the interruption of normal cellular RNA synthesis and processing, which in turn may contribute to cell dysfunction and death.

1.5.1.2 INDIRECT MECHANISMS.

A major biologic feature of HIV-1 infection is the formation of multinucleated cells in culture, formed from the fusion of uninfected CD4+ T cells with infected cells. HIV-1 envelope glycoproteins are inserted into the host cell membrane during virion assembly prior to the acquisition of the envelope as the virion buds from the cell. As a result a number of infected cells have envelope glycoproteins on their surface which are able to bind CD4 molecules on the surface of uninfected cells. *In vitro* studies have shown the formation of multinucleated giant cells in infected cultures which have formed through cell fusion (Yoffe *et al.,* 1987; Lifson *et al.,* 1986a; Lifson *et al.,* 1986b). These giant cells died shortly after

they were formed suggesting cell fusion leading to cell death may be one mechanism to account for the progressive depletion of CD4+ cells observed in individuals infected with HIV-1 (Yoffe *et al.,* 1987; Lifson *et al.,* 1986a; Lifson *et al.,* 1986b). However, a number of other studies have revealed a discordance between syncytium formation and cytopathicity reporting that HIV induced cell killing does not always involve cell fusion (Somasundaran *et al.,* 1987; Stevenson *et al.,* 1990). Indeed, Dedera *et al.*, suggested that both single-cell lysis and syncytium formation occur simultaneously during acute infection (Dedera *et al.,* 1991).

It has also been proposed that disease progression is driven by factors of the hosts immune system. When a virus enters the body a multifaceted response is mounted involving a number of cells, such as macrophages, T helper cells and natural killer cells, culminating in the production of specific antibodies and cytotoxic T lymphocytes. It has been suggested that HIV-1 may be non-cytopathic and that disease manifestations observed during infection may reflect immunopathological consequences of an anti-HIV CD8+ T cell response (Zinkernagel *et al.,* 1991; Plata *et al.,* 1987; Zinkernagel *et al.,* 1994; Zinkernagel, 1995), shown to be produced throughout infection (Pinto *et al.,* 1995; Walker *et al.,* 1987). A parallel between HIV-1 infection and persistent infections with other viruses have been suggested (Zinkernagel *et al.,* 1994; Mosier *et al.,* 1993; Leist *et al.,* 1988; Odermatt *et al.,* 1991) where the balance between spread of the virus and the immune response is critical to the disease outcome. For example, infection of mice with a low dose of the non-cytopathic lymphocytic choriomeningitis virus

(LCMV) results in clearance of the virus and little, if any, tissue damage due to an effective CTL response. On the other hand, if LCMV spreads rapidly before an active immune response is elicited, widespread tissue damage may occur as a result of the ensuing CTL response directed against infected cells (Odermatt *et al.,* 1991; Leist *et al.,* 1988; Zinkernagel *et al.,* 1994). Evidence suggests that destruction of macrophages and follicular dendritic cells may be caused by an antiviral CD8+ response (Odermatt *et al.,* 1991; Leist *et al.,* 1988). Similarities between LCMV infection and HIV infection have been suggested since both show tropism for different cell types, cause severe immunosuppression, and to some extent, establish persistent infections (Odermatt *et al.,* 1991; Leist *et al.,* 1988). Walker *et al.* proposed that a similar mechanism of destruction may operate during HIV infection (Walker *et al.,* 1986). However, a number of studies have proposed a protective role for CTL's in HIV-1 infection (Sharpless *et al.,* 1992; Mackewicz *et al.,* 1991; Wolinsky *et al.,* 1996). A recent study demonstrated that there was an inverse relationship between progression to disease with the humoral immune response or with the CTL response (Wolinsky *et al.,* 1996). They found an increased CTL activity in those individuals showing a slower rate of disease progression, suggesting CTL activity may protect the host.

Various autoimmune mechanisms may inadvertently kill uninfected cells as 'innocent bystanders'. Uninfected CD4+ T cells may bind free gp120 molecules to their surface CD4 receptor giving them the appearance of an infected cell and therefore become a target for lysis by antibody-dependent cellular cytotoxicity (ADCC) responses (Weinhold *et al.,* 1989; Lyerly *et al.,* 1987). HIV-specific CTL

may also mistakenly kill uninfected CD4+ cells that have captured and processed soluble gp120 produced by infected cells, presenting it on their surface (MHC class II restricted antigen presenting cells; Lanzavecchia *et al.,* 1988; Siliciano *et al.,* 1988). In this regard, CTL that can lyse uninfected CD4+ T cells have been reported in HIV infected individuals but not HIV infected chimpanzees, suggesting the lack of CTL response in chimpanzees may account for the lack of progression to AIDS (Zarling *et al.,* 1990). It has also been shown that natural killer cells can mediate ADCC against uninfected cells that have HIV antigens on their surface (Katz *et al.,* 1988).

More recently, superantigens have been implicated in HIV-mediated immunosuppression. Superantigens differ from typical antigens in their interactions with T cells. Typical antigens must bind in the groove of the MHC class II molecule interacting with both α and β subunits of the T cell receptor (TCR). Superantigens, on the other hand, are presented on the outside of the MHC class II molecule and only require to bind to the Vβ subunit of the TCR. As a result superantigens can stimulate a much higher proportion of T cells than conventional antigens, followed by depletion and anergy (Kappler *et al.,* 1980). However, it is likely that superantigens are not directly responsible for the deletion of CD4+ T cells since several studies have observed distinct Vβ perturbations in HIV infected individuals (Dalgleish *et al.,* 1992; Imberti *et al.,* 1991). It is therefore more likely that superantigens activate large numbers of T cells, resulting in enhanced HIV-1 infection, replication and subsequent cytopathicity. Indeed, in mice, it has been shown that murine retrovirally encoded superantigen can stimulate the proliferation

and expansion of Vβ-bearing subsets of T cells (Hugin *et al.,* 1991).

Inappropriate induction of apoptosis has been proposed as a mechanism to explain CD4+ T cell loss during HIV-1 infection. During normal thymic development, autoreactive T cells are eliminated by the induction of apoptosis, a physiological process that is a form of programmed cell death (Jenkinson *et al.,* 1989; McConkey *et al.,* 1989; Smith *et al.,* 1989; Duvall *et al.,* 1986). Apoptosis is characterized by an increase in cystolic calcium levels and the function of a Ca^{2+}-dependent endogenous endonuclease that produces fragmentation of nuclear DNA (Sasaki *et al.,* 1996; Wylie *et al.,* 1991). Apoptosis in HIV-mediated pathogenesis is supported by several studies. It has been shown to occur *in vitro* after HIV-1 infection of MT-2 lymphoblasts or activated PBMC (Laurent-crawford *et al.,* 1991; Terai *et al.,* 1991). Stimulation of CD4+ T cells with MHC class II dependent superantigens or pokeweed mitogen resulted in the cell death of CD4+ cells from asymptomatic individuals. However, activation-induced cells death did not occur in CD4+ T cells from seronegative donors (Groux *et al.,* 1992). Also, large amounts of histones and fragmented DNA have been detected in the nucleoplasm of infected cells by SDS PAGE, immunoblot assays and Coomassie blue staining (Laurent-crawford *et al.,* 1991). Similarly, autoantibodies to histones and DNA have been found to circulate in the serum of infected patients consistent with the release of nuclear antigens by apoptosis (Muller *et al.,* 1992). The mechanism by which induction of apoptosis occurs during HIV-1 infection remains unclear. A number of studies have suggested an initial interaction involving the cross-linking of CD4 and gp120 followed by T cell activation, inducing apoptosis (Ameisen *et al.,* 1991;

Corbeil *et al.,* 1995; Maldarelli *et al.,* 1995; Laurent-crawford *et al.,* 1993). These studies demonstrate a central role for *env*-CD4 interactions in initiating apoptosis however the subsequent mechanisms involved have not been elucidated. Various mechanisms have been proposed which include the direct action of HIV, HIV viral proteins, CD4 antibodies, gp120-antibody complexes, cytokines and superantigens.

A number *in vitro* studies have reported the regulation of HIV expression by cytokines. Various cytokines, such as tumor necrosis factor (TNF) -α, interleukin (IL) -6, granulocyte-macrophage colony stimulating factor (GM-CSF), interferon (INF) -γ, transforming growth factor (TGF)-β, IL-6 and IL-3, have been shown to induce HIV expression *in vitro* (Poli *et al.,* 1992; Hober *et al.,* 1993; Poli *et al.,* 1990a; Butera *et al.,* 1993; Poli *et al.,* 1990b; Matsuyama *et al.,* 1989). Several studies have suggested that HIV-1 itself can upregulate cytokine expression. For example, increased production of TNF-α and IL-6 have been detected in HIV-infected cells *in vitro* (Molina *et al.,* 1990). Similarly, increased expression of TNF-α and IL-6 are secreted from PBMC from AIDS patients (Brix *et al.,* 1990; Wright *et al.,* 1988). Therefore, abnormal expression of cytokines may act to upregulate HIV-1 expression and hence may contribute to the observed pathogenesis. Indeed, TNF-α preferentially induces lysis of HIV-infected cells suggesting that it may also function in the destruction of CD4+ T cells (Hober *et al.,* 1992).

1.5.2 NEUROPATHOGENESIS OF HIV-1 INFECTION.

Infection with HIV-1 is frequently complicated in the later stages by the AIDS dementia complex (ADC), a neurological syndrome characterized by abnormalities in cognition, motor performance and behaviour. Exactly how HIV-1 enters the brain is uncertain. Infected brain macrophages may originate from expansion of peripherally infected monocytes that carry HIV-1 into the brain ('Trojan horse' hypothesis), in a similar manner to that proposed for visna virus (Peluso *et al.,* 1985). Alternatively, virus may cross the blood-brain barrier as cell free virus or via trafficking by infected T cells (Michaels *et al.,* 1988). Recent studies have suggested that infection of brain microvascular endothelial cells (BMVECs) may be one of the primary routes whereby HIV-1 gains entry into the CNS (Nottet *et al.,* 1995; Bagasra *et al.,* 1996). Indeed, infection of BMVECs has been demonstrated in cell culture (Moses *et al.,* 1993), and *in vivo* for SIV (Mankowski *et al.,* 1994). Another possible route of infection may be the productive infection of the choroid plexus via the penetration of cell-free virions from the CSF. Bagasra *et al.*, recently reported productive infection (by detection of mRNA) of the choroid plexus of AIDS patients by dual *in situ* PCR (Bagasra *et al.,* 1996). Studies to date suggest HIV-1 is predominantly localized within blood-derived brain macrophages, microglia and multinucleated giant cells (MGC; Vazeux *et al.,* 1987; Koenig *et al.,* 1986; Wiley *et al.,* 1986; Bagasra *et al.,* 1996). There are few reports of HIV-1 infection of neurons, oligodendrocytes and astrocytes and it is thought these cells are rarely infected *in vivo*, if at all (Gyorkey *et al.,* 1987; Wiley *et al.,* 1986). As with infection of the CNS, the mechanisms underlying the pathogenesis of HIV-1 infection in the brain are far from clear.

Several studies have detected large amounts of proviral and unintegrated HIV-1 DNA in brain tissue (Shaw *et al.,* 1985; Vazeux *et al.,* 1992; Pang *et al.,* 1990). Pang *et al.*, demonstrated a correlation between HIV encephalitis and the presence of unintegrated DNA in brain tissue similar to that observed from infection with avian leukaemia viruses (ALV) and some strains of feline leukaemia viruses (FeLV; Weller *et al.,* 1981; Mullins *et al.,* 1986). However, infection in brain tissue is restricted to macrophage and microglia cells and destruction of these cells would not be expected to cause the neuropathology observed in brain tissue of HIV-1 infected individuals. Similarly, the number and distribution of these infected cells does not correlate with the degree of tissue pathology observed.

Several studies have suggested that HIV-1 may effect CNS function without direct infection of neuroectodermal cells themselves. One such mechanism concerns the toxic effects of gp120 on nerve cells *in vitro* related to increases in intracellular calcium. Dryer *et al.*, reported that HIV-1 *env* gp120 was toxic to primary rodent neurons and that cell death occurred subsequent to excessive calcium influx into the neurons (Dreyer *et al.,* 1990). This effect was abrogated by adding calcium channel blockers. Subsequent studies suggested that the intracellular increase in Ca^{2+} and consequential neuronal injury was mediated by the combined action of gp120 with glutamate via the N-methyl-D-aspartate (NMDA) receptor (Pittaluga *et al.,* 1996; Lipton, 1992). Noradrenaline has been implicated in learning and memory and activation of NMDA receptors is a primary event in cognitive processes in the hippocampus and cerebral cortex (Collingridge *et al.,* 1987; McGaugh, 1989). Hence, activation of NMDA receptors may facilitate persistent

and abnormal levels of noradrenaline leading to imbalances in the processes underlying learning and memory which may result in the cognitive defects characteristic of AIDS dementia. The HIV-1 *trans*-activating regulatory protein, tat, has also been shown to be neurotoxic to glioma, neuroblastoma and cultured human fetal brain cells *in vitro* and to rats and mice *in vivo* (Nath *et al.,* 1996; Sabatier *et al.,* 1991). The active site is thought to be located between amino acids 31 and 61, the action of which alters cell permeability resulting in increased levels of intracellular Ca^{2+} and neuronal damage.

Other investigators have suggested indirect effects related to toxic substances secreted from HIV-1 infected macrophages. Cellular factors released from HIV-1 infected monocytes were found to be neurotoxic to chick and rat neurons (Giulian *et al.,* 1990), and human brain aggregates cultured *in vitro* (Pulliam *et al.,* 1991). These studies suggest HIV-1 infected macrophages, and possibly microglia, may release toxins that disrupt neurological function. A more recent study failed to confirm these findings (Benton *et al.,* 1992), although further studies reported the requirement for cell-cell contact between HIV-infected monocytes and astroglia prior to the generation of neurotoxins (Gerus *et al.,* 1992; Tardieu *et al.,* 1992). The presence of activated macrophages and T cells in the CNS of HIV-1 infected individuals suggests that a number of cytokines may participate in neuropathogenesis (Tayor *et al.,* 1992). Production of IL-1 and TNF-α have been reported both in *in vivo* and *in vitro* studies. IL-1 has many activities including inducing T cell stimulation, activation of macrophages and endothelial cells, induction of fever and inflammation and stimulation of astrocytosis *in vivo*

which is frequently observed in HIV encephalitis (Dinarello *et al.,* 1987; Movat, 1987). TNF-α has also been reported to be produced by macrophages and microglia in culture (Rosenberg *et al.,* 1990; Movat, 1987), is toxic to oligodendrocytes in culture (Selmaj *et al.,* 1990), and has been shown to be increased in the CSF of HIV-infected individuals presenting with neurological disorders. Similarly, higher levels of TNF-α have been detected in symptomatic individuals compared with asymptomatic individuals (Wright *et al.,* 1988). Other cytokines such as IFN-γ and IL-6 have also been implicated in CNS damage. Hence, T cells, macrophages, microglia, endothelial cells and astrocytes appear to be involved in the response to and generation of cytokines. These cytokines may modulate the immune response and may also have toxic effects in the CNS.

1.5.3 HIV-1 PATHOGENICITY AND DISEASE PROGRESSION.

An important advance in our understanding of the pathogenesis of HIV-1 infection was the observation that HIV-1 actively replicates in lymphoid tissue throughout the course of disease. Studies on the viral burden and levels of virus replication in the peripheral blood and lymphoid organs have found infection of lymph nodes to be approximately 10 times that of the peripheral blood and that active replication occurred in lymphoid tissues during the asymptomatic phase. (Embretson *et al.,* 1993; Pantaleo *et al.,* 1993). Using *in situ* hybridization a number of investigations have shown restriction of viral particles to the germinal centres (Biberfeld *et al.*, 1986; Schuurman *et al.*, 1988; Pantaleo *et al.,* 1993),

confirming previous reports of extracellular association of HIV with follicular dendritic cells (Armstrong *et al.*, 1948; Baroni *et al.*, 1986). This association may be important in infection of lymphocytes as they migrate through the lymph nodes. It has also been suggested that as disease progresses the integrity of the lymph node breaks down reducing the trapping of virus in germinal centres, allowing proliferation into peripheral sites of the body.

Recent findings have shown a rapid turnover of virus and CD4+ lymphocytes in the peripheral circulation throughout infection with HIV-1 (Ho *et al.*, 1995; Wei *et al.*, 1995). Both groups were also able to show the rapid replacement of wild type virus by drug-resistant virus after 14 to 28 days of drug therapy indicating the enormous capacity of HIV-1 to evolve in response to selection pressure such as that exerted by the immune system. These new findings have a number of implications for the pathogenesis of HIV-1 infection. First, the observed rates of viral and CD4+ T cell turnover were much higher than expected, indicating a dynamic process involving continuous viral infection and replication and rapid cell turnover. Second, Wei *et al.* (1995), also estimated the half life of PBMC by measuring the time required for the resistant virus to spread into this population and obtained a half life of 50-100 days.. This substantially longer lifespan of latently infected cells suggests that virus production itself is paramount in the observed depletion of CD4+ T cells. Finally, the rapid replacement of wild type virus by mutants demonstrated the ability of the virus to evolve in response to selection pressure supporting the antigenic variation model for the subsequent progression to AIDS (see below).

Nowak and colleagues proposed the 'antigenic diversity threshold' theory to explain the breakdown of the immune system during HIV-1 infection (Nowak *et al.,* 1991a). The central theme of this theory is that antigenic diversity is the cause and not the consequence of the observed immune deficiency in HIV-1 infection. It was proposed that HIV is capable of infecting all CD4+ cells but that the immunological response directed against the virus involves a specific response to individual strains in conjunction with a cross-reactive response to all strains (Nowak *et al.,* 1991a). Hence, as new antigenic variants appear (escape mutants), they are able to evade elimination by the immune system. Eventually, antigenic diversity is thought to increase beyond a threshold value and exceeds the capacity of the immune response to regulate viral population growth. This model has since been adapted to include the CTL response against multiple epitopes (Nowak *et al.,* 1995). This new improved model suggests that an antigenically homogenous population will elicit a response against a single epitope (immunodominance), while a heterogenous population may stimulate a response against multiple epitopes which may result in a steady state number of CD4+ T cells and viral load. However, antigenic variation in the immunodominant epitope may direct immune responses to weaker epitopes reducing the immunological control of the viral population (Nowak *et al.,* 1995).

Wolinsky *et al.* (1996), have studied the evolution of HIV-1 in 6 infected patients with variable rates of disease progression and refute the 'antigenic diversity threshold' theory of Nowak and colleagues.. In this study two patients with high levels of plasma RNA and rapid CD4+ T cell loss maintained a

relatively homogenous population throughout the entire course of infection. In contrast, two further patients with moderate or relatively stable CD4+ T cell counts showed the highest levels of virus diversity. Therefore, no evidence was found to suggest an increase in antigenic diversity as the driving force behind the rate of CD4+ T cell loss. Interestingly, in this patient group the accumulation rate of nonsynonymous substitutions (d_N) was found to be higher in those patients with moderate or relatively stable CD4+ T cell counts compared with the two patients with rapid CD4+ T cell loss. The rate of synonymous substitutions (d_S) was similar in both groups. However, proviral sequences were obtained from PBMCs which does not distinguish between active infection and residual provirus in the memory cell population (Simmonds *et al.,* 1991). d_N/d_S ratios for those patients with moderate or stable CD4+ T cell counts were far higher (2.5 to 3.75) compared to the two patients with rapid CD4+ T cell loss (1.25 and 0.75) where a value greater than 1 is indicative of positive selection for change. Therefore, in the slower progressing patients positive selection for change was associated with prolonged rather than shortened survival. In this respect, Lukashov *et al.*, recently reported a correlation between the accumulation of nonsynonymous substitutions and the length of the immunocompetent period from the analysis of RNA obtained from the sera of a number of progressors and nonprogressors (Lukashov *et al.,* 1995). Wolinsky *et al.*, also found increased CTL activity in patients with a slower rate of disease progression and very poor CTL responses in rapid progressors suggesting a protective role for the CTL response (Wolinsky *et al.,* 1996), contrary to predictions that immunopathogenic effects of CTL are responsible for the depletion

of CD4+ T cells. A similar relationship has been reported by Harrer *et al.*, (Harrer *et al.,* 1994).

1.6 MOLECULAR EVOLUTION.

Molecular evolution encompasses the study of the rates and patterns of change occurring in genetic material (for example DNA sequences) and the product of such coding regions (proteins) through evolutionary time and the mechanisms responsible for these changes. This field of study also involves the reconstruction of the evolutionary history of genes and organisms, also known as molecular phylogeny, inferred from molecular data.

1.6.1 DISTANCE ESTIMATION.

Increasingly the data becoming available for the analysis of evolutionary relationships consists of nucleotide sequences. A basic process in the evolution of nucleotide sequences is the change in nucleotides with time. However, as the process of nucleotide substitution and fixation within a population is a comparatively slow process evolutionary changes within a DNA sequence can be detected through comparative methods such as distance estimation. This requires that a given sequence be compared with another sequence with shared common ancestry. The evolutionary distance between a pair of sequences is usually measured by the number of nucleotide or amino acid substitutions between them

(pairwise distance). There are many methods for measuring evolutionary distances, although I have only discussed two such methods that are relatively simple and frequently used (the first of which, Jukes-Cantor, was used in this study: Gojobori *et al*, 1990; Nei *et al*, 1987; Saccone *et al*, 1990).

This method of Jukes and Cantor was developed under the assumption that the rate of nucleotide substitution was the same for all pairs of the four nucleotides A, T, G and C (i.e. a random process), and gives the maximum likelihood estimate of the number of nucleotide substitutions between two sequences (Jukes *et al*, 1969). Jukes-Cantor is a one parameter distance method and does not take into account differences in the frequency of transitions (purine to purine and pyrimidine to pyrimidine substitutions) and transversions (purine to pyrimidine substitutions) when calculating evolutionary distances. However, in this study, the pairwise distances between sequences were relatively small and it is unlikely that saturation will have occurred at sites of transition to an extent that major underestimates of the rate of sequence change would have been made. This one parameter distance method can be used to calculate distances for synonymous (do not result in amino acid changes) and non-synonymous (change amino acids) substitutions as there is no transition/transversion bias in this analysis.

The assumption that all nucleotide substitutions occur randomly, as in the Jukes-Cantor model, is unrealistic in some cases as transitions generally occur more frequently than transversions. Kimura proposed a two parameter model in which the rate of transitional and transversional substitutions per site are taken into account (Kimura, 1980).

1.6.2 RATES OF NUCLEOTIDE SUBSTITUTION.

The rate of nucleotide substitution is defined as the number of substitutions per site per year and can be calculated by dividing the pairwise distance calculated for any two sequences with twice the time of divergence between the two sequences. The divergence time is assumed to be the same for the two sequences considered. The rate of nonsynonymous substitution may be extremely variable among genes as the majority of nonsynonymous substitutions are subject to purifying selection from external factors such as the host immune response. Consequently, nonsynonymous substitutions which improve protein function may be selected resulting in a greater rate of nonsynonymous to synonymous substitution. Reciprocally, nonsynonymous substitutions resulting in a deleterious effect on protein function will be eliminated by selection, reducing the rate of nonsynonymous substitution. However, synonymous substitutions do not cause changes in amino acids and will not be subject to purifying selection. These substitutions are thought to reflect the underlying mutational rate allowing the estimation of the rate of nucleotide substitution.

1.6.3 ESTIMATION OF DIVERGENCE TIMES.

Sequence data can be used to estimate times of divergence between species, individuals and indeed sequences within an individual. Assuming the rate of nucleotide substitution (evolution) is known from a previous study (see section 1.6.2) the time of divergence between two sequences can be estimated by dividing the synonymous pairwise distance by twice the rate of change. Again this calculation assumes rate constancy, an assumption which often does not always hold. Using synonymous pairwise distances reduces any errors incurred while estimating divergence times as these nucleotide sites are not subject to selection pressures to the extent that nonsynonymous substitutions are. Li *et al.* have proposed a method that can reduce the effects of unequal rates of substitution when estimating times of divergence (Li *et al*, 1987).

1.6.4 MOLECULAR PHYLOGENY.

In phylogenetic studies, the evolutionary relationship among a group of organisms (population tree) or genes (gene tree) can be illustrated by means of a phylogenetic tree. Phylogenetic trees can be either rooted or unrooted. A rooted tree indicates the direction of evolution, and the root is the common ancestor of all the OTUs (operational taxonomic units) studied. An unrooted tree specifies the relationship among the OTUs but does not define the evolutionary path. In practice

the majority of tree-making methods produce unrooted trees. However, in order to root an unrooted tree an outgroup can be added which is evolutionarily related to the OTUs under study, having diverged from the other OTUs prior to their divergence from one another.

There are a number of methods available for the construction of phylogenetic trees (Nei, 1987; Felsenstein, 1988), which can be classified as distance matrix methods and character based (maximum parsimony) methods. Distance matrix methods involve the calculation of evolutionary distances (pairwise distances) for all pairs of taxa (e.g. nucleotide sequences), and a phylogenetic tree is constructed by certain principles and alogarithms. In maximum pasimony methods discrete character states (e.g. nucleotides or amino acids at a site) are used, and a phylogenetic tree is constructed by considering the shortest pathway leading to these character states.

The simplest method for reconstruction of phylogenetic trees is the unweighted pair group method with arithmetic mean (UPGMA). This method employs a sequential clustering alogarithm. Initially the two OTUs that are most similar from among all the OTUs are identified and subsequently are treated as a new single OTU. This new OTU is referred to as a composite OTU. Subsequently, the next pair with the highest similarity are identified, and so on, until only two OTUs are left. This method assumes a constant rate of evolution and hence a rooted tree is produced.

Computer simulations have shown that one of the most efficient distance methods for producing phylogenetic trees with the correct topology (branching

pattern of a tree) is the neighbor-joining method (Nei *et al*, 1991) proposed by Saitou and Nei (1987). This method is a simplified version of the minimum evolution method in which distance measures that correct for multiple hits at the same sites are used. In this method the smallest value of the sum of all branches is chosen as the correct tree. In the neighbor-joining method the smallest value of the sum of all branches is not calculated for all the topologies. Instead, the examination of different topologies is embedded in the alogarithm, so that only one final tree is produced. This method produces an unrooted tree, and usually requires an outgroup to find the root.

The principle of maximum parsimony or minimum evolution involves the identification of a tree that requires the smallest number of evolutionary changes to explain the differences observed among the OTUs being studied. However, quite often more than one tree with the same minimum number of changes can be found, so that no unique tree may be inferred in some instances. These topologies are called equally parsimonious trees. When constructing a maximum parsimony tree informative sites must first be identified. These are sites at which at least two different kinds of nucleotides, each represented twice, are used. Other variable sites are not used for constructing maximum parsimony trees, although they are informative for distance methods. Following this the minimum number of substitutions at each informative site is calculated for each possible tree. Finally, the sum of the number of changes over all the informative sites is calculated for each tree and the tree associated with the smallest number of substitutions is chosen. The maximum parsimony method produces unrooted trees, primarily

determining the topology of a tree.

1.6.5 STATISTICAL SIGNIFICANCE OF TREE TOPOLOGIES.

There are two different types of methods available for testing the reliability of a tree obtained. These are the maximum likelihood method (Felsenstein, 1981) and the bootstrap test (Felsenstein, 1985). The maximum likelihood method examines the reliability of every interior branch of the tree. This method can be very time consuming and is generally limited to small data sets. The bootstrap test involves randomly resampling the data from which the tree was constructed, producing a new tree with the resampled data. This process is repeated several hundred times and the frequency at which particular branches are observed in the newly constructed trees is calculated giving a probability to each branch in the original tree. This statistical method is suitable for use in neighbor-joining and maximum parsimony methods.

AIMS.

The aims of this study were to characterize genetically HIV-1 variants obtained from various lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues, investigate whether separate populations existed and determine whether such differences reflected variation in biological properties, such as their inferred *in vitro* tropism and cytopathology. I also planned to investigate the diversity of variants (LPA) in pre-symptomatic and symptomatic patients to identify whether more or less divergent populations emerge during disease progression. Finally, I have investigated whether, through evolutionary analysis of the $p17_{gag}$ region, the time of spread of HIV-1 from lymphoid to non-lymphoid tissues can be estimated to determine if this occurs as an early or late event in disease progression.

CHAPTER TWO: MATERIALS AND METHODS.

2.1 CLINICAL DETAILS OF STUDY PATIENTS.

Tissues from various organs were obtained at autopsy, carried out within three days of death, from 43 HIV-infected individuals. Eight individuals died from other reasons and were classified as pre-symptomatic on the basis of an absence of HIV-related symptoms before death and an absence of HIV-related changes in pathological examination. In contrast, 35 individuals died from complications associated with HIV-infection, such as opportunistic infections and neoplasia (symptomatic group). Details of the clinical symptoms each patient presented with are summarised in Table 5. Samples of brain (left frontal lobe), lymph node (mesenteric) from each individual were dissected into 1 to 2 cm pieces and stored at -70°C. Samples of lung, colon and spleen were also analysed from patient 4. CD4 lymphocyte counts were obtained on three occasions in the year before death from each individual (Table 5).

TABLE 5.

[a]Abbreviations: IVDU: injecting drug abuser; HO: male homosexual; HE: heterosexual contact; B: infection through blood transfusion

[b]CD4 lymphocyte (cell/μl) count over one year prior to death (mean of 2-3 values). N/D=not done.

[c]Diagnosis of giant cell encephalitis, based upon pathology, p24 antigen detection and quantitative PCR (Bell, 1996).

[d]Abbreviations: 1=*Pneumocystis carinii* pneumonia; 2=oral thrush; 3=oesophageal thrush; 4=oral candidiasis; 5=oesophageal candidiasis; 6=dementia; 7=shingles; 8=neurological degeneration; 9=atypical mycobacterial infection; 10=herpes zoster; 11=oral ulceration; 12=lymphoma; 13=cerebral atrophy; 14=widespread cytomegalovirus infection; 15=lymphadenopathy; 16= splenomegaly; 17=cutaneous Kaposi's sarcoma; 18=systemic Kaposi's sarcoma; 19=dysphasia; 20=cerebral toxoplasmosis; 21=autonomic neuropathy; 22=persistent diarrhoea; 23=weight loss; 24=muscle wasting; 25=HIV retinopathy; 26=HIV myelitis; 27=focal cytomegalovirus infection in brain.

[e]This patient is the heterosexual contact of a known IVDU.

[f]These patients are included in the study described in chapter 3.

[g]This patient is not included in the study described in chapter 4.

Subject	Age	Risk[a]	CD4 count[b]	GCE[c]	Symptoms[d]
76	41	IVDU	802	-	
3	31	IVDU	370	-	
34	32	IVDU	240	-	
35	31	IVDU	180	-	
39	28	IVDU	170	-	20
68	28	HE	155	-	
72	23	HE	140	-	1,2
2	46	IVDU	140	-	
1	27	HE	115	-	
28	28	HO	105	+	1,21
5[f]	34	IVDU	95	+	2,6
69	28	IVDU	90	+	4,13,23,25,26
25	38	IVDU	85	-	12,19
40	33	IVDU	50	+	
48	42	IVDU	40	-	15
19	35	IVDU	33	-	
42	25	IVDU	28	+	6,11
79[f,g]	28	IVDU	26	+	11,12,13,14
24	36	HO	19	-	1,9,13,16,17
44	32	HO	19	-	12,13
36	50	HO	15	-	1,14,21
54	25	IVDU	13	+	27
17	24	IVDU	12	-	1
32	30	IVDU	11	+	15,24
18	44	HO	10	-	1,2,3,9,17
51	35	HO	10	+	12,15
4[f]	34	IVDU	8	+	1
26	34	IVDU	8	+	1,5,13
10	33	IVDU	6	-	13,15,16
21	30	B	6	+	12,13,20
15	34	IVDU	5	+	1,4,5,9
27	31	HO	5	-	13,14
45	45	HO	5	-	1,9,20
16	30	HO	4	-	2,12,14,17,18
77	34	HO	3	-	1,13,14
63	46	IVDU	2	+	13,14
37	30	HO	2	-	9,22
62	36	IVDU	2	-	1,4,9,23
64	36	HO	2	-	4,9,10,23
30	26	IVDU	0	+	1,10
78	33	IVDU	0	-	1,14
6[e,f]	28	HE	N/D	+	7,12
38	43	HO	N/D	-	9,14,24

2.2 BUFFERS AND REAGENTS.

2.2.1 EXTRACTION OF DNA FROM TISSUE SAMPLES.

Lysis buffer: 50nM Tris hydrochloride (pH 8.0)

100mM NaCl

50mM EDTA

1% sodium-*n*-lauroylsarcosine

100μg of proteinase K per ml

Phenol (Rathburn chemicals Ltd)

Chloroform (AnalaR)

100% Ethanol (AnalaR)

Distilled water

Centrifuge (Hereus Biofuge 15R)

2.2.2 AMPLIFICATION OF PROVIRAL DNA.

10 X PCR buffer: 200mM Tris-HCL (pH 8.8)

500mM KCL

15mM $MgCl_2$

0.5% Triton X-100

Nucleoside triphosphate mixture (100mM stock; dilute to 3mM; Boehringer Mannheim)

Taq polymerase (Promega: 1μl is equal to 5 units)

Water cooled thermal cycler (Techne PHC-1A and GeneE)

2% agarose gel: 6 g agarose (Sigma)

300 ml 10 x TBE

20 μl Ethidium Bromide

10 x TBE (1 litre): 108 g Tris base (AnalaR)

55 g Boric acid (Molecular Biology Certified; Kodak)

40 ml 0.5M EDTA (Molecular Biology Certified; Kodak)

Make up to 1L with dH_2O

1 x TBE buffer used as electrophoresis buffer in gel tank.

2.2.3 SOLID PHASE PURIFICATION OF PCR PRODUCTS.

BSA: 0.1% bovine serum albumin in PBS (pH 7.2).

PBS (pH 7.5): 137 mM NaCl

2.7 mM KCL

4.3 mM $Na_2HPO_4.7H_2O$

1.4 mM KH_2PO_4

Binding and washing buffer (BW): 10 mM Tris-HCL (pH 7.5)

1 mM EDTA

2.0 M NaCl (final concentration 1.0 M)

TE buffer: 10 mM Tris-HCL (pH 7.5)

1 mM EDTA

0.15 M NaOH

Dynabeads M-280 streptavidin (Dynal).

Dynal magnetic particle concentrator 6 (MPC 6; Dynal).

2.2.4 SEQUENCE ANALYSIS.

5 x Sequenase reaction buffer: 200 mM Tris-HCL (pH 7.5)

100 mM $MgCl_2$

250 mM NaCl

5 x labelling mix: 7.5 μM dGTP

7.5 μM dTTP

7.5 μM dCTP

[α^{35}S] dATP or [α-^{32}P] dATP (Amersham).

Termination solutions: 80 μM of all four dNTPs supplemented with 8 μM ddATP,

ddTTP, ddGTP or ddCTP.

Stop solution: 95% formamide

20 mM EDTA

0.05% xylene cyanol

0.05% bromophenol blue

5% Denaturing PAGE gel: 21 g Urea (AnalaR)

5 ml Long Ranger gel solution (50%; Flowgen)

5ml 10 X TBE (Sanger)

0.05 g Ammonium persulfate (APS; Sigma)

Make up to 50 ml with dH_2O

Add 25 μl TEMED prior to pouring gel mix.

10 x TBE (Sanger; 2 litre): 324 g Tris base

85 g Boric acid

19 g EDTA

Make up to 2L with dH_2O.

2.3 EXTRACTION OF DNA FROM TISSUE SAMPLES.

Extraction of DNA from tissues was carried out by re-suspending 1-2 cm pieces of tissue in 500 μl of lysis buffer and incubated at 65^0C for two hours. Following this 450 μl of phenol was added to the extraction tubes and mixed thoroughly. Extraction tubes were then centrifuged at 13000 rpm for 10 mins. This process was repeated until the interface was clear. The aqueous layer was then transferred to a fresh 1.5 ml eppendorf containing 450 μl of chloroform. This mixture was then mixed thoroughly and centrifuged at 13000 rpm for 10 mins. The aqueous layer was again transferred to a fresh 1.5 ml eppendorf containing 900 μl of 100% ethanol, mixed and left overnight at -20°C to allow precipitation of the nucleic acid. The nucleic acid extract was collected by centrifugation at 13000 rpm at 0°C for 20 min. The supernatant was then discarded and the precipitate dried at 65°C for 10 min. Following this the nucleic acid pellet was re-suspended in 100-200 μl of distilled water. To ensure adequate solubilization of the pellet the sample was incubated at 50°C for 15-30 min. During each extraction process 1-2 cm pieces of known positive and negative tissue samples were included providing a comprehensive check for contamination.

2.4 QUANTITATION OF TOTAL EXTRACTED DNA.

The concentration of DNA in each sample was accurately quantified using spectrophotometric UV absorbance readings at wavelengths of 260 and 280 nm.

Samples were diluted 1 in 20 in pyrogen free water and the absorbance measured in a spectrophotometer. The ratio of the optical density (OD) at 260 nm to that at 280 nm gave an indication of purity of each preparation. Pure DNA preparations have an A_{260}/A_{280} ratio of approximately 1.8. The concentration of DNA was calculated from the following equation: A_{260} x D x 50 = DNA concentration (μg/ml), where A_{260} = absorbance at 260nm, D is the dilution factor (=20) and 50 is equivalent to the concentration (μg/ml) of ds DNA at A_{260} of 1.0.

2.5 AMPLIFICATION OF PROVIRAL DNA.

Proviral DNA was amplified using the polymerase chain reaction (PCR). Nested PCR was employed, further amplifying the first PCR product with a second set of specific primers that lie within those employed in the first PCR. This increases the overall sensitivity and specificity of the PCR, increasing the amplification by 10 000 fold compared to that attained by using only one set of primers. The first and second PCR were subjected to a thermal cycle of 36 seconds at 94°C to allow denaturation of ds DNA, 42 seconds at 46°C (V1/V2) and 50°C (gag), to allow primer annealing to the ss DNA and 90 seconds at 72°C to allow strand extension. Each template strand was subjected to 25 cycles of amplification. At the end of the last cycle samples were heated to 72°C for 5 min to allow termination of uncompleted stands. The first PCR was carried out in a 50 μl volume, for each sample, containing 5 μl of DNA, 5 μl of 10 x PCR buffer , 0.5 μl of nucleoside triphosphate mixture (3 mM each of dGTP, dATP, dTTP and dCTP),

0.25 μl of sense primer (approximately 20 μM), 0.25 μl of antisense primer (approximately 20 μM), 38 μl of pyrogen free water and 1 unit of *Taq* polymerase. The second, nested, PCR was carried out in a 20 μl volume, for each sample, containing 1 μl of primary PCR product, 2 μl of 10 x PCR buffer, 0.2 μl of dNTP's, 0.l μl of sense primer (approximately x 8 μM), 0.1 μl of antisense primer (approximately x 8 μM), 16.5 μl of pyrogen free water and 0.4 units of *Taq* polymerase. Prior to transfer to the thermal cycler each sample was covered with a drop of mineral oil to prevent loss of sample due to evaporation. Amplification of DNA was carried out using primers flanking hypervariable regions 1 and 2 from *env* and p17 from *gag*. The nucleotide sequences of the primers were as follows:

V1/V2:

a: GAG GAT ATA ATC AGT TTA TGG; + (sense), 6539

b: GA TCA AAG CCT AAA GCC ATG; +, 6560

c: TTG AAA GAG CAG TTT TTT ATC TCT CC; - (antisense), 6677

d: TG(A)A AAA ACT GCT CTT TCA A; +, 6684

e: CAA TAA TGT ATG GGA ATT GG; -, 6857

f: AAT GTA CTG TGC TGA CAT T; -, 6944

GAG:

a: GCG AGA GCG TCA GTA TTA AGC GG; +, 795

b: GGG AAA AAA TTC GGT TAA GGC C; +, 835

c: CTT CTA CTA TTT TTA CCC ATG C; -, 1248

d: TCT GAT AAT GCT GAA AAC ATG GG; -, 1296

All positions numbered according to the HXB2 genome: (Myers *et al.*, 1991)

During each PCR amplification 1 μg of known positive and negative DNA samples were included providing a comprehensive check for contamination. An additional negative control was included whereby no DNA was added to the reaction mix ensuring contamination of the PCR buffer had not occurred.

2.6 LIMITING DILUTION ASSAY.

In order to obtain single molecules of HIV proviral DNA to allow analysis of heterogenous viral sequences a limiting dilution assay was carried out. To isolate single proviral sequences multiple replicates of DNA were amplified at a dilution resulting in the detection of only a small proportion of positive PCR products. Using the poisson formula, which assumes a random distribution of DNA molecules, the probability of positive PCR products having originated from a single proviral sequence can be calculated. If 20% of the PCR replicates are positive then approximately 95% of reactions can be said to have originated from a single proviral sequence. Initially triplicates of 4 ten-fold dilutions were set up (0.1 μg-0.0001 μg) and amplified using nested PCR, as previously described. A further 20 replicates were set up at the dilution resulting in the least number of positive reactions and amplified using nested PCR. If 20% of these replicates proved to be positive they were considered to have originated from a single proviral sequence and were retained for sequence analysis.

2.7 VISUALIZATION OF AMPLIFIED PCR PRODUCTS.

Amplified PCR products were visualized on 2% agarose gels containing ethidium bromide. Ethidium bromide is an intercalating agent which exhibits a fluorescence under UV light, allowing any positive PCR products to be detected as fluorescent bands. The gel was run for 10 mins at 150 V and analyzed under UV light.

2.8 SOLID PHASE PURIFICATION OF PCR PRODUCTS.

For direct sequencing of PCR products a higher purity than that provided by previous ethanol precipitation is required. The sequencing reaction (Sanger method) is highly sensitive to various components present in the PCR product, such as dNTP's, primers and buffer solutions. Single strand purification was therefore carried out using a solid phase method (Dynal) allowing highly specific isolation and purification of target PCR products. This purification method involves a highly specific interaction between streptavidin (covalently attached to the bead surface) and biotin (incorporated into the primer oligonucleotide). Therefore, prior to purification, a secondary PCR reaction was performed using one biotinylated primer and one unlabelled primer generating a PCR product with one strand having a biotin moiety at either the 5' or 3' end. This reaction is carried out in a 100 μl volume, for each sample, containing 1 μl of PCR product, 10 μl of reaction buffer, 1 μl of dNTPs (approximately 33 mM), 0.25 μl of normal primer (approximately

20 mM), 0.25 μl of biotinylated primer (approximately 20mM), 87.1 μl of pyrogen free water and 0.4 μl of *Taq* (2 units per reaction). For each sample to be sequenced 20 μl of re-suspended Dynabeads were transferred to a 1.5 ml eppendorf and washed with 40 μl of 0.1% bovine serum albumin. This was then placed in a magnet (Dynal MPC-6) and the supernatant removed. The beads were then re-suspended in 40 μl of BW , mixed with 40 μl of the amplified PCR product and incubated at room temperature for 20 mins, re-suspending the beads occasionally, allowing the immobilization of the PCR product to the Dynabeads. The beads were then washed in 40 μl of BW and re-suspended in 8 μl of 0.15 M NaOH and incubated at room temperature for 10 mins, denaturing the ds DNA bound to the beads leaving only ss DNA bound. The supernatant, containing the unbound complementary sense DNA, was then removed and the beads were washed once with 50 μl of NaOH, once with 50 μl of BW and once with 50 μl of TE, ensuring the complete separation of the DNA strands. Finally, the beads were re-suspended in 20 μl of TE and stored at 4°C. During washes beads must only be pipetted up and down gently and should not be centrifuged or vortexed.

2.9 DIRECT SEQUENCING OF AMPLIFIED PCR PRODUCTS.

Single molecules of HIV provirus were isolated by limiting dilution and amplified in a nested PCR to produce sufficient DNA to allow direct sequencing of the PCR products. Direct sequencing of amplified DNA was achieved by using a solid phase sequencing method described above. In this study Sequenase Version

2.0 DNA sequencing kits were used (United States Biochemical) with Sequenase™ Version 2.0 T7 DNA polymerase. This enzyme is a genetic variant of bacteriophage T7 DNA polymerase created by *in vitro* genetic manipulation, completely lacking a 3' to 5' exonuclease activity and including properties such as high processitivity, high speed and the ability to use nucleotide analogues for sequencing making it the ideal enzyme to use for chain termination sequencing. For each template strand of ssDNA a single annealing reaction was used to allow the primer strand to bind to the ssDNA. The primer is needed because template dependent DNA polymerases are unable to initiate DNA synthesis on an entirely single stranded molecule. A short double stranded region is required to provide a 3' end onto which the polymerase can add new nucleotides, annealing of the primer provides this 3' end without which strand synthesis would not take place. For each template, 2 μl of the appropriate primer, 2 μl of 5 x Sequenase reaction buffer, 1 μl dimethylsulphoxide (DMSO) and 5 μl of DNA (bound to magnetic beads) were mixed together. This mixture was then warmed at 65°C for approximately 5 mins and allowed to cool slowly to room temperature over a period of approximately 30 mins. To each annealed template-primer the following labelling (extension) mix was added: 1 μl dithiothreitol (DTT, 0.1 M), 2 μl of diluted labelling nucleotide mix (1:20), 0.5 μl of [α-^{35}S] or [α-^{32}P] dATP (5 μCi) and 2 μl diluted Sequenase polymerase (1:8, approximately 3.25 units). The annealing reaction and labelling mix were mixed thoroughly and incubated at room temperature for approximately 5 mins, during which time the termination reaction was prepared. For each template four tubes were labelled 'G', 'A', 'T', and 'C'. Each tube was filled with 2.5 μl of

the appropriate dideoxy termination mixture and pre-warmed at 37°C (the optimal temperature for Sequenase polymerase enzyme). When the labelling reaction was complete, 3.5 μl were transferred to each of the four termination tubes (G, A, T and C) and incubated at 37°C for approximately 5 mins and then 4 μl of stop solution was added to each termination reaction stopping the termination reaction. Following this sequencing reaction the product was heated to 95°C to destroy the interaction between the streptavidin and biotin and release the DNA templates together with the dideoxy fragments. This product was then electrophoresed on a 5% denaturing polyacrylamide gel (PAGE). Gels were run for 2 hours allowing approximately 250 to 300 bases to be read. Gels were dried and exposed overnight on BioMAX film.

2.10 LENGTH PROFILING ANALYSIS OF AMPLIFIED PCR PRODUCTS.

To obtain length profiles across the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions proviral DNA was amplified using nested PCR, as previously described. However, the second PCR was modified as detailed below. The concentration of the dNTP's were reduced from 33 μM to 8 μM with the addition of 2 μCi[α^{35}-S] dATP/reaction. In addition 0.1 μl instead of 1 μl of primary PCR product was transferred reducing extra bands resulting from the carry over of excess primary PCR product and primers. Subsequently, 1μl of the secondary PCR product was mixed with 5 μl of stop solution and heated to 90°C to denature DNA. 5-6 μl were then electrophoresed on a 5% denaturing polyacrylamide gel. Gels were run for

approximately 30 mins. Gels were then dried and exposed overnight on BioMAX film.

At the start of this study [α^{35}-S]dATP was used. However, it has recently been shown that this radionucleotide releases H_2S when heated during thermal cycling which can permeate polypropylene tubes and cause radioactive contamination. In more recent experiments this radionucleotide has been substituted with [α^{32}-P]dATP in all experiments, using 0.5 μCi per reaction.

2.11 NUCLEOTIDE SEQUENCE ACCESSION NUMBERS.

The sequences obtained in this study have been submitted to GenBank and assigned accession numbers U79785 to U79869 (*gag*; P4, 5 and 6) and U79870 to U80057 (V1/V2; P4, 5 and 6). Nucleotide sequences for P79 in the p17 $_{gag}$ region are listed in appendix IV.

CHAPTER 3: INVESTIGATION OF THE DYNAMICS OF THE SPREAD OF HUMAN IMMUNODEFICIENCY VIRUS TO BRAIN AND OTHER TISSUES BY EVOLUTIONARY ANALYSIS OF SEQUENCES FROM THE $p17_{gag}$ AND *env* GENES.

3.1 INTRODUCTION.

Infection with HIV is associated with a slow, progressive and irreversible impairment of the immune system eventually leading to AIDS. Inherent in the nature of infection with HIV-1 is the prolonged asymptomatic period that proceeds the development of disease (Fauci, 1993b; Miedema *et al.,* 1990b; Bednarik *et al.,* 1992b; Pantaleo *et al.,* 1993b), where infection may be subclinical for as long as 10-15 years. This phenomenon was originally hypothesised to result from viral latency, whereby viral or proviral DNA became integrated into the host genome with the simultaneous cessation of viral expression and independent replication (Bednarik *et al.,* 1992). The ensuing progression to AIDS would then result from subsequent re-activation of virus replication by various factors acting upon the infected cell such as antigens, mitogens and transcriptional factors produced by other viruses. However, it has been recently shown that from the time of seroconversion there is active replication of the virus in lymphoid tissues (Fauci, 1993b; Miedema *et al.,* 1990b; Pantaleo *et al.,* 1993b). There are few convincing demonstrations of active infection of non-lymphoid tissues until later in infection, and this change in distribution may be associated with increased immunosuppression in AIDS (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994b). Alternatively, it is possible that variants detected in non-lymphoid tissue such as brain in AIDS patients may have been continuously present from initial infection, but that infection only becomes clinically significant during severe immunosuppression. In this model, HIV encephalitis could be regarded as re-activation rather than *de novo* infection.

This study was undertaken to estimate the time of spread of HIV-1 to non-lymphoid tissues to determine whether re-activation or actual virus spread was responsible for the pathology observed in non-lymphoid tissues in AIDS. The individuals observed in this study were from a cohort of infected IDU identified in Edinburgh. These individuals were chosen for this study because infection of this cohort occurred at approximately the same time (Robertson *et al.,* 1986a), and clinical follow up studies have been possible due to the isolation of this group of individuals and their social stability (Goodwin *et al.,* 1996; Davies *et al.,* 1995; Brettle *et al.,* 1996). Serologic analysis of stored serum samples indicated that HIV-1 was introduced into Edinburgh and spread rapidly in late 1982 and early 1983 (Peutherer *et al.,* 1985). This rapid spread of the virus in Edinburgh may be explained by high risk behavioural habits of IDU in Edinburgh. At the time of this rapid spread there was a high frequency of needle sharing and use of contaminated needles (Robertson *et al.,* 1986b; Robertson *et al.,* 1986b), the likely result of difficulties in obtaining sterile needles and syringes. A recent study by Holmes *et al.*, analysed the phylogenetic relationships between HIV-1 infected individuals in different risk groups in Edinburgh (Holmes *et al.,* 1995). Phylogenetic analysis using the p17 region from the *gag* gene revealed three distinct groups within this population, two of which comprised sequences from haemophiliac patients and a third distinct group containing sequences from IDU and those infected from them through heterosexual contact. This finding was somewhat surprising, suggesting that the epidemic in this group may have arisen from a single HIV variant that first infected the IDU population in 1982/83. Therefore, this IDU cohort provides a

unique opportunity to examine the divergence of viral variants over time within a population infected from a common source.

In this study sequences were obtained from the $p17_{gag}$ region and V1/V2 flanking regions of HIV-1 from four individuals from the Edinburgh IDU cohort. The $p17_{gag}$ region was chosen because most nucleotide differences in this region are synonymous and therefore are not subject to positive selection pressures, unlike many other regions in the HIV-1 genome. Nonsynonymous substitutions alter the amino acid composition and may arise through a process of natural selection. For example, the appearance of escape mutants through selection pressures exerted by the host immune system. However, synonymous substitutions do not cause amino acid changes of proteins and are therefore less subject to selection. Hence, synonymous substitutions are more likely to be caused by a random fixation of mutations (neutral theory) and are therefore more likely to reflect the underlying mutational rate allowing reliable estimates of divergence times to be calculated.

It has previously been suggested that the extent of HIV-1 replication throughout infection is not constant. Extensive replication was previously thought to occur during the acute phase of infection and again later on in infection prior to the progression to AIDS. These observations have led to the suggestion that the rate of sequence change may be greatly increased early and late in infection and greatly reduced during the asymptomatic phase. However, more recent studies have shown continuous productive viral replication, regardless of clinical stage, with 10^8 to 10^9 virions produced daily (Connor *et al.*, 1994; Ho *et al.*, 1995; Wei *et al.*, 1995). Secondly, more extensive replication does not necessarily imply that the rate

of sequence change will occur more rapidly, being principally dependent on the replicative cycle of the virus, rather than immune control of the host. If rates of sequence change are measured at genuinely neutral sites, then the observed rate should simply be proportional to the number of replicative cycles.

The rate of sequence change of the $p17_{gag}$ region has previously been determined from haemophiliacs, in the first two years of HIV-1 infection, who were infected from a common batch of clotting factor concentrate (Kasper *et al.,* 1995). Greater rates of synonymous (6.0 to 7.2 x 10^{-3}) to nonsynonymous substitution (3.6 to 4.8 x 10^{-3}) were observed, suggesting that this region is not subject to positive selection pressures. In this study, of individuals infected for 10 years or more, similar rates of synonymous and nonsynonymous substitutions were observed, suggesting that the rate of sequence change for the p17 region of *gag* is constant from early on in infection (2 years) until AIDS (10 years). This region is therefore of use in reconstructing epidemiological relationships between HIV-1 infected individuals (Holmes *et al.,* 1993) and can be used as a type of molecular clock allowing estimates of the divergence time between any two sequences to be carried out. This molecular clock can be extended to the comparison of variants within different cell types within a single infected individual.

Tissues from various lymphoid and non-lymphoid organs were obtained at autopsy from a number of HIV-1 positive patients known to have a high viral load in the brain and evidence of giant cell encephalitis (GCE) by pathology. Phylogenetic analysis of both $p17_{gag}$ and V1/V2 flanking regions was carried out in order to explore the relationship between the various lineages present and the

spread of infection to non-lymphoid tissues. It was possible to estimate the time of divergence between lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues allowing an estimation of the length of time, prior to death, that non-lymphoid tissue has been infected.

3.2 CLINICAL DETAILS OF PATIENT SAMPLES.

Tissue from various organs were obtained at autopsy, carried out within three days of death, from four individuals who died with an AIDS-defining illness. All individuals showed evidence of HIV infection of the brain upon post-mortem examination, as determined by the histological appearance of giant cells, the detection of p24 by immunocytochemistry, and the finding of high proviral loads in brain by quantitative PCR (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994b). Pathological examination of the fixed brains revealed evidence of atrophy on external examination and this was confirmed on section by the presence of ventricular dilatation and opening up of the sulci in all four patients. In p6 a focal 1cm diameter lesion was identified on macroscopic inspection in the right basal ganglia. Histological examination of this lesion showed that it was a primary CNS lymphoma. In p79 focal 2cm diameter lesions were identified upon macroscopic inspection in the left thalamus, internal capsule and left occipital lobe both in cortical ribbon and paraventricular regions. Microscopic examination showed that these lesions were composed of periventricular foci of lymphoma, much of which was necrotising. Neither of the other two patients showed macroscopic focal lesions of the brain. Histological examination in all four patients displayed evidence of quite florid HIV encephalitis

and leukoencephalopathy, characterised by giant cells and focal collections of macrophages and microglia cells, associated with myelin damage. There was no evidence of perivascular or leptomeningeal inflammatory infiltrates and in particular, lymphocytes were not identified within the CNS parenchyma. Additional clinical information for the five years prior to death for each patient is summarised in Fig 6.

3.3 PHYLOGENETIC ANALYSIS.

Sequence comparisons between viruses from the four study patients were made in the $p17_{gag}$ gene and in three of the study patients (p4, 5 and 6), in the hypervariable flanking regions of V1 and V2 of the *env* gene of HIV-1. The $p17_{gag}$ region amplified began at nucleotide 795 of HXB2 and extended to position 1319. The V1/V2 region amplified began at position 6539 of HXB2 and extended to position 6976. The length of the *gag* region used for sequence comparisons was 413 nucleotides and that of the V1/V2 region was 297 nucleotides. All nucleotide sequences were aligned manually. An unrooted phylogenetic tree for 85 $p17_{gag}$ (p4, 5 and 6) nucleotide sequences obtained from lymph node, brain and lung samples was constructed using the neighbour-joining method using the program NEIGHBOR in the PHYLIP package (version 3.5; Felsenstein, 1989). Distances between each pair of sequences were estimated using the program DNADIST in the PHYLIP package (version 3.5; Felsenstein, 1989). Rooted trees were constructed for each patient using the MEGA package with the sequence of HIV_{MN}

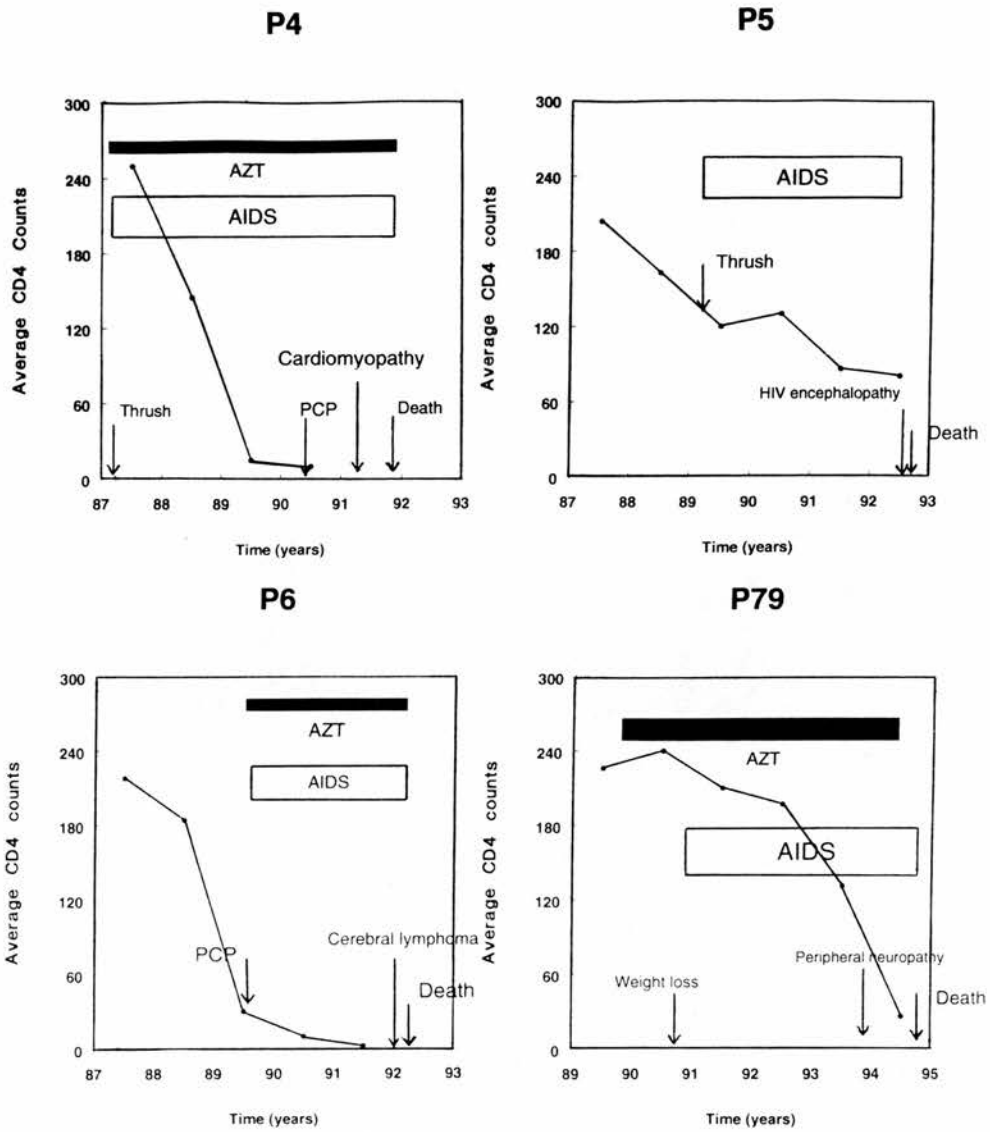


Fig. 6. Clinical and laboratory markers of disease progression in the three study patients in the 5 years before death. CD4 counts are shown as the mean counts over each year. Abbreviations: AZT: Zidovudine; PCP: *Pneumocystis carinii* pneumonia.

as an outgroup (Kumar *et al.,* 1993). Phylogenetic analysis of the *env* region was confined to regions flanking the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions, because of the indeterminate and often arbitrary alignment of the hypervariable sequences and the possibility of positive selection. The number of synonymous substitutions at synonymous sites (d_S) and nonsynonymous substitutions at nonsynonymous sites (d_N) between sequences were estimated using the method of Nei and Gojobori (Nei *et al.,* 1986). Finally, the bootstrap resampling method was used (500 replicates) to assess the confidence of each node in all trees constructed using the MEGA package.

3.4 STATISTICAL ANALYSIS.

The distribution of distances between and within patients were subjected to nonparametric statistical treatment using the Wilcoxon signed rank test included in the SYSTAT version 5.0 package.

3.5 RESULTS.

3.5.1 RATE OF SEQUENCE CHANGE IN $p17_{gag}$ REGIONS.

An unrooted neighbour-joining tree was constructed using 85 sequences from the $p17_{gag}$ region (positions 835-1270 in the HXB2 clone; Myers *et al.,* 1991) from a range of lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues of three HIV-infected

individuals dying in AIDS (p4, 5 and 6). Sequences from each of the three study patients were distinct, grouping separately into three clades. Bootstrap resampling supported the distinction of three separate groups (Fig 7).

All three study subjects were infected with HIV through drug abuse in 1982/83. Previous phylogenetic studies have implicated a common source of infection for the majority of drug users in Edinburgh, including the three described here (Holmes *et al.,* 1995). The current sequence differences between the study subjects therefore must have originated from a process of divergent sequence change over a period of between 9 and 10 years. Using a mean figure of 9.5 years (or 19 years of divergent sequence change), the mean synonymous pairwise distances in the $p17_{gag}$ region between individuals (0.149) indicated a rate of sequence change of 0.0077 substitutions per site per year. The rate of sequence change between pairs of individuals was similar, ranging from 0.006 to 0.009 (Table 6; Fig 8A-8C). This estimate was similar to those obtained in previous studies. For example, sequence comparisons in the $p17_{gag}$ region of plasma RNA sequences from haemophiliacs infected from a common source indicated a mean rate of synonymous substitution in $p17_{gag}$ of 0.006 to 0.0072 substitutions per site per year (Kasper *et al.,* 1995).

The mean rate of nonsynonymous substitution between the study subjects was 0.058, lower than the silent rate. The mean d_N/d_S ratio of 0.39 indicated a bias towards silent substitutions in this region of the *gag* gene, consistent with previous estimates (Gojobori *et al.,* 1990b; Myers *et al.,* 1992b; Li *et al.,* 1988b; Kasper *et al.,* 1995b).

Fig. 7. Neighbor-joining tree of sequences in the $p17_{gag}$ region of the three study subjects. Bootstrap values indicate the percentage of trees showing the observed patient-specific groupings.

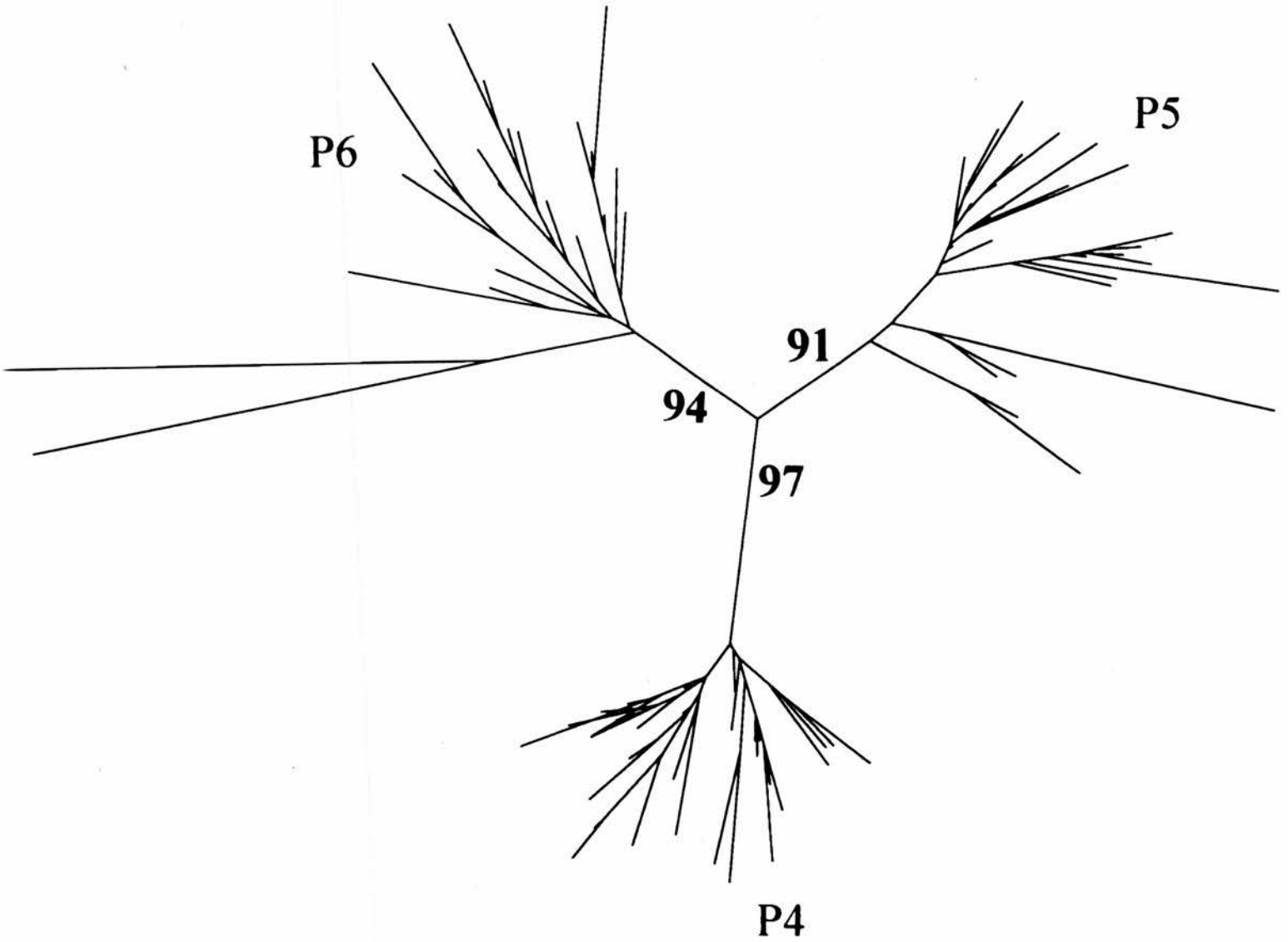

P6
P5
91
94
97
P4

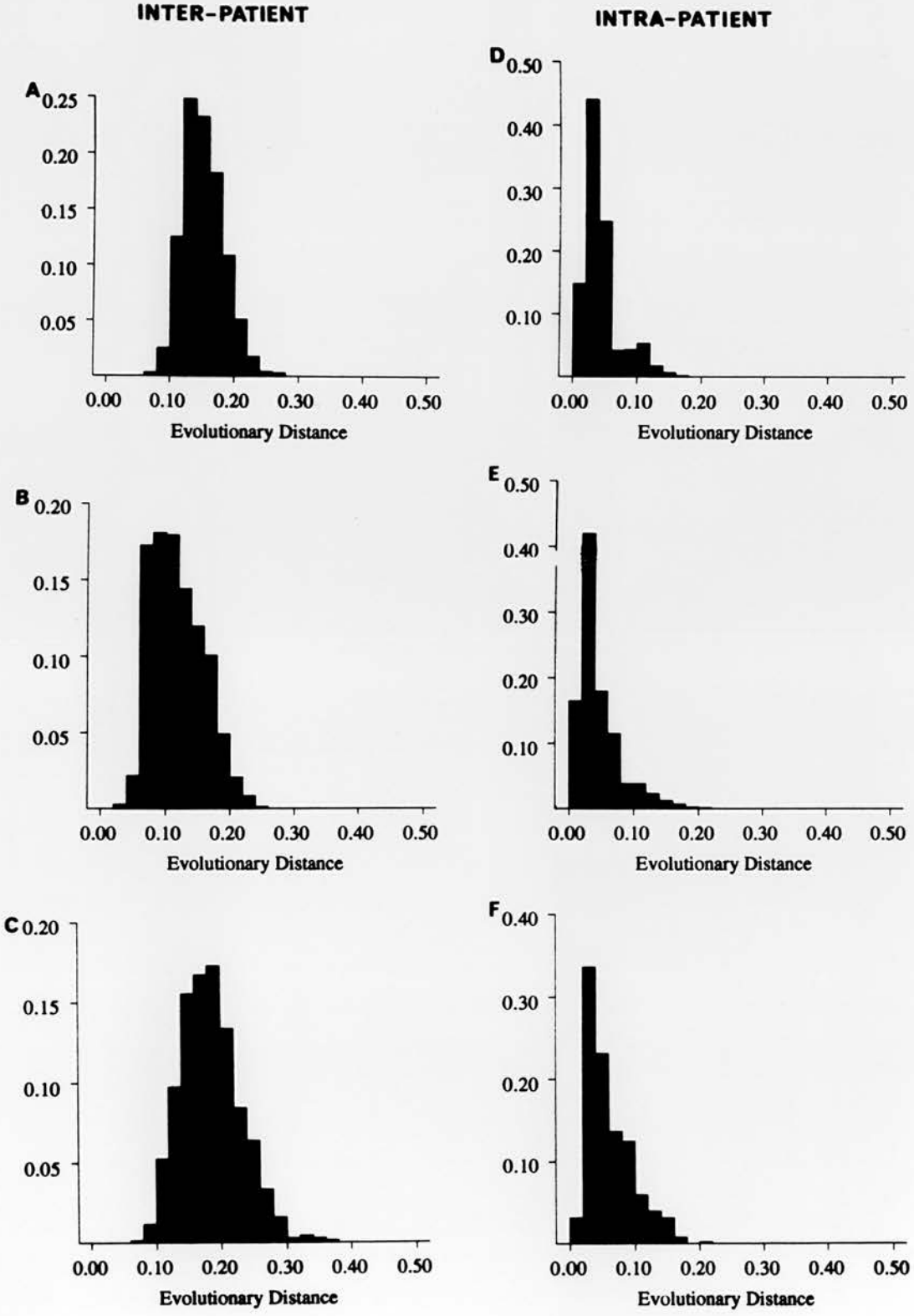
TABLE 6

SEQUENCE COMPARISONS BETWEEN STUDY SUBJECTS IN THE $p17_{gag}$ REGION

Pair	Divergence (years)[1]	No. pairwise comparisons	MEANS Silent sites	MEANS Non-silent sites	Ratio (d_N/d_S)	Silent rate[2]
P4-P5	19	960	0.152	0.053	0.35	0.008
P4-P6	18	736	0.112	0.052	0.47	0.006
P5-P6	19	689	0.184	0.070	0.38	0.009
All	18.7	795	0.149	0.058	0.39	0.0077

[1]Based upon infection from a common source in 1982 (see Results)
[2]Silent substitution rate of sequence change between study subjects (per site per year)

Fig. 8. Frequency histograms of silent pairwise distances in the $p17_{gag}$ region between study subjects: (A) p4/p5; (B) p4/p6; (C) p5/p6, and within study subjects between sequences obtained from different tissues: (D) p4; (E) p5; (F) p6. Median values for distributions shown in Tables 6 and 7.


INTER-PATIENT
INTRA-PATIENT
A
B
C
D
E
F
0.25
0.20
0.15
0.10
0.05
0.50
0.40
0.30
0.00
0.10
0.20
0.30
0.40
0.50
Evolutionary Distance

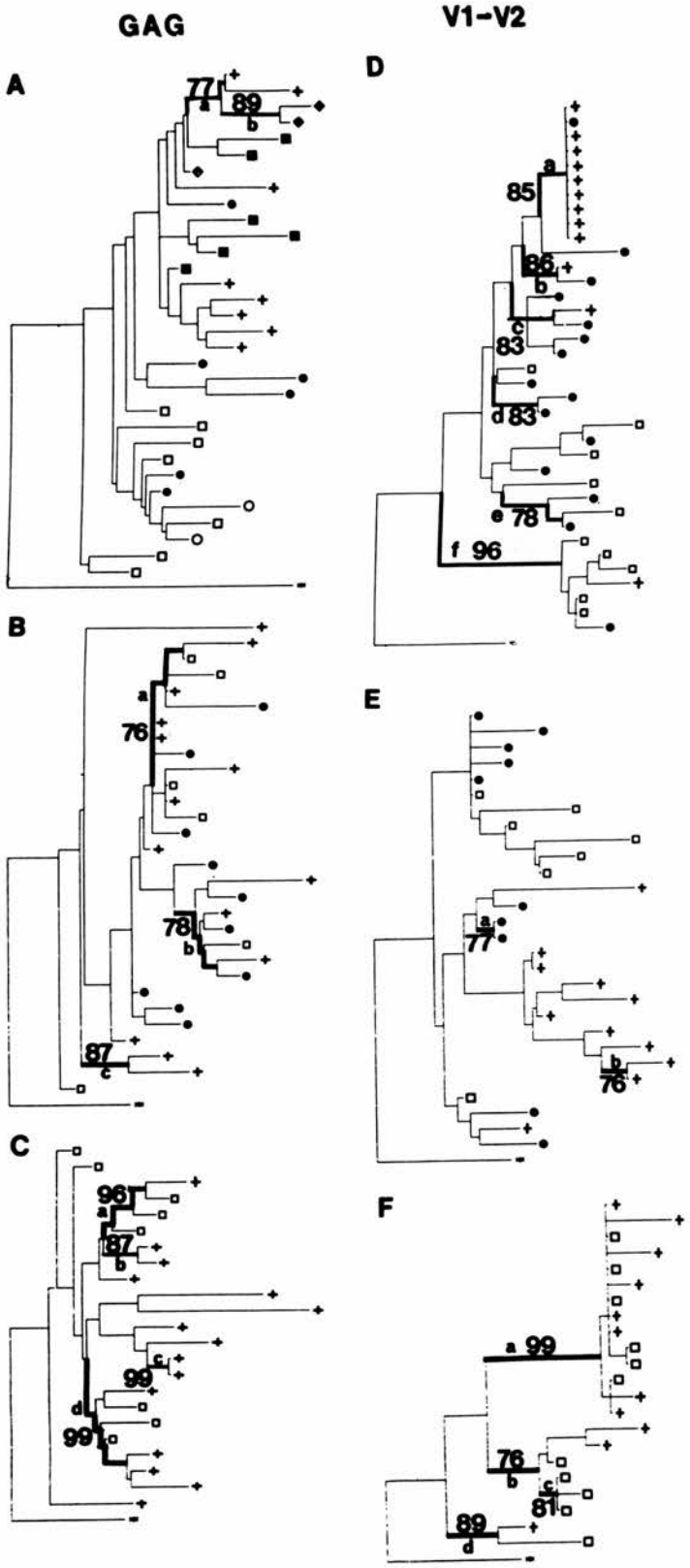
In this study I also determined the sequences of the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions and flanking regions in the *env* region from the three study patients (positions 6560-6876). Between individuals, the mean pairwise synonymous distance between sequences from the flanking regions (but omitting the hypervariable regions between 6623-6679 [V1] and 6701-6796 [V2]) was 0.104, lower than for the $p17_{gag}$ region. In contrast the rate of nonsynonymous substitution in the V1/V2 flanking region was higher (0.083), producing an overall d_N/d_S ratio of 0.80, similar to previous estimates for the *env* region (Wolfs *et al.,* 1990; Li *et al.,* 1988).

In this study I used the measured rate of sequence change in the $p17_{gag}$ region at silent sites to estimate the time of divergence between variants infecting different tissues within an infected individual. These data should indicate when the spread of HIV into non-lymphoid tissue occurred (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994b).

3.5.2 PHYLOGENETIC ANALYSIS OF VARIANTS FROM DIFFERENT TISSUES.

Phylogenetic analysis was carried out using sequences from the $p17_{gag}$ region and V1 and V2 flanking regions from a range of lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues to determine the relatedness of variants between each tissue (e.g. lymph node, brain and lung; Fig 9). Bootstrap resampling using 500 replicate trees was carried out to estimate the robustness of the observed groupings.

Fig. 9. Phylogenetic analysis of sequences obtained from different tissues from the three study subjects (A, D: p4, B, E: p5; C, F: p6) in different subgenomic regions (A, B, C: $p17_{gag}$ region; D, E, F: V1/V2 flanking regions). Trees shown in rooted form using the unrelated subtype B sequence of HIV-MN as an outgroup. Bootstrap values of >75% indicated for branches highlighted in bold. Symbols: ✢ Brain, ◆ Spinal cord, ● Lung ,■ Colon, □ Lymph node, ○ Spleen.


GAG
V1-V2
A
77
a
89
b
B
a
76
78
b
87
c
C
96
a
87
b
c
99
d
99
e
D
a
85
86
b
c
83
d 83
e 78
f 96
E
a
77
b
76
F
a 99
76
b
c
81
89
d

There was little evidence for consistent phylogenetic grouping by tissue origin. For example, $p17_{gag}$ sequences from lymph node of patient 4 were found in two distinct lineages, one of which contained a variety of sequences from other tissues (lung and spleen; Fig 9A). Similarly sequences from brain were interspersed with those from colon, lung and spinal cord. In the V1/V2 flanking regions, a number of lineages were present supported by high bootstrap values (Fig 9D). For example, sequences from the brain were found in lineages a, b, c and f, all of which included sequences from various tissues such as brain, lymph node and lung. However, lineage a contains a large group of mainly brain isolates which may be an artifact of sampling error, whereby a very limited area of brain tissue has been sampled resulting in detection of a restricted population (see below).

Similar mixing of sequences from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues was observed amongst sequences from the other two study subjects (Fig 9B, 9C, 9E, 9F). For example, $p17_{gag}$ sequences from both brain and lymphoid tissue of patient 5 were each found on lineages a and b, separated from each other by high bootstrap values (Fig 9B). In patient 6, sequences were obtained only from brain and lymph node but each of the lineages contained sequences from both sources (Fig 9C, 9F).

3.5.3 TIME OF DIVERGENCE OF HIV VARIANTS IN DIFFERENT TISSUES.

Pairwise synonymous distances between sequences from the $p17_{gag}$ region from each patient were calculated to estimate the time of divergence of variants within each tissue. The previously established rate of sequence change in the $p17_{gag}$ region of 0.0066 substitutions per site per year was used (Kasper *et al.,* 1995), although similar results would have been obtained if I had used the synonymous substitution rate observed in this study (mean of three study individuals: 0.0077).

Mean synonymous pairwise sequence distances within study subjects were calculated by comparing sequences from all tissues with each other, as well as comparisons restricted to variants found in particular tissues, such as brain, lymph node and lung (Table 7; Fig 8D-8F). Comparison of variants found in all tissues produced a range of pairwise distances from 0.035 to 0.086, approximately a third of the mean inter-patient silent distance. These implied times of divergence of 2.6 to 6.5 years (Table 7).

In all three patients the mean distance between sequences from brain tissue was greater than the mean distance between variants in lymphoid tissue (Table 7; Fig 10), reflecting their wide distribution in multiple lineages by phylogenetic analysis (Fig 9). For example, the mean synonymous pairwise distances calculated for brain tissues ranged from 0.054 to 0.086 while that for lymphoid tissue ranged from 0.035 to 0.074 ($p<0.001$). These distances translate into average divergence

TABLE 7

SEQUENCE COMPARISONS OF VARIANTS FROM DIFFERENT TISSUES IN THE $p17_{gag}$ REGION

PATIENT	TISSUE	NO. of SEQS	SILENT SITES			NON-SILENT SITES		d_N/d_S
			Mean Dist. Time[1]	Mean Div.	p value[2]	Mean Dist.	p value[2]	
All[3]	All	75	0.049	3.72		0.019		0.390
	Brain	35	0.080	6.06		0.031		0.390
	Lymph node	21	0.055	4.20	<0.001	0.081	<0.001	0.270
	Lung	17	0.049	3.72	<0.001	0.013	<0.001	0.270
4	All	20	0.042	3.18		0.018		0.430
	Brain	7	0.054	4.10		0.010		0.185
	Lymph node	7	0.035	2.65	0.004	0.016	0.002	0.460
	Lung	6	0.070	5.30	0.058	0.013	0.184	0.190
5	All	30	0.045	3.40		0.020		0.440
	Brain	13	0.082	6.20		0.023		0.280
	Lymph Node	6	0.048	3.60	0.069	0.020	0.533	0.420
	Lung	11	0.043	3.25	<0.001	0.015	<0.001	0.350
6	All	23	0.061	4.60		0.020		0.330
	Brain	15	0.086	6.50		0.042		0.490
	Lymph node	8	0.074	5.60	0.113	0.012	<0.001	0.160

[1] Years.

[2] Significance of difference between pairwise distances amongst brain variants compared with other tissues.

[3] Including P4, 5 and 6 only.

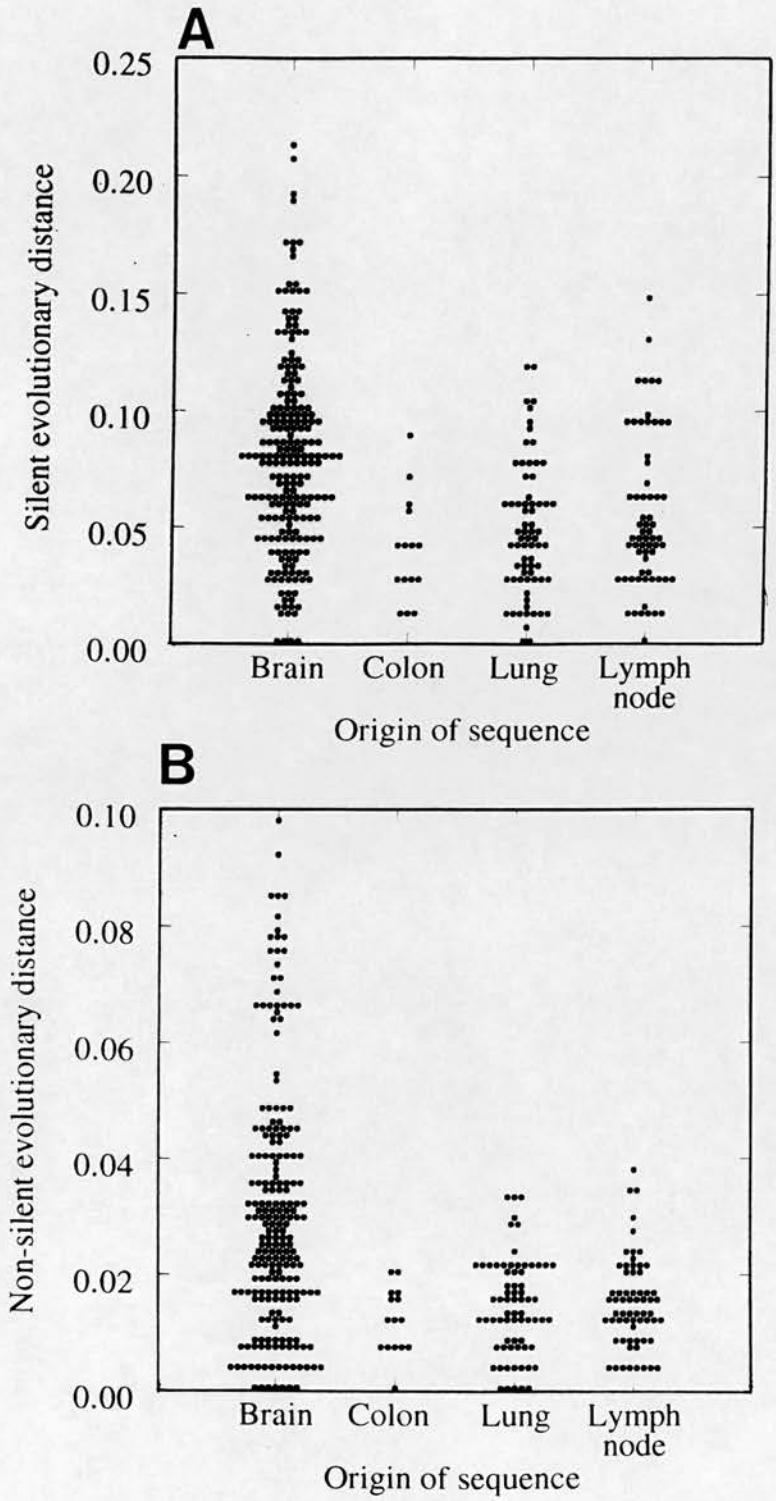


Fig. 10. Distribution of pairwise distances in different tissues from the three study patients (p4, 5 and 6) at (A) silent sites and (B) non-silent sites in the $p17_{gag}$ region.

times of 4.1 to 6.5 years and 2.65 to 5.6 years for the brain and lymphoid variants respectively. Overall, sequences between variants found in brain were no more similar to each other (0.080 for three study patients; Table 7) than they were to those present in lymphoid tissue (mean silent pairwise distance between brain and lymph node sequences: 0.070). In two of the patients mean synonymous pairwise distances were also calculated for variants isolated from lung tissue. In p4 the mean distance for lung variants (0.070) was greater than that for brain (0.054) and lymphoid variants (0.035), while in p5 the mean distance for lung variants (0.043) was approximately half that of brain (0.082) and very similar to lymphoid variants (0.048). In p5 focal inflammatory cell infiltrates were detected within lung tissue. Hence, sampling an area with such a focal infiltrate may provide an under-representation of the diversity of variants within this tissue. Indeed, the majority V3 sequence detected in lung tissue, lymphoid tissue and PBNCs was identical. In p4 patchy collections of macrophages and MGCs were present in the lung sections examined and the majority V3 sequence detected in lung tissue was identical to that detected in brain tissue, contrasting that found in p5.

Mean nonsynonymous pairwise distances were also calculated and were found to be lower than the distances at silent sites only. Nonsynonymous distances calculated for brain tissue only ranged from 0.010 to 0.042 and were higher than those observed between variants in lymphoid tissue of the three study individuals (0.012 to 0.020; $p<0.001$). Subsequently these values produced d_N/d_S ratios of between 0.158 and 0.49 for brain tissue only and 0.16 and 0.46 for lymphoid tissue only, similar to that observed previously using inter-patient comparisons. These

ratios indicate that most substitutions occurring within an individual in $p17_{gag}$ region were silent.

3.5.4 PHYLOGENETIC ANALYSIS OF SEQUENCE VARIANTS FROM PATIENT 79 ISOLATED FROM DIFFERENT TISSUES.

Following this study I examined the diversity of HIV-1 within a fourth individual (p79), from the Edinburgh IDU cohort, who had been infected for approximately 12 years to discern whether a similar distribution of viral variants from various tissues could be observed in an individual infected for a considerably longer period of time than p4, 5 and 6 (infected for 9 to 10 years). In this study subject I determined the sequences from the $p17_{gag}$ region only. Phylogenetic analysis was carried out to determine the relatedness of variants between each tissue (brain, lymph node and lung; Fig 11). Bootstrap resampling using 500 replicate trees was carried out to estimate the robustness of observed groupings. Consistent with the previous phylogenetic analyses, sequences from lymph node and lung tissues were interspersed throughout the tree, although fairly low bootstrap values were observed. Only two lineages had values higher than 75%; lineage a contained sequences from brain tissue only and lineage b contained sequences from lung tissue only. In contrast to the previous phylogenetic analysis, sequences obtained from brain tissue from this individual grouped closely together with only one variant falling outside the main group, being more closely related to a lymph node variant.

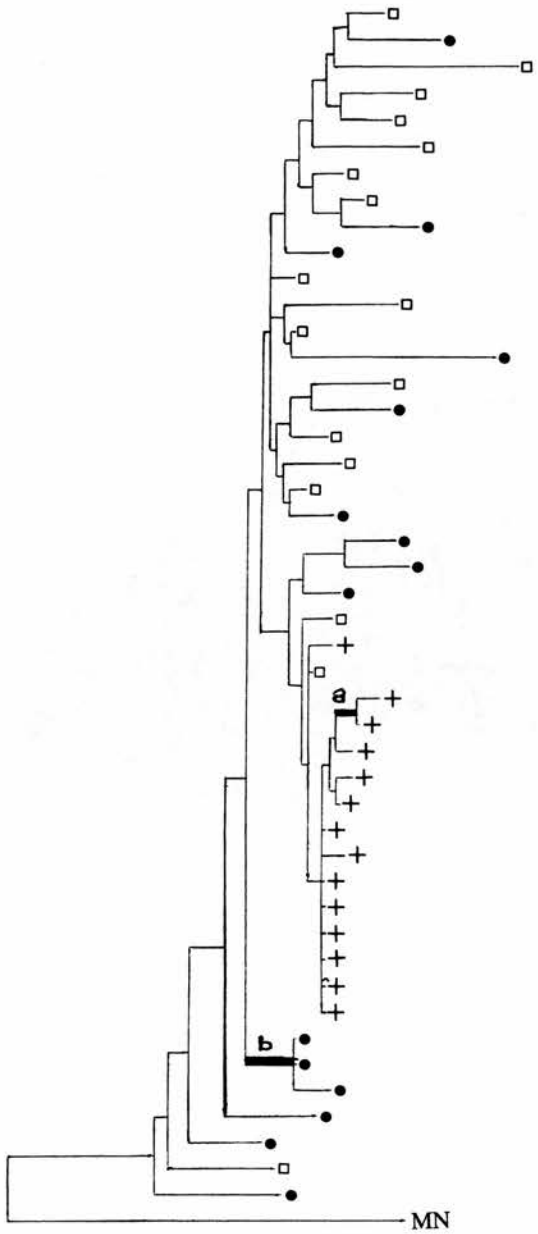


Fig. 11. Phylogenetic analysis of sequences obtained from different tissues of p79 in the $p17_{gag}$ region.Trees shown in rooted form using the unrelated subtype B sequence of HIV-MN as an outgroup. Bootstrap values of >75% indicated for branches highlighted in bold. Symbols: + Brain, ● Lung, □ Lymph node.

Pairwise synonymous distances between sequences from the $p17_{gag}$ region of p79 were calculated to estimate the time of divergence of variants within each tissue (Table 8; Fig 12). The previously established rate of sequence change for synonymous sites (0.0066 substitutions per site per year) was used (Kasper *et al.*, 1995). In contrast with estimates from the previous study, the mean distance between sequences from brain tissue from p79 were considerably smaller than the mean distance between variants from lymphoid or lung tissue. For example, at synonymous sites the mean distance for brain tissue was 0.015, compared with 0.06 and 0.07 in lymph node and lung respectively. These distances translate into approximate mean divergence times of 1.14, 4.54 and 5.3 years for brain, lymph node and lung variants respectively. Mean synonymous pairwise distances between brain and lymph node and brain and lung sequences were calculated to be 0.042 and 0.044 respectively. Therefore, variants found in brain were far more similar to each other than they were to those found in lymphoid or lung tissue. Phylogenetic analysis reflects this limited diversification of brain variants with all brain sequences grouping tightly together.

Mean nonsynonymous pairwise distances were also calculated for P79 and were found to be lower than distances at silent sites only, consistent with the previous analysis (Table 8; Fig 12). These values were used to calculate d_N/d_S ratios for each tissue and produced ratios of 0.47, 0.4 and 0.44 for brain, lymphoid and lung tissues respectively. These ratios were similar to those observed previously for inter- and intra-patient comparisons and indicate that the majority of

TABLE 8

SEQUENCE COMPARISONS OF VARIANTS FROM DIFFERENT TISSUES IN THE $p17_{gag}$ REGION

PATIENT	TISSUE	NO. of SEQS	SILENT SITES			NON-SILENT SITES		d_N/d_S
			Mean Dist.	Mean Div. Time[1]	p value[2]	Mean Dist.	p value[2]	
All[3]	All	121	0.063	4.77		0.023		0.37
	Brain	49	0.061	4.62		0.023		0.38
	Lymph node	38	0.059	4.47		0.021		0.36
	Lung	30	0.061	4.62		0.025		0.41
79	All	46	0.051	3.86		0.021		0.41
	Brain	14	0.015	1.14		0.007		0.47
	Lymph node	17	0.060	4.54	<0.001	0.024	<0.001	0.40
	Lung	15	0.070	5.30	<0.001	0.031	<0.001	0.44

[1] Years.
[2] Significance of difference between pairwise distances amongst brain variants compared with other tissues.
[3] Including P4, 5, 6 and 79.

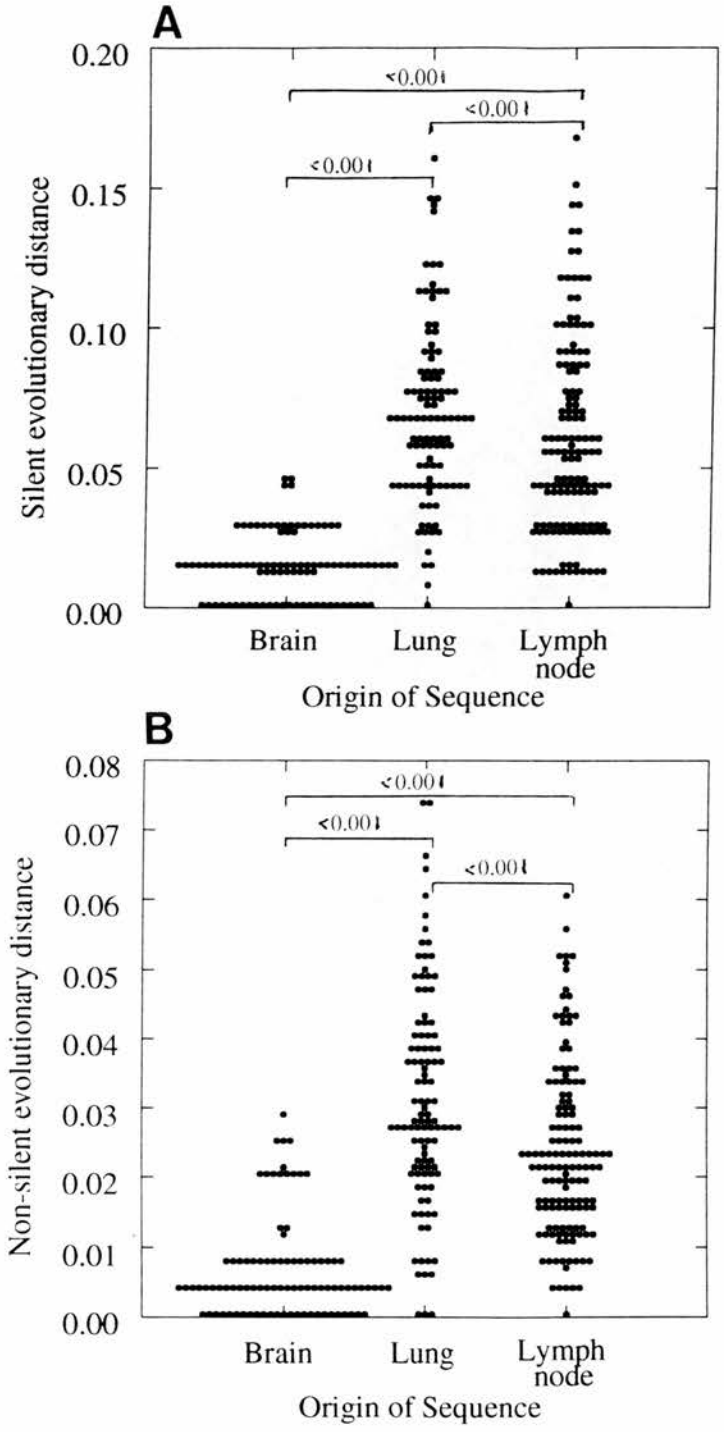


Fig. 12. Distribution of pairwise distances in different tissues from p79 at (A) silent sites and (B) non-silent sites in the $p17_{gag}$ region.

substitutions which occurred within the $p17_{gag}$ region were silent.

3.6 DISCUSSION.

3.6.1 DIVERSITY OF HIV-1 *in vivo*.

In this study a comparison of the diversity of HIV-1 in different tissues, including brain, lymph node and lung, obtained from four individuals infected from a common source in 1982/83 was carried out. Three of the individuals were found to have very diverse populations in all tissues although, in one individual (p79), relatively restricted diversity within brain tissue was observed. Similar results were obtained by Wong *et al.*, who analysed the distribution of *pol* sequences within different tissue compartments from a number of patients who died in AIDS and who had received AZT treatment for variable periods of time (6 months to 2 years), prior to death. In three of the study subjects Wong *et al.*, observed restricted diversity within brain tissue , while in a fourth subject a more diverse population was formed from two distinct evolutionary lineages, with one containing substitutions in *pol* at codons 41 and 215 that confer resistance to AZT treatment. Within the three individuals showing restricted diversity, differences in AZT resistance were noted. In subject A restricted diversity was seen in brain tissue and the entire population was found to be resistant to AZT with mutations at codons 41 and 215. Subject B and D also showed restricted diversity in brain however, in these two patients, no variants contained mutations associated with antiviral

resistance.

In this study two individuals (p4 and p79) underwent extensive AZT treatment for up to five years prior to death. Diverse populations were observed in the brain from p4 which contrasted to the very restricted diversity seen in the brain from p79. P6 was treated with AZT for two years prior to death and diverse populations were observed in brain. Finally p5, who remained untreated throughout infection, also showed diverse populations within brain tissue. Therefore, in this study and the study by Wong *et al.*, both diverse and restricted populations have been detected in brain tissue from a number of individuals. This discrepancy cannot be attributed to AZT resistance since similar degrees of diversity have been observed in individuals with and without AZT resistant variants. For example, in subject A all variants detected were resistant to AZT yet this individual showed restricted diversity within the brain. Similarly, p5 had never been treated with any retroviral agents and yet displayed considerable diversity within brain tissue.

How can these differences in diversity within brain tissue be explained? One explanation could be that AZT resistant mutant variants may infect brain tissue and replace the initial infecting populations, thereby producing a homogenous brain population. This hypothesis would explain the restricted diversity in the *pol* region of subject A. However, complete replacement would be hampered by the lack of mobility of infected cells within a solid tissue. In the peripheral circulation, however constant viral replication and rapid cell turnover can lead to rapid population replacements within PBMCs (Coffin, 1996; Ho *et al.*, 1995; Wei *et al.*, 1995). Although we do not know the lifespan of HIV-infected

cells in the CNS it is less likely that such a process would occur so rapidly within brain tissue.

Another, more likely explanation for the observation of different populations within brain tissue could be due to inappropriate sampling. The brain itself is a large mass of solid tissue where cellular movement would be very restricted, unlike the peripheral circulation. It is therefore, highly likely that separate populations could emerge within the brain following initial infection. Brain tissue may be seeded early on in infection by infected cells from the peripheral circulation and form distinct foci of infection. Indeed, in this study I have shown that multiple lineages exist within brain tissue of three of the study subjects (p4, 5 and 6) and it is possible that each represents an independent focus of infection. Similarly in a previous study analysing the distribution of V3 sequences within different tissues, variants found in the left brain of one individual were not detected in the right brain of the same individual, again providing strong evidence to suggest multiple infection of brain tissue (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a). Following replication each focus of infection will have diverged from a single infected cell and therefore may display restricted diversity. The number of foci present will depend on how diffuse the initial seeding of the brain was.

When sampling brain tissue for analysis it is very possible that an unrepresentative population may be selected. For example, the tissue from which DNA was extracted may contain only one focus of infection, ultimately derived from a single infecting virus particle. Consequently, restricted diversity would be observed in any variants sampled from this tissue section and appear monophyletic

by evolutionary analysis. Conversely, the tissue section analysed may contain a number of independent infected centres leading to a much more diverse, polyphyletic population. These differences could explain the variation observed between populations of HIV sequences in the brain tissue of p4, 5, 6 and 79. Similarly, in the study by Wong *et al.*, the observation of two brain populations in subject C may have resulted from the presence of two foci of infection in the same tissue sample, one lineage being resistant to AZT while the other was sensitive. The monophyletic populations observed in the other three individuals may have resulted from sampling very small amounts of tissue which contained only one infection site. Unless the effect of sampling is taken into account, it is wrong to infer that the restricted diversity in one sample reflects that of the whole tissue. Conclusions regarding the biological relevance of such observations may be premature.

In the future studies should include multiple sampling sites to ensure that representative populations of HIV variants from the brain tissue are analysed. This theory could be investigated experimentally by dissection of foci of infection. For example, discrete foci of infection could be identified using *in situ* PCR, subsequently dissected from brain tissue and analysed in a similar manner to that described here. This type of analysis would discern whether each discrete focus of infection was indeed derived from a single infecting virus. From my own study , the observation that populations in the brain can be polyphyletic remains valid, however it is likely that the monophyletic populations observed in p79 and in the study by Wong *et al.*, under-represent the true diversity of HIV-1 in the CNS.

3.6.2 RATE OF SEQUENCE CHANGE OF HIV *in vivo.*

In this study I have used published rates as well as estimates based upon the sequences recovered from three of the study patients (p4, 5 and 6), to estimate the times of divergence of variants infecting different tissues *in vivo*. Measurement of the rate of sequence change was possible for the study patients because it was known that all 3 patients were originally infected with HIV from a common source in an outbreak around 1982/1983, so that each was infected for approximately 9 to 10 years prior to death. Therefore between any 2 individuals, there was approximately 19 years of divergent sequence change. Synonymous rates of substitution were calculated for each patient in $p17_{gag}$ (Table 6) and ranged from 0.006 to 0.009 substitutions per site per year (mean 0.0077), while the rate for the V1/V2 flanking regions was slightly lower (mean 0.0056 substitutions per site per year).

One assumption that must be made when calculating times of divergence from sequence distances is that the rate of sequence change remains constant throughout the course of infection, and there is little direct evidence that this is justified. Although higher levels of virus replication clearly occur later in the course of disease, this does not necessarily imply that the rate of sequence change should be higher. The rate of sequence change is proportional to the number of replication cycles, whose length is determined by the replicative processes within the cell, unless a substantial proportion of the sampled population originates from virus that has reactivated from latently infected cells where viral replication may

not have occurred for several years.

Empirically, however, the rate of sequence change at silent sites in $p17_{gag}$ over the first 2 years of infection in haemophiliacs (0.0066 per site per year; Kasper *et al.,* 1995) was similar to that observed in the three study patients (0.0077), in which the period of infection was 9-10 years, covering primary infection to death from AIDS. These figures are in turn within the range of those from several other studies using different observation periods and study subjects at different stages of disease (Gojobori *et al.,* 1990b; Li *et al.,* 1988b; Wolfs *et al.,* 1990b).

Although the rate of non-silent sequence change in the *gag* region was lower than the synonymous rate, times of divergence based on non-silent sites provided similar times of divergence of variants in different tissues (mean time of divergence of variants within each subject: 3.1 years compared with 3.7 years using the published rate of silent sequence change in $p17_{gag}$; Kasper *et al.,* 1995). This is despite the theoretical possibility that the rate would be affected by phenotypic selection of variants with changes in the $p17_{gag}$ region.

Using the mean synonymous rate of substitution for $p17_{gag}$ of 0.0066 substitutions per site per year (Kasper *et al.,* 1995), the average time of divergence between brain and lymph node variants within an individual patient were calculated (Table 7) and a range of values from 3.5 to 6.5 years was obtained. In lymphoid tissue, the mean diversity of *gag* sequences implied an approximate population age of 2.65 to 5.6 years, while those infecting brain were significantly more variable, suggesting an even earlier time of diversification (4.1 to 6.5 years). Despite the

large potential inaccuracies in calculating times of divergence based upon sequence distances, it is clear that compared with the total duration of infection within the patients (9 or 10 years), the observed diversity within brain tissue suggests infection occurred relatively early in the course of HIV infection, clearly preceding the onset of AIDS in two of the four study individuals (Fig 6).

In p79 the average time of divergence between brain and lymph node variants was calculated and found to be 3.2 years, within the range calculated for the other study patients. In lymphoid tissue an approximate population age of 4.5 years was calculated using the mean synonymous pairwise distance values, similar to the values calculated for the other three study subjects. However, variants infecting brain were considerably less variable with a diversification time of approximately 1.14 years. As previously suggested, this figure may underestimate the diversity of variants in the brain, through variants sampled from a restricted number of foci of infection. The similarity in the calculated divergence times of variants in lymphoid tissue and lung and those in the study by Wong *et al.*, are consistent with the much greater degree of mixing of populations from trafficking of lymphocytes and macrophages through lymph nodes and other tissues.

3.6.3 ORGAN SPECIFIC DIFFERENCES OF HIV IN THE V3 REGION.

Populations of HIV variants infecting different tissues *in vivo* are generally distinct in the V3 hypervariable region of *env* (Ball *et al.,* 1994; Korber *et al.,* 1994; Power *et al.,* 1994) including three of the patients in this study (Fig 13A-

13C; Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a). For example, for p5, none of the V3 sequences of either the major population (15/17) or minor population (2/17) found in the brain were found amongst those from lung, PBMCs and lymph node; these latter tissues were dominated by a variant with a substitution at position 28 (35/42; Fig 13A). Similarly, for p6, variants in the brain were uniform, and differed from lymph node variants in all but one case by 1-3 amino acids (Fig 13B). The diversity of sequences in the V3 region of p4 made comparison more difficult, but again the main variants in brain (14/17) were not found in PBMCs or spleen (n=16) or, with a single exception, in lymph node (15 sequences; Fig 13C).

On the basis of this apparently tissue-specific distribution of variants in V3, it has been suggested that these population differences have adaptive significance and reflect different tropism for the different infected cell types in different tissues. The involvement of V3 would be consistent with the previous observation of its role in determining the ability of HIV to replicate in different cell types *in vitro* (Millich *et al.,* 1993). Within macrophage-tropic isolates an acidic amino acid or alanine was predominantly seen at position 25 while a basic or uncharged amino acid at this position was associated with non-conservative basic amino acid substitutions at positions 11, 24 and 32 correlating with T-cell tropism, consistent with other studies (Hwang *et al.,* 1991; Shioda *et al.,* 1994; Morris *et al.,* 1994; Kasper *et al.,* 1994; Shioda *et al.,* 1992; Westervelt *et al.,* 1991; Chesebro *et al.,* 1992). Extending this work, Power *et al.*, compared cloned sequences from brain and spleen in demented and non-demented patients, and found evidence for specific amino acid substitutions at 2 positions in the V3 loop (histidine at position 305 and

FIG.13. Proviral V3 loop amino acid sequences from infected organs from terminal AIDS patients (A) p4; (B) p5; (C) p6; (D) p9. All sequences compared to subtype B consensus sequence for V3 (LaRosa, 1990); ".": identity with subtype B consensus; "-": gap introduced to preserve alignment with consensus sequence; "n": number of sequences observed.

A

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain	....L...S.. .A..D.....	12
	....L...S.. ....D.....	2
	....S.. .A..D.....	2
	....N..... ....D.....	1
Spinal cord	....L...S.. .A..D.....	6
	....S.. .A..D.....	1
Colon	....S..... ..N.....I ....D.....	6
	....L...S.. .A..D.....	5
	....S..... ....D.....	1
	....L...S.. ....D.....	1
	....I ....D.....	1
	....S.. ....D.....	1
	....L...S.I .A..D.....	1
Lung	....L...S.. .A..D.....	7
	....S..... G.....	3
	....S..... .....S.. ....D.....	1
	....A..S.. .A..D.....	1
	....N..... ....D.....	1
	....S..... ..N..... ....D.....	1
	....L...S.. ....D.....	1
PBNCS	....S..... G.....	12
	....S..... ..N..... ....D.....	1
	....S..... G..... ....D.....	1
Spleen	....S..... G..... ....D.....	1
	....D.....	1
Lymph node	....S..... G.....	5
	....S..... ..N..... ....D.....	3
	....S.. .A..D.....	2
	....	2
	....S..... G..... ....D.....	1
	....L...S.. .A..D.....	1
	....N..... ....D.....	1

B

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain	.... .A.....	15
	...L..... ..... .A.....	2
Lung	.... .A..D.....	10
	....P..... .A..D.....	3
PBNCS	.... .A..D.....	13
	.....K.... ..... .A..D.....	2
	....P..... .A..D.....	1
Lymph node	.... .A..D.....	12
	....P..... .A..D.....	1

C

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain	....NL.....L .....T...	16
Colon	....NL..... ....Q.....	10
	....NL..... ....Q.V...	3
	....L..... ....Q.....	2
PBNCS	....NL.....L .....T...	2
Lymph node	....L..... .....T...	12
	....NL..... ....Q.V...	2
	....NL.....L .....T...	1
	....NL..... .....T...	1

D

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain (L)	....G..... G.....S.. ...-Q.....	11
	....G..... G.....S.L ...-K.....	3
Brain (R)	....G..... G.....S.. ...-Q.....	16
Lymph node	....G..... G.....S.L ...-K.....	10
	....G..... ..P.....I ...-Q.....	3
	....G..... G.....S.. ...-K.....	1

proline at position 329) that correlated with neurotropism and the clinical expression of HIV dementia (Power *et al.,* 1994). However, while other studies have also found separate populations infecting brain compared with those infecting lymphoid tissue, there appears to be no conserved features of the V3 loop that correlate with neurotropism (Di Stefano *et al.,* 1995; Korber *et al.,* 1994; Reddy *et al.,* 1996; Liu *et al.,* 1990; Epstein *et al.,* 1991; Keys *et al.,* 1993).

Furthermore, there is no evidence for a correlation between tissue distribution with the predicted phenotype of such V3 sequences *in vitro*. For example, in a previous study of the three patients analysed in this study and others (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a), each tissue was found to be predominantly infected with variants with a predicted NSI /macrophage tropic phenotype, irrespective of tissue origin. In these cases, the observed amino acid differences between brain and lymphoid tissue were relatively few and probably unlikely on their own to alter the phenotype of the virus (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a; see below).

Other studies support the conclusion that the V3 region is to some extent involved in tissue tropism but that interaction with other regions in the HIV-1 genome is required for infectivity (Koito *et al.,* 1994; Carrillo *et al.,* 1996; Stamatatos *et al.,* 1993; Carrillo *et al.,* 1996). It has been suggested that mutations altering the structure of the V3 loop can affect the conformation of gp120 and that in turn the structure of the V3 loop is influenced by the conformation of other regions in gp120 (Stamatatos *et al.,* 1993). An interaction of the V3 loop with a small region of the C4 domain has been suggested to be required for infectivity of Jurkat T cells lines (Carrillo *et al.,* 1996a; Moore *et al.,* 1993b; Wyatt *et al.,*

1992b; Morrison *et al.,* 1993b). Therefore, although it is universally accepted that restricted variability exists in the V3 loop of HIV-1 gp120 there is no agreed interpretation of this observation.

3.6.4 MULTIPLE EVOLUTIONARY LINEAGES IN $p17_{gag}$ AND V1/V2 REGIONS.

Given the previously observed organ-specific populations in the V3 region, it was surprising to find a different relationship between variants when sequences elsewhere in the genome were compared. In both $p17_{gag}$ and V1/V2 flanking regions of p4, 5 and 6, I observed numerous independent lineages containing sequences from non-lymphoid tissues such as brain and lung mixed with those from lymphoid tissues. In p79, although a similar mixing of lymph node and lung variants to that seen in the other three study subjects was observed, brain variants all grouped within the same lineage distinct from the other tissues. Some of these groupings were confirmed by bootstrap resampling analysis (Fig 9 and 11). Comparison of the actual V1 and V2 sequences showed a pattern of sequence variability between tissues similar to that of the flanking regions, and without evidence of tissue specific groupings; this data is discussed in chapter 4.

There are at least three possible explanations for differences in grouping in different regions of the genomes; these include (a) different rates of sequence change in different tissues, (b) convergence and (c) recombination, and are reviewed below.

The first hypothesis, originally proposed by Korber *et al.* (Korber *et al.*, 1994), is based upon the principle that infection of non-lymphoid tissue such as brain occurs early in the course of infection at a time when the viral population is relatively homogeneous in the V3 region. Therefore, variants infecting the brain would be initially similar to variants infecting non-lymphoid tissues. Subsequently, as disease progresses, variants found in lymphoid tissues may undergo more rapid sequence change in V3 and elsewhere in the genome associated with population replacements arising from immune escape or antiviral treatment. For example, variants resistant to neutralization or to antivirals such as AZT would outgrow other variants present within the lymphoid tissue. Rapid turnover and population replacements may be facilitated by the continuous movement of lymphocytes and other susceptible cells through lymphoid tissue. The previously estimated high rate of turnover of HIV-infected lymphocytes (Ho *et al.,* 1995; Wei *et al.,* 1995) following antiviral treatment is consistent with the existence of a relatively dynamic lymphoid-cell population, whereas at least for antiviral resistance, the brain population is not (Strappe *et al.*, personal communication). Recently, evidence for extremely slow turnover of variants in brain tissue was obtained by sequence comparisons of the *pol* gene of variants infecting brain and lymphoid tissues from study subjects dying in AIDS (Wong *et al.,* 1997). Despite frequently prolonged antiviral treatment prior to death, many individuals showed predominantly wild-type (*i.e.* AZT sensitive) variants in brain, while variants recovered from spleen and/or lymph node were predominantly or exclusively resistant.

Alternatively, variants infecting lymphoid cells may be subject to more rapid changes over time associated with changes in the V3 region that determine the shift in the phenotype of HIV upon disease progression. Variants in the brain however, may be unable to undergo such radical changes in the V3 region due to the continued strict requirements for replication in cells of the brain that are largely monocyte derived cells, i.e., infiltrating macrophages and microglia cells (Vazeux *et al.,* 1987; Price *et al.,* 1988). The survival of the original infecting population in the brain and its replacement in lymphoid cells would explain the former's greater diversity in all parts of the genome other than those that determined tropism and the observed organ-specific differences in V3 populations. This hypothesis implies early entry of HIV into the brain, and although the V3 region is involved in tropism, it is not in the simple way it has been previously imagined.

It is possible to account for the organ-specific populations in V3 by other processes that do not necessarily imply early entry into the brain. For example, the organ-specific similarities in V3 sequences amongst variants that are not closely related in evolutionary terms could have originated from a process of strong convergent evolution, whereby the V3 sequence determines the ability of variants to grow in different cell types. Independent evidence for the existence of positive selection leading to convergence in V3 has been obtained from a study of haemophiliacs infected from a common source, who showed similarities in the pattern of sequence change in the V3 region in different individuals (Kasper *et al.,* 1995). Similarly, a longitudinal study of a single infected individual showed several independent occurrences of certain amino acid changes in the V3 loop in variants

forming two evolutionarily distinct lineages (Holmes *et al.,* 1992).

It is unlikely that the V3 loop could be the sole determinant of tropism, as the differences between populations infecting brain and lymphoid tissue are often trivial, and would be unlikely on their own to affect the phenotype of the virus. For example, all variants in the brain of p5 differed from those of lymphoid tissue at only one position (position 28), where a glutamate replaced an aspartate, a conservative amino acid change. Evidence for the functional equivalence of these two residues at this position can be inferred from their approximately equal distribution in isolates of the NSI phenotype, and amongst variants infecting a range of tissues collected at autopsy from these and other individuals (Di Stefano *et al.,* 1995; Korber *et al.,* 1994; Power *et al.,* 1994; Reddy *et al.,* 1996; Liu *et al.,* 1990; Epstein *et al.,* 1991; Keys *et al.,* 1993). Furthermore, if convergence were the explanation for the organ-specific grouping of V3 sequences, we might expect to observe general similarities between variants infecting specific tissues from unrelated HIV-infected individuals. However, apart from the one study (Power *et al.,* 1994), it has generally proved impossible to demonstrate any specific conserved sequence or motif in V3 or elsewhere in *env* that correlates with the cell type infected *in vivo* (see above). On the other hand, as noted above, it is possible the actual V3 sequence required for replication in different cell types may depend upon interactions between V3 and other regions of *env*, so that different V3 sequences may evolve to carry out equivalent functions in different HIV strains.

The other mechanism for different relationships in different parts of the genome is recombination, where a requirement for specific V3 sequences that

confers an ability to infect different tissues may favour recombination with an already divergent pre-existing population either within or out-with the tissue where the variants were found. Recombination occurs frequently in retroviruses including HIV-1, and is a mechanism by which genetic variation can be increased (Coffin, 1979). Recombination requires that multiple infection of cells occurs, and although there is evidence that this may occur *in vitro* (Rey *et al.,* 1986; Koyanagi *et al.,* 1987), the scarcity of HIV-infected cells in brain and other tissues seems to suggest that it may be an unlikely event *in vivo*. However, it is possible that recombinants may be generated elsewhere where high levels of replication occur (*eg.* in lymphoid tissue) producing variants that are uniquely able to enter and replicate within the CNS.

Whether the similarities in V3 originated from convergence or recombination, these hypotheses suggest that the observed diversity of variants within brain tissue could have originated by a process of multiple entry from sources outside the CNS. Therefore, the actual duration of infection in the brain may be substantially lower than can be calculated by estimating its population diversity. Indeed, the grouping of variants from brain and lymphoid tissue by phylogenetic analysis of the $p17_{gag}$ and V1/V2 flanking regions could be regarded as evidence for a process of multiple entry. On the other hand this hypothesis does not easily explain how populations in brain should be consistently more diverse than those in lymphoid tissue or other presumed sources of infection in brain. The observed diversity of $p17_{gag}$ sequences in brain tissue, from patients 4, 5 and 6, is more consistent with the first hypothesis of a lower rate of population replacement

in brain compared with lymphoid tissue. In the case of p79 however, a less divergent population was detected in brain tissue (as previously discussed). Therefore, this finding may simply highlight the limitations encountered when sampling from solid tissues. In the future more rigorous sampling techniques should be applied to determine whether the difference in divergence observed in the four study patients here was due to insufficient sampling or not.

In summary, the main findings of this study were the observation of an unusually diverse population of HIV variants in brain of three of the study subjects, without evidence for any closer evolutionary relationship between them than to variants infecting other tissues in the body. Although late entry of recombinant viruses is a possibility, it is more likely that viral entry into the brain occurs relatively early in the course of disease, based upon observations of its higher diversity in brain than in other tissues and the existence of multiple evolutionary lineages containing sequences from brain. These findings suggest that loss of immune competence is not solely required for entry into non-lymphoid tissue, and the strong association between HIV-induced neuropathology and disease progression may be consequent to reactivation rather than *de novo* infection of the CNS. The finding of variants in the brain on several different evolutionary lineages challenges the hypothesis of the evolution of a uniquely neurotropic strain. It is possible that the only requirement for infection of the brain may be macrophage-tropism and hence the possession of a V3 loop sequence that is of low charge and shows few differences from the subtype B consensus sequence (Donaldson *et al.*, 1994a).

This study represents the first attempt to use evolutionary analysis of variants infecting different tissues. The finding of different inter-relationships between variants in different parts of the genome, combined with uncertainty about the frequency and site of recombination *in vivo* and the selection pressures that could produce convergent evolution in V3, highlights the complexity in trying to understand the dynamics of HIV replication and dissemination to different tissues. However, this research at least provides a starting point for a more rigorous examination on the existence of HIV tropism *in vivo*.

CHAPTER 4: INVESTIGATION OF POPULATION DIVERSITY OF HIV-1 *IN VIVO* BY NUCLEOTIDE SEQUENCING AND LENGTH POLYMORPHISM ANALYSIS OF THE V1/V2 HYPERVARIABLE REGION OF *env*.

4.1 INTRODUCTION.

HIV-1 may exist in a state of permanent transition to survive external factors such as immune surveillance. This continual fluctuation has given rise to the term quasispecies to describe a population of closely related variants of HIV-1. Different viral variants, which exist within such a quasispecies, could potentially differ in their biological properties such as cellular tropism, cytopathicity, syncytium induction, replication rates and neutralization properties. A number of these differences in phenotype have been attributed to the envelope glycoprotein gp120. Previous studies have implicated the V3 domain, located within the third major cysteine loop, as the major determinant for these biological properties with specific amino acid changes in the V3 domain associated with differences in cell tropism and the ability to produce syncytia (Shioda *et al.,* 1992; Shioda *et al.,* 1991; Shioda *et al.,* 1994; Chesebro *et al.,* 1992; Millich *et al.,* 1993; Morris *et al.,* 1994; Power *et al.,* 1994; Westervelt *et al.,* 1991). This region has also been shown to be the principal target of neutralising antibodies produced by infection or immunization (Gorny *et al.,* 1994a; LaRosa *et al.,* 1990a; Freed *et al.,* 1991a; Zwart *et al.,* 1991a; Hwang *et al.,* 1991a).

Functional determinants, however, are not solely restricted to the V3 domain of gp120. More recently, biological characteristics of HIV-1 have been attributed to the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions located in the second major cysteine loop (Boyd *et al.,* 1993; Wu *et al.,* 1995; Toohey *et al.,* 1995; Sullivan *et al.,* 1993; Koito *et al.,* 1994; Westervelt *et al.,* 1992; Koito *et al.,* 1995). Sullivan

et al., have shown that the V1/V2 hypervariable regions may be involved in post-receptor binding events in the membrane fusion process (Sullivan *et al.,* 1993). They carried out a mutational analysis showing that the replacement of certain highly conserved amino acid residues resulted in envelope glycoproteins deficient in syncytium formation and/or virus infectivity. Similarly, Wang *et al.*, using site directed mutagenesis, identified a conserved aspartic acid residue required in the early stages of HIV-1 replication (Wang *et al.,* 1995). Replacement of this residue with either an alanine, leucine or glutamic acid residue resulted in a marked reduction in growth kinetics when compared with the wild-type phenotype. It is therefore conceivable that this aspartic acid residue is critical for postreceptor binding events and may interact with other regions in the gp120 molecule to confer the correct conformation required for virus entry.

Several structural features within the V2 region have been suggested to determine the phenotype of the virus (Groenink *et al.,* 1993; Fouchier *et al.,* 1995; Andeweg *et al.,* 1995). Andeweg *et al.*, constructed chimaeric envelope genes to delineate the regions of the envelope glycoprotein important in membrane fusion. They reported that in SI variants, the N-terminal part of the V2 region was likely to form a stable α-helix not predicted for NSI variants (Andeweg *et al.,* 1995). Groenink *et al.*, observed a greater length and overall positive charge of the V2 domain amongst SI, non-macrophage tropic isolates (Groenink *et al.,* 1993). However, in a follow up study, only 2 out of 11 study patients were found to have elongated V2 domains 11 to 60 months prior to SI conversion (Fouchier *et al.,* 1995). In an extension of this analysis, variants infecting 11 out of 12 individuals

(3 months after SI conversion) and 14 out of 26 individuals (6 months after SI conversion) were shown to have elongated V2 domains. These findings suggest that elongated V2 domains may be required transiently for SI conversion but are not necessarily required for maintenance of this phenotype (Schuitemaker *et al.,* 1995; Fouchier *et al.,* 1995). Subsequent investigations have effectively discounted a causal association between phenotype and primary amino acid sequence of V2 (Cornelissen *et al.,* 1995; Palmer *et al.,* 1996; Wang *et al.,* 1995), even though determinants of cytopathology and cellular tropism are clearly in part dependent on this and neighbouring regions of gp120.

The V2 domain has also been shown to determine efficient infection of macrophages (O'Brien *et al.,* 1990; Westervelt *et al.,* 1992; Toohey *et al.,* 1995; Koito *et al.,* 1994; Boyd *et al.,* 1993; Koito *et al.,* 1995). Kioto *et al.*, generated T cell tropic/macrophage tropic recombinant viruses to investigate whether the V1/V2 domains were required for macrophage tropism (Koito *et al.,* 1994). The results obtained strongly indicated a role for the V1/V2 regions in macrophage tropism and suggested these regions may interact with the V3 region modulating the overall conformation of gp120. Toohey *et al.*, suggested that without the appropriate V1/V2 sequence macrophage tropic clones failed to spread following initial infection again suggesting a role for the V1/V2 regions in membrane fusion (Toohey *et al.,* 1995).

The lack of correlation between viral phenotype and primary amino acid sequence of V1 and V2 can be clearly seen in Fig 14. Published V1 and V2 sequences of known phenotype from 3 independent studies (Groenink *et al.,* 1993;

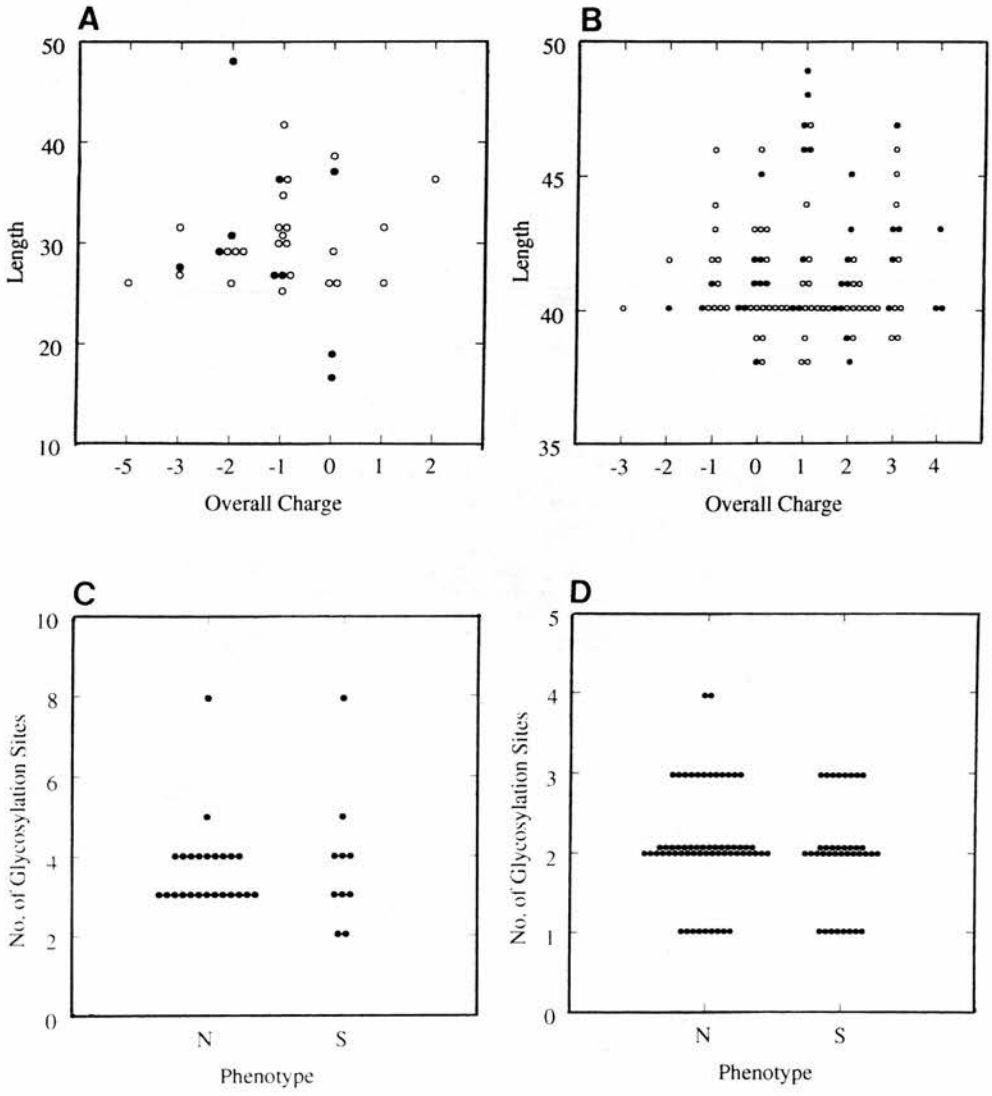


FIG 14. Comparison of the relationship between charge, length and glycosylation of V1 and V2 domains with the experimentally determined *in vitro* phenotype of previously described HIV isolates. (A), (B): charge and length for V1 and V2 domain respectively; symbols: "○": NSI isolates; "●": SI isolates. (C), (D): number of potential N-linked glycosylation sites for V1 and V2 regions respectively. (see Appendix V).

Wong *et al.,* 1995; Cornelissen *et al.,* 1995), were analysed collectively and the overall charge and length were compared (see Appendix V). There was considerable variability in the overall charge of both V1 (-5 to +2) and V2 (-3 to +4) and in the length (V1: 16 to 49 amino acids; V2: 38 to 61 amino acids). They also differed in the position and number of several of the potential N-linked glycosylation sites, although some were highly conserved, as were the cysteine residues that maintain the structure of the V1 and V2 loops (Leonard *et al.,* 1990). However, there was no systematic difference in these properties between NSI, macrophage tropic isolates and SI variants in either of these regions.

It has also been shown that V1 and V2 regions of gp120 can act as targets for neutralizing antibodies (Warrier *et al.,* 1994; van Tijn *et al.,* 1989; Ho *et al.,* 1991; Yoshiyama *et al.,* 1994; Moore *et al.,* 1993; Gorny *et al.,* 1994; Fung *et al.,* 1992; Sullivan *et al.,* 1993). Monoclonal antibodies with virus neutralizing activity have been mapped to the V2 region by binding to peptides corresponding to V2 sequences (Fung *et al.,* 1992; McKeating *et al.,* 1993), mutational analysis (Sullivan *et al.,* 1993) and by competition with previously mapped anti-V2 monoclonal antibodies (Jeang *et al.,* 1993). Consequently, linear, conformational and glycan dependent epitopes have been detected.

Finally, it has been suggested that the existence of functional interactions between V1/V2 hypervariable regions and other regions of gp120 are essential for viral infectivity and syncytium induction (Cho *et al.,* 1996; Willey *et al.,* 1989; Andeweg *et al.,* 1993; Freed *et al.,* 1994). Willey *et al.*, have previously shown that substitution of an asparagine with a glutamine in the C2 region of gp120

generated a non-infectious virus (Willey *et al.,* 1988), however revertant virions were found to emerge during long term coculture. Sequence analysis of these revertants revealed the substitution of an asparagine for a serine in the V2 region of gp120 compensating for the substitution in the C2 region and restoring virion infectivity (Willey *et al.,* 1989). In another study, substitution of a tyrosine by a histidine at position 435 in the C4 region of gp120 prevented the binding of two conformational dependent anti-V1/V2 monoclonal antibodies. However, both monoclonal antibodies were able to bind the V1/V2 region in the absence of C4 suggesting that this region may affect the structure of the V1/V2 region (McKeating *et al.,* 1993). Wang *et al.*, have shown that substitution of a valine with an isoleucine at position 84 in C1 can compensate for amino acid substitutions in the V1/V2 regions which impair virus infectivity, demonstrating that the V1/V2 regions can functionally interact with C1 also (Wang *et al.,* 1996).

Compared with the extensive analysis of V3 genetic variability *in vivo* and *in vitro*, there are few corresponding studies of the V1 and V2 regions. Analysis of the V1/V2 regions is more arduous since both these regions display extensive length variation as a result of insertions, deletions and duplications. This extensive length variation can occur within epidemiologically related groups and indeed within infected individuals making alignment of sequences far more difficult. In this study, I have used nucleotide sequencing and length polymorphism analysis (LPA) to investigate correlations between variability of V1 and V2 regions with disease stage and tissue origin. Tissues from various lymphoid and non-lymphoid organs were obtained at autopsy from a number of HIV-1 positive individuals.

Phylogenetic analysis of V1 and V2 hypervariable regions was carried out in order to explore the *in vivo* distribution of the various lineages of HIV-1 present in each tissue. I also investigated whether any specific sequence characteristics existed which could differentiate between individuals at different stages of disease, or between different infected tissues.

4.2 STATISTICAL ANALYSIS.

Sequence comparisons between viruses from three of the study subjects (P4, 5 and 6) were made in the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions. The V1 and V2 region amplified began at nucleotide 6539 of HXB2 and extended to position 6976. The length of the V1 and V2 regions used for sequence comparisons were 142 and 193 nucleotides respectively. Unrooted phylogenetic trees based upon uncorrected pairwise distances between nucleotide sequences obtained from lymph node, lung and brain samples from study subjects 4, 5 and 6 were constructed by a combination of the MEGA package (Kumar *et al.,* 1993) and the PHYLIP package, using the programs SEQBOOT, NEIGHBOR and DRAWTREE (version 3.5; Felsenstein, 1989). Statistical analysis was performed with the Mann-Whitney U test and data considered statistically significantly different when $p< 0.05$ (SYSTAT version 5.0 package).

4.3 RESULTS.

4.3.1 INTRA-SAMPLE VARIATION IN V1 AND V2 HYPERVARIABLE REGIONS.

I compared the 87 V1 and V2 amino acid sequences from the three HIV infected individuals who died in AIDS (Fig 15a-15c), and found a high degree of variability in both of these regions, although it was less pronounced in the V2 region. Four cysteine residues defined a double loop structure in V1 and V2 (Leonard *et al.,* 1990) and were uniformly conserved in all sequences (residues 10, 15, 56 and 108). Considerable diversity was observed in the V1 hypervariable region both within and between individuals. The V2 hypervariable region, although showing a great deal of interpatient variation, was less variable than the V1 region within individuals. Few identical amino acid sequences were isolated from the same individual. For example, in p4 a total of 37 sequences (brain-12, lymph node-10 and lung-15) were isolated and 25 of these sequences were distinct (brain-5/12, lymph node-10/10 and lung-10/15). The majority of sequence variability was located between residues 82 and 103. In the more conserved regions of the V2 hypervariable loop (residues 56 to 81 and 104 to 108) there appeared to be a bias towards the conservation of charged amino acids. For example residues 65, 66, 67, 70, 71, 77 and 79 were all well conserved both between and within individuals. However, the V1 hypervariable region showed a number of substitutions of charged

FIG 15A. Proviral V1 and V2 domain amino acid sequences from p4. All sequences are compared with HIV_{MN} sequence for V1 and V2. Symbols: ".": identity with HIV_{MN}; "-": gap introduced to preserve sequence alignment.

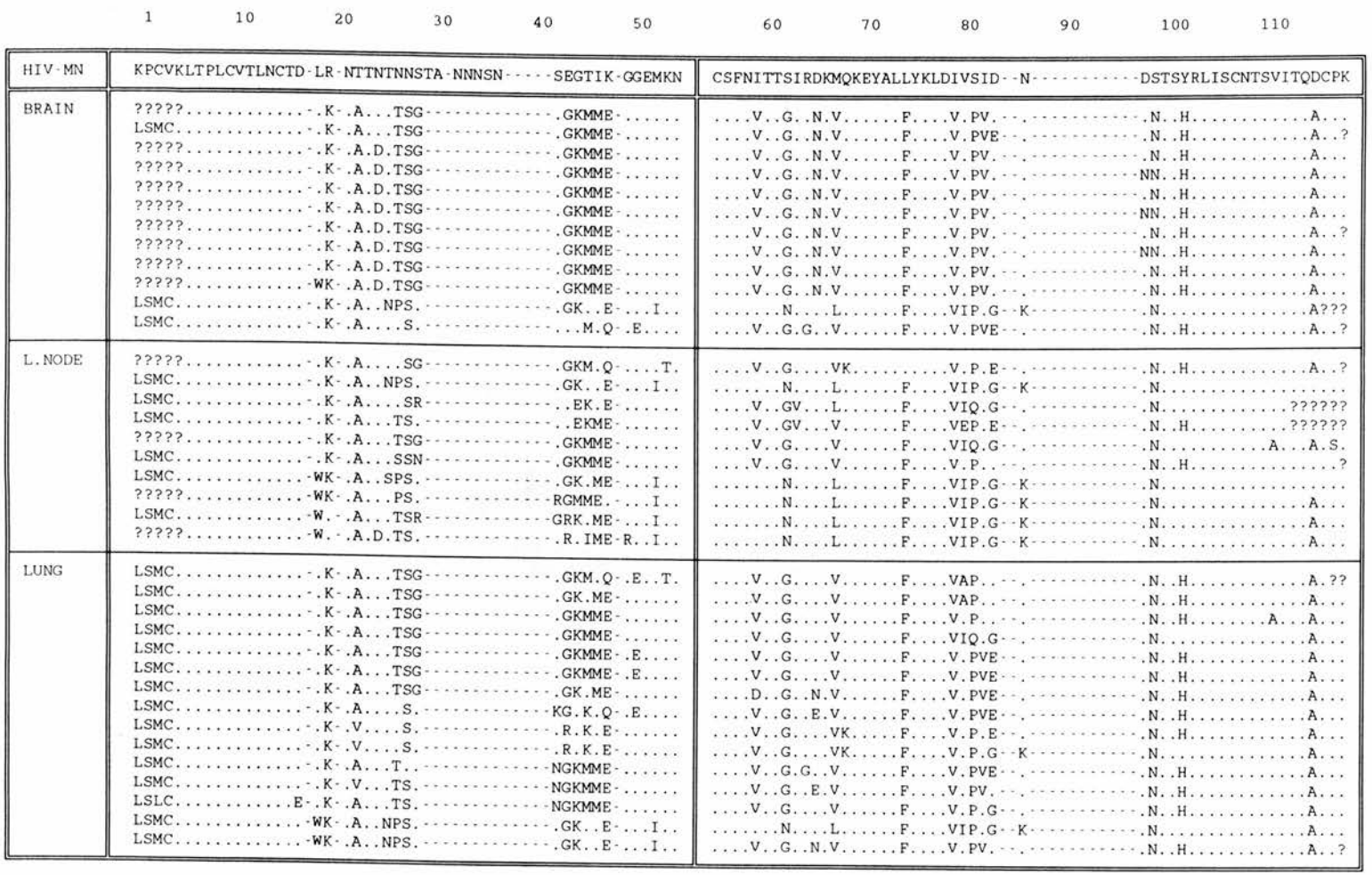

1 10 20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90 100 110
HIV-MN
KPCVKLTPLCVTLNCTD-LR-NTTNTNNSTA-NNNSN-----SEGTIK-GGEMKN
CSFNITTSIRDKMQKEYALLYKLDIVSID--N----------DSTSYRLISCNTSVITQDCPK
BRAIN
L.NODE
LUNG

FIG 15B. Proviral V1 and V2 domain amino acid sequences from p5. All sequences are compared with HIV_{MN} sequence for V1 and V2. Symbols: ".": identity with HIV_{MN}; "-": gap introduced to preserve sequence alignment.

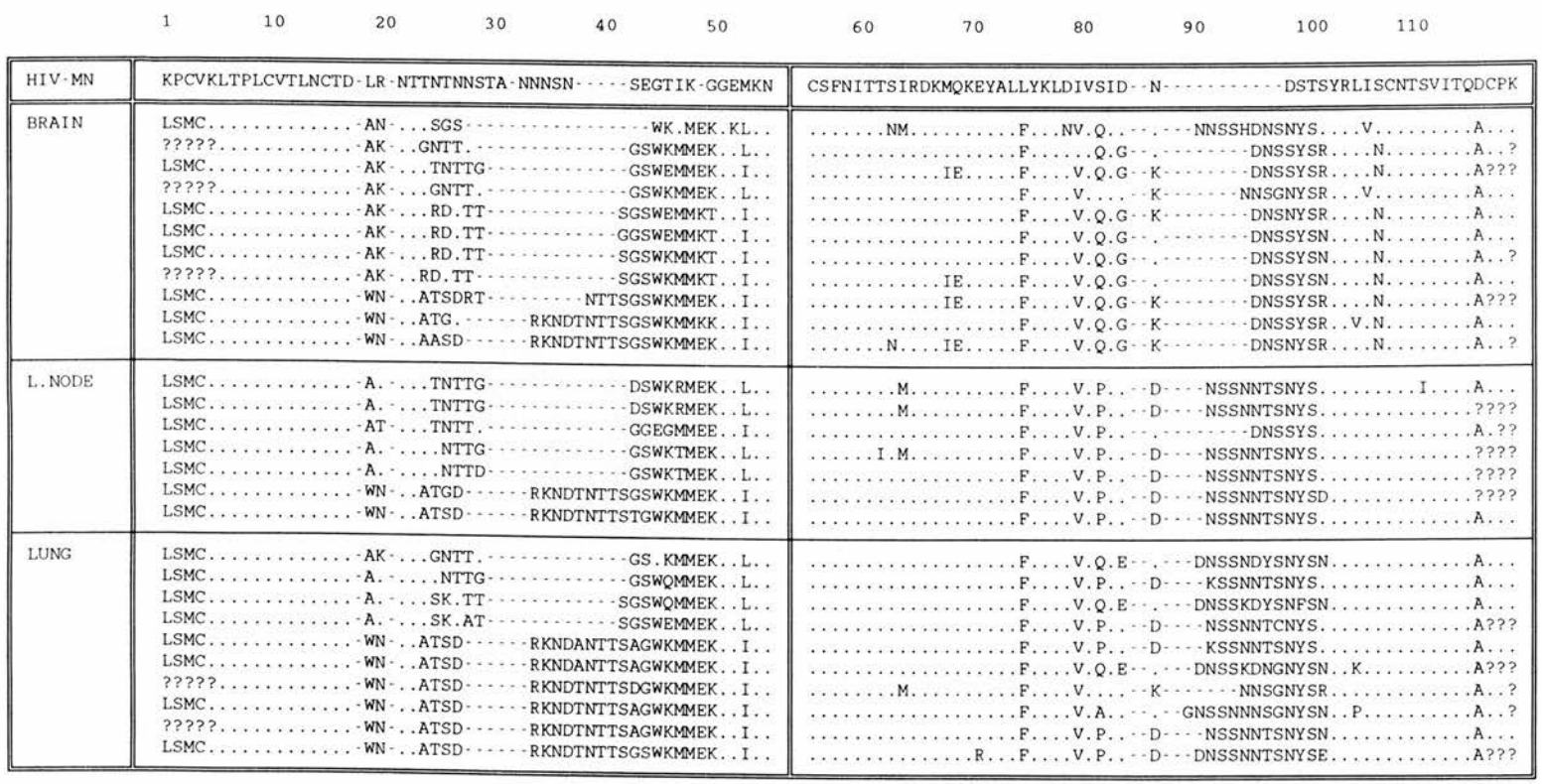
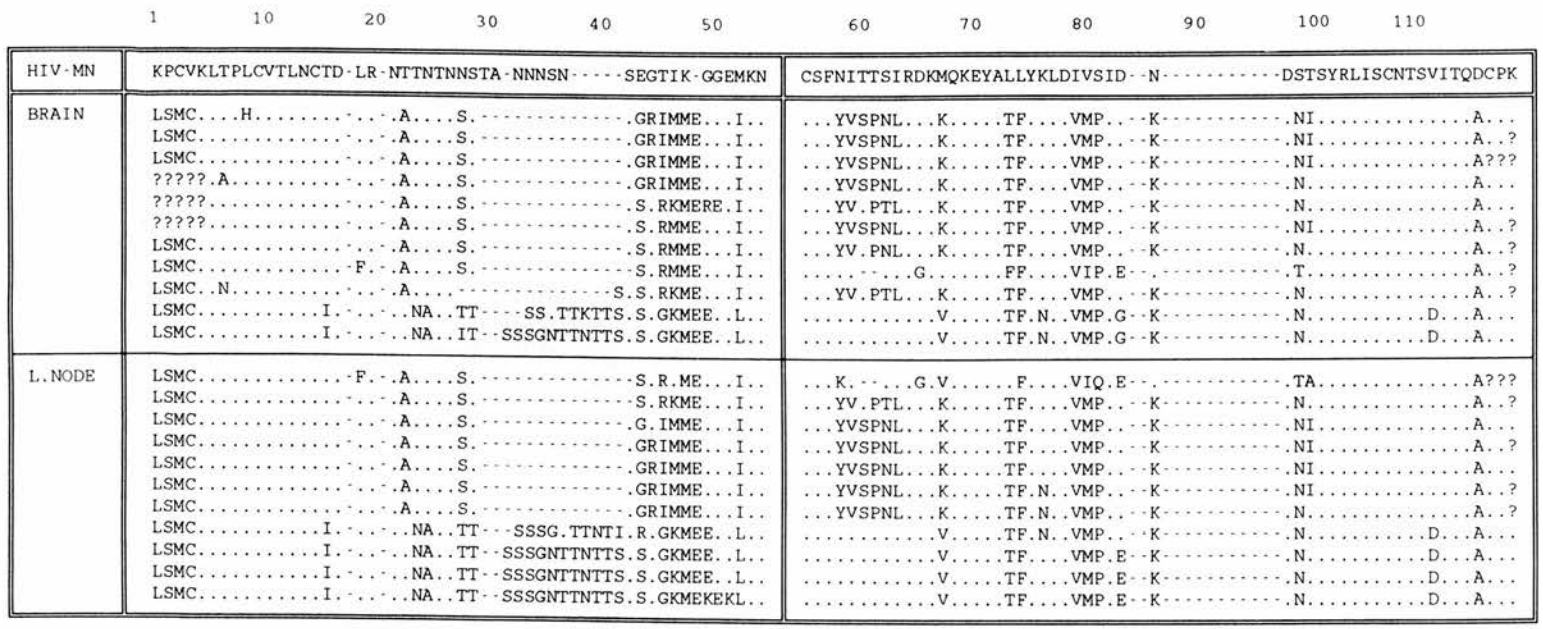

1 10 20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90 100 110
HIV-MN
KPCVKLTPLCVTLNCTD-LR-NTTNTNNSTA-NNNSN-----SEGTIK-GGEMKN
CSFNITTSIRDKMQKEYALLYKLDIVSID--N----------DSTSYRLISCNTSVITQDCPK
BRAIN
L.NODE
LUNG

FIG 15C. Proviral V1 and V2 domain amino acid sequences from p6. All sequences are compared with HIV_{MN} sequence for V1 and V2. Symbols: ".": identity with HIV_{MN}; "-": gap introduced to preserve sequence alignment.


1 10 20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90 100 110
HIV-MN
KPCVKLTPLCVTLNCTD-LR-NTTNTNNSTA-NNNSN-----SEGTIK-GGEMKN
CSFNITTSIRDKMQKEYALLYKLDIVSID--N----------DSTSYRLISCNTSVITQDCPK
BRAIN
LSMC....H.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A...
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A..?
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A???
?????.A.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.N.....A...
?????.....-..-.A....S.----------.S.RKMERE.I..
...YV.PTL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.N.....A...
?????.....-..-.A....S.----------.S.RMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A..?
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.S.RMME...I..
...YV.PNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.N.....A..?
LSMC.....F.-.A....S.----------.S.RMME...I..
.....--...G.....FF....VIP.E--.----------.T.....A..?
LSMC..N.....-..-.A....----------S.S.RKME...I..
...YV.PTL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.N.....A..?
LSMC.....I.-..-..NA..TT----SS.TTKTTS.S.GKMEE..L..
.....V.....TF.N..VMP.G--K----------.N.....D...A...
LSMC.....I.-..-..NA..IT--SSSGNTTNTTS.S.GKMEE..L..
.....V.....TF.N..VMP.G--K----------.N.....D...A...
L.NODE
LSMC.....F.-.A....S.----------S.R.ME...I..
...K.--...G.V.....F....VIQ.E--.----------.TA.....A???
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------S.RKME...I..
...YV.PTL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.N.....A..?
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.G.IMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A...
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A..?
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF....VMP...K----------.NI.....A...
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF.N..VMP...K----------.NI.....A..?
LSMC.....-..-.A....S.----------.GRIMME...I..
...YVSPNL...K.....TF.N..VMP...K----------.N.....A..?
LSMC.....I.-..-..NA..TT---SSSG.TTNTI.R.GKMEE..L..
.....V.....TF.N..VMP...K----------.N.....D...A...
LSMC.....I.-..-..NA..TT--SSSGNTTNTTS.S.GKMEE..L..
.....V.....TF....VMP.E--K----------.N.....D...A...
LSMC.....I.-..-..NA..TT--SSSGNTTNTTS.S.GKMEE..L..
.....V.....TF....VMP.E--K----------.N.....D...A...
LSMC.....I.-..-..NA..TT--SSSGNTTNTTS.S.GKMEKEKL..
.....V.....TF....VMP.E--K----------.N.....D...A...

amino acids. There were however three charged amino acid residues that were well conserved in the V1 region (residues 17, 52 and 54) which were located in close proximity to the two cysteine residues.

Both hypervariable regions had several potential N-linked glycosylation sites (N-X-S/T; N= asparagine, X= any amino acid except proline, S= serine, T= threonine) which were well conserved throughout all the sequences analysed (residues 14, 55, 59 and 109). These were located in close proximity to the cysteine residues which define both loops and therefore may be involved in maintaining the conformation of these two hypervariable regions. The V1 hypervariable region also contained a number of more variable N-linked glycosylation sites brought about by amino acid substitutions and insertions. Additional N-linked glycosylation sites were observed in some V2 sequences from insertions in the more variable region (residues 82 to 103). In addition, the V1 region contained a number of serine/threonine rich insertions which may lead to the addition of O-linked carbohydrates (see discussion).

4.3.2 V1 AND V2 SEQUENCE VARIABILITY AND TISSUE TROPISM.

I compared the overall charge (Fig 16A-16F), length of variants (Fig 17A-17F) and number of potential glycosylation sites (Fig 18A-18F) of V1 and V2 sequences obtained from the three study subjects (see Appendix VI). For p4 and p5, there was some evidence for differences in charge between variants from brain compared with lymph node or lung (Fig 16A-16F). In p4 and p5, the calculated

FIG 16. Comparison of overall charge of V1 and V2 sequence variants from p4 (A, D), p5 (B, E) and p6 (C, F) in V1 (A, B, C) and V2 (D, E, F) regions. Significantly different distributions ($p<0.05$ using Mann-Whitney U test for non-normally distributed data) indicated by horizontal bar. BR, brain; LG, lung; LN, lymph node.(see Appendix VI).

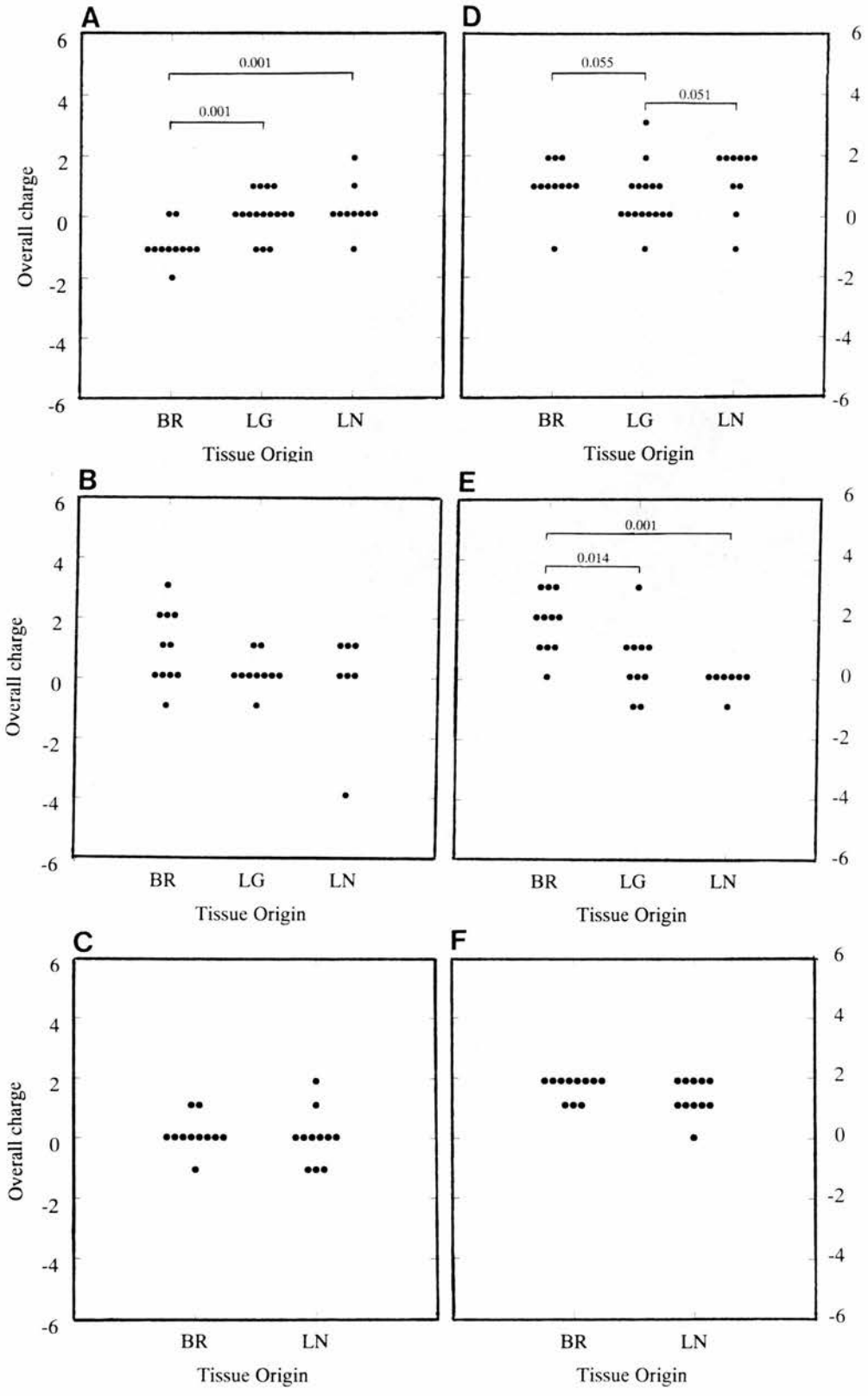

A
D
B
E
C
F
Overall charge
6
4
2
0
-2
-4
-6
0.001
0.001
0.055
0.051
0.001
0.014
BR
LG
LN
Tissue Origin

FIG 17. Comparison of overall length of V1 and V2 sequence variants from p4 (A, D), p5 (B, E) and p6 (C, F) in V1 (A, B, C) and V2 (D, E, F) regions. Significantly different distributions ($p<0.05$ using Mann-Whitney U test for non-normally distributed data) indicated by horizontal bar. BR, brain; LG, lung; LN, lymph node.(see Appendix VI).

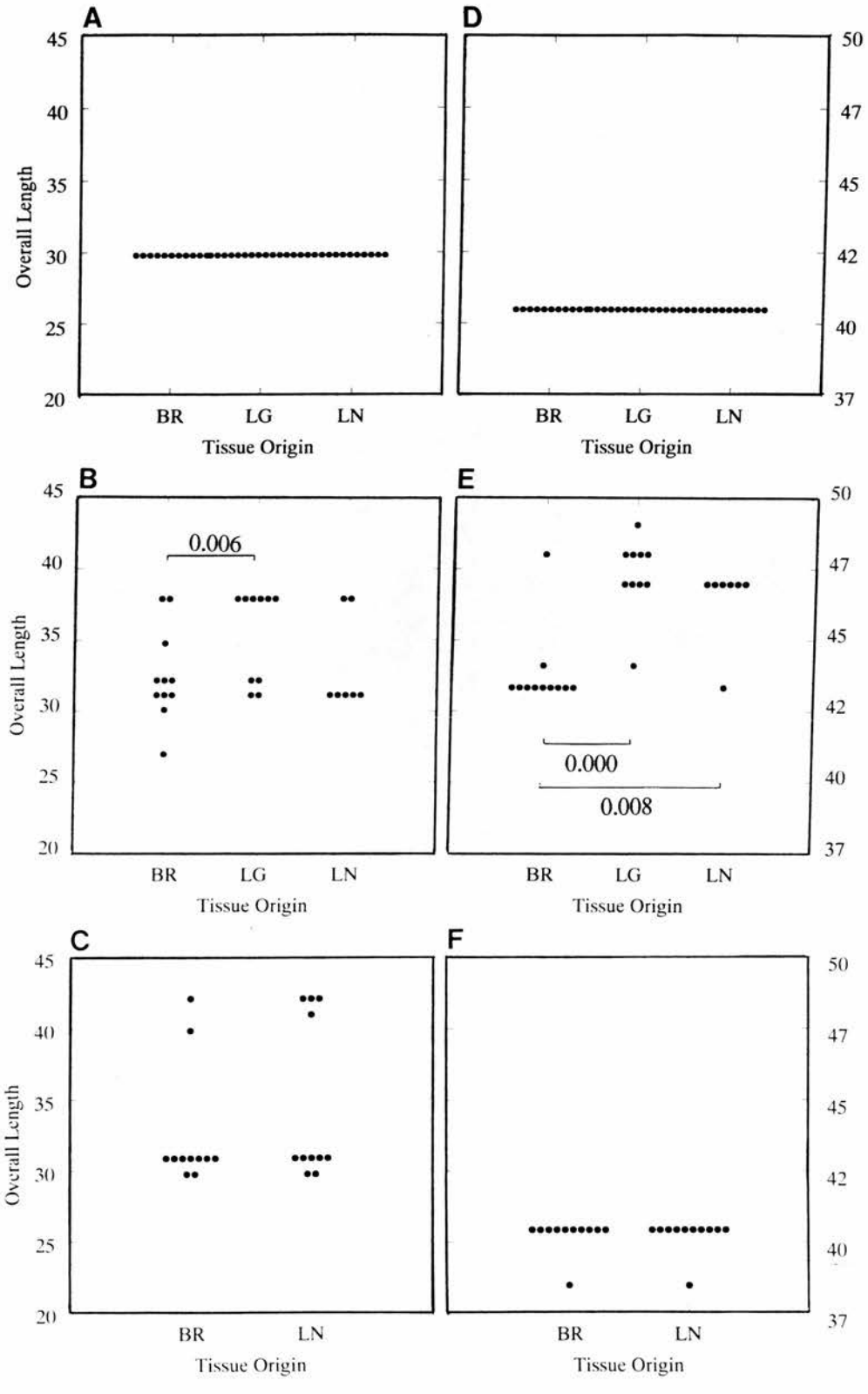
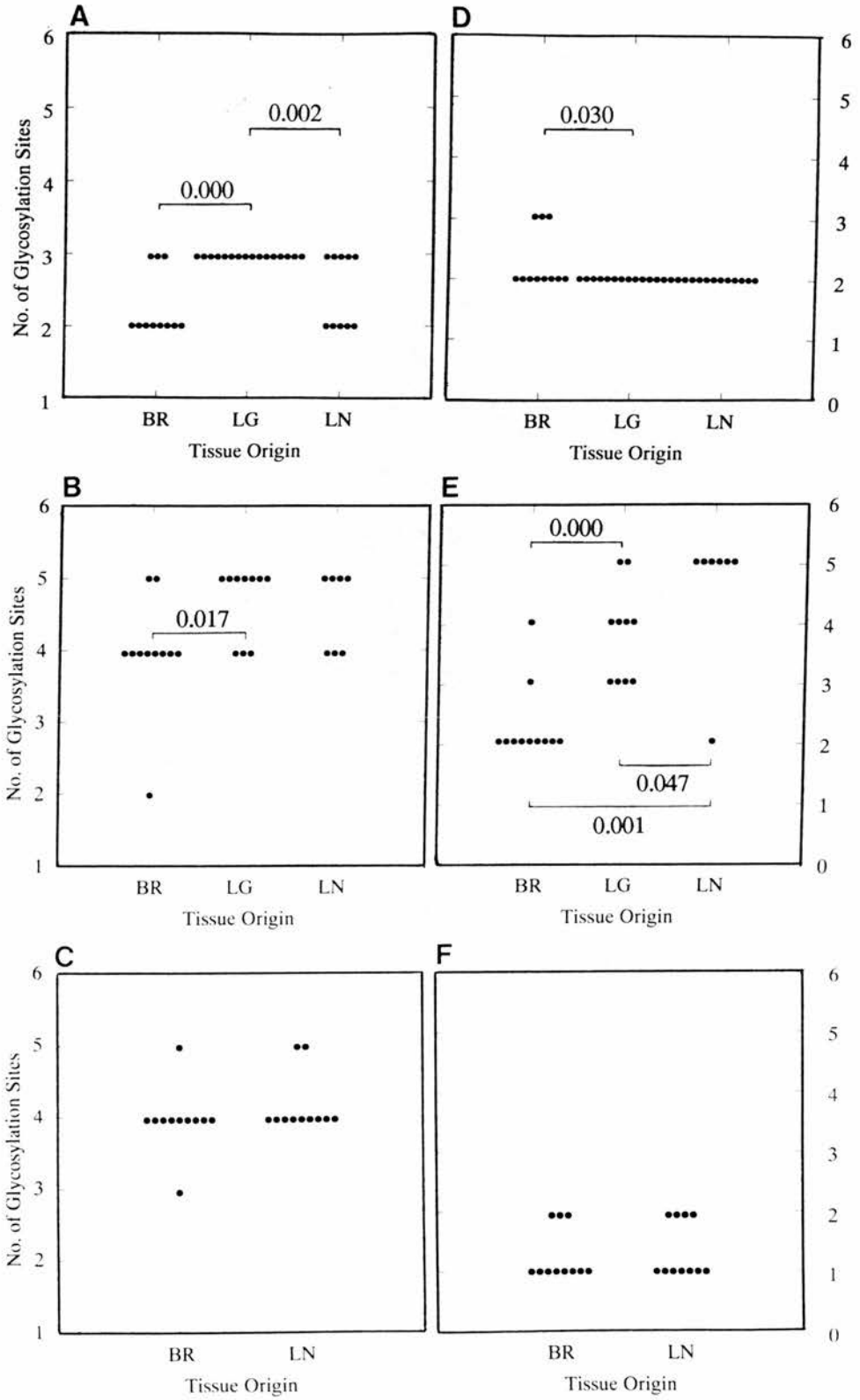

A
D
B
E
C
F
Overall Length
Tissue Origin
BR
LG
LN
0.006
0.000
0.008

FIG 18. Comparison of the number of potential N-linked glycosylation sites in V1 and V2 sequence variants from p4 (A, D), p5 (B, E) and p6 (C, F) in V1 (A, B, C) and V2 (D, E, F) regions. Significantly different distributions ($p<0.05$ using Mann-Whitney U test for non-normally distributed data) indicated by horizontal bar.BR, brain; LG, lung; LN, lymph node. (see Appendix VI).


A
D
B
E
C
F
No. of Glycosylation Sites
Tissue Origin
BR
LG
LN
0.002
0.000
0.030
0.017
0.047
0.001

overall charge of V2 of variants from the brain were significantly higher than those from the lung (p=0.055 and 0.014). In contrast, the V1 sequences from brain of p4 showed a significantly lower charge compared to variants from lymph node and lung (both p=0.001). However, this difference was not found in the other two study subjects.

No significant difference between the length of the V1 and V2 regions with tissue origin was observed for patient 4 and 6. However, in patient 5, a significant difference between brain and lung variants was observed in both V1 and V2 regions (p=0.006 and <0.001 respectively). Also, in the V2 region, lymph node variants from patient 5 were significantly longer than those from brain tissue (p=0.008; Fig 17A-17F).

The number of potential N-linked glycosylation sites were also compared in both V1 and V2 regions between tissues from each patient (Fig 18A-18F). In patients 4 and 5 a significant difference in the number of glycosylation sites in brain and lung tissues was apparent in both V1 and V2 regions. In the V1 region from patient 4 brain variants were found to have significantly fewer glycosylation sites when compared with lung variants (p=<0.001), while in the V2 region lung variants were found to have significantly fewer glycosylation sites (p=0.03). Similarly, in patient 5, brain variants in the V1 and V2 regions were found to have significantly fewer glycosylation sites than lung variants (p=0.017 and <0.001). In only one patient was there a significant difference in the number of glycosylation sites between brain and lymphoid variants. In the V2 region of patient 5 brain variants were found to have significantly fewer glycosylation sites when compared

with that of lymphoid tissues (p=0.001).

The significance of these differences is difficult to interpret as the distribution of values compared were derived from populations that were in some cases closely related genetically, therefore do not constitute independent observations. However, from this analysis, there were no obvious features from the primary sequences of V1 or V2 that correlated with tissue origin.

In the absence of any reproducible specific amino acid sequence differences between tissues, I calculated the overall degree of divergence between sequences from each individual, and used these uncorrected pairwise distances to construct unrooted neighbour-joining trees. The degree to which sequences group together in the tree was proportional to their overall similarity, while bootstrap resampling indicated the robustness of the observed groupings (Fig 19A-19C). Although there were differences between tissues in the frequencies of certain amino acids at particular sites, none were clearly associated with specific tissues. For example, in patient 4 at position 24 of the V1 domain, the majority of brain-derived sequences (8 of 11) had an aspartic acid (D) at this position, while this amino acid was absent in the majority of sequences obtained from lymph node (1 of 10) and lung (0 of 15). Similarly, at positions 65 and 83 of the V2 domain, the majority of brain-derived sequences had an asparagine (N) and valine (V) at these positions respectively. However, again these amino acids were absent in the majority of sequences derived from lymph node (position 65: 0 of 10; position 83: 0 of 10) and lung (position 65: 2 of 15; position 83: 7 of 15). In brain-derived sequences, from patient 5, the majority had a lysine (K) at position 20 (7 of 11), glutamine

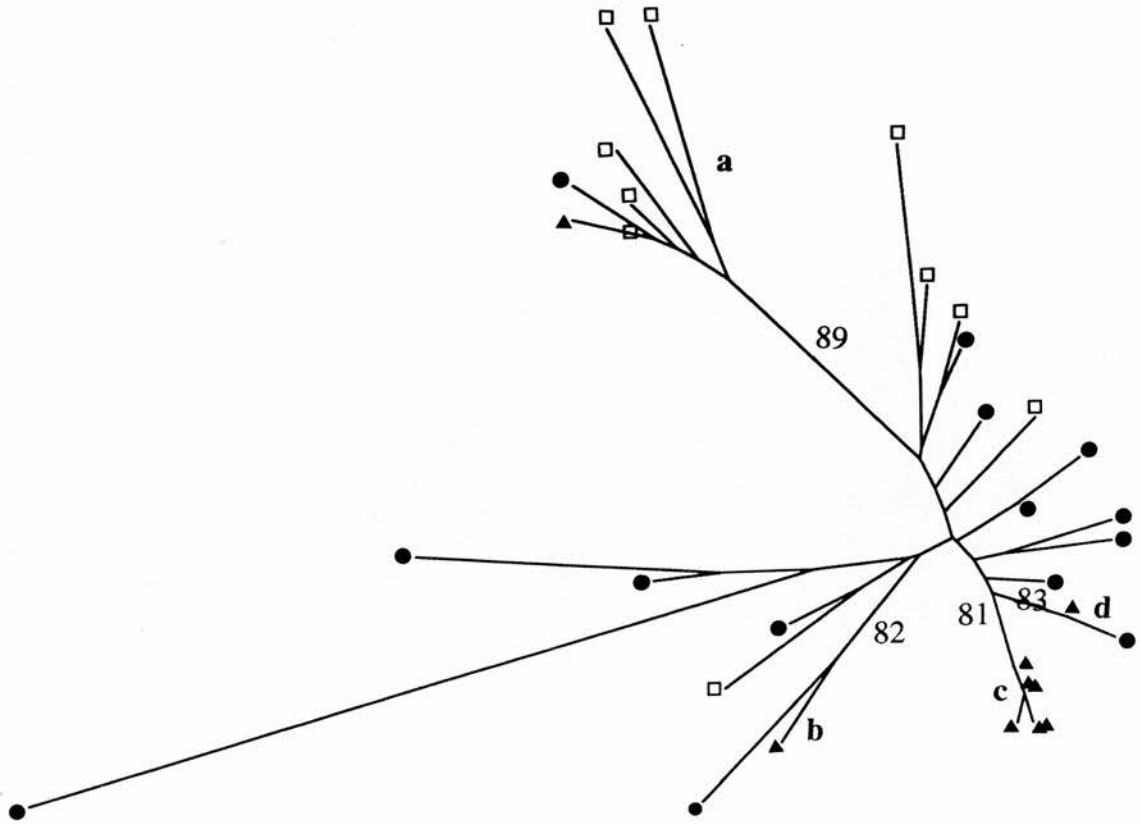


FIG 19A. Neighbour-joining trees of sequences in V1 and V2 domains from patient 4. Symbols: Brain ▲; Lymph node □; Lung ●. Bootstrap values indicate the percentage of trees showing the observed phylogenetic groupings.

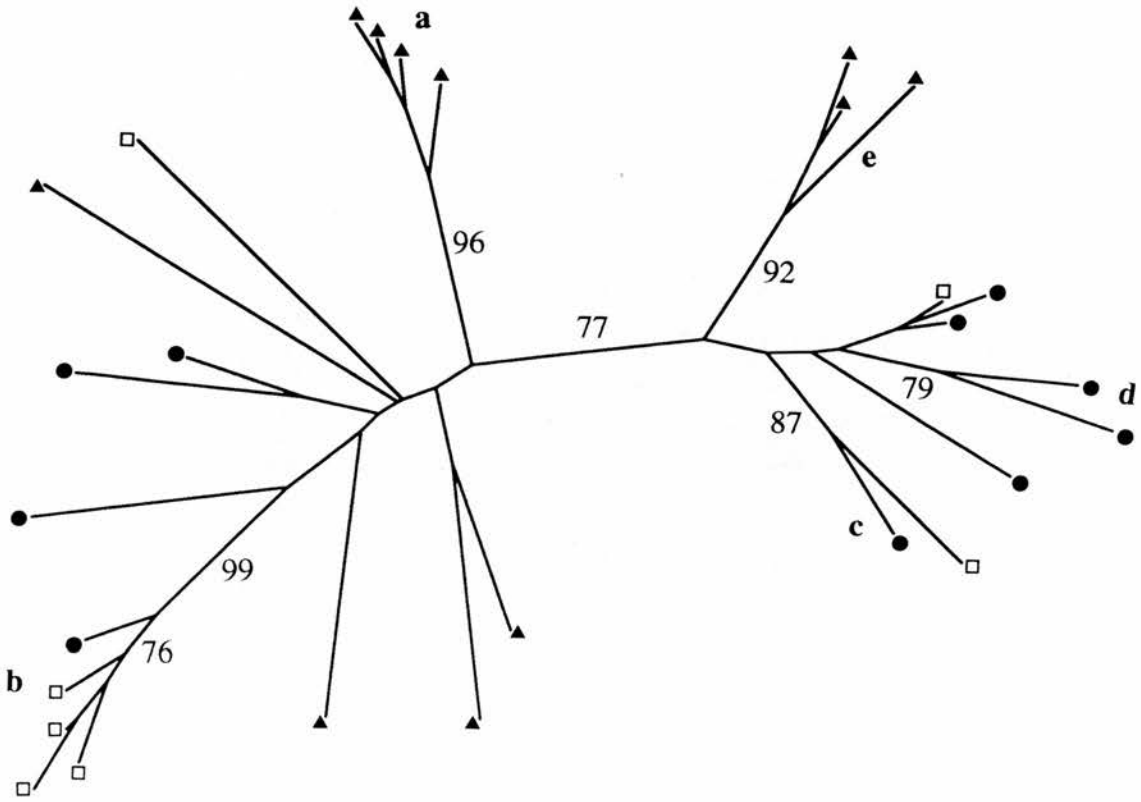


FIG 19B. Neighbour-joining trees of sequences in V1 and V2 domains from patient 5. Symbols: Brain ▲; Lymph node □; Lung ●. Bootstrap values indicate the percentage of trees showing the observed phylogenetic groupings.

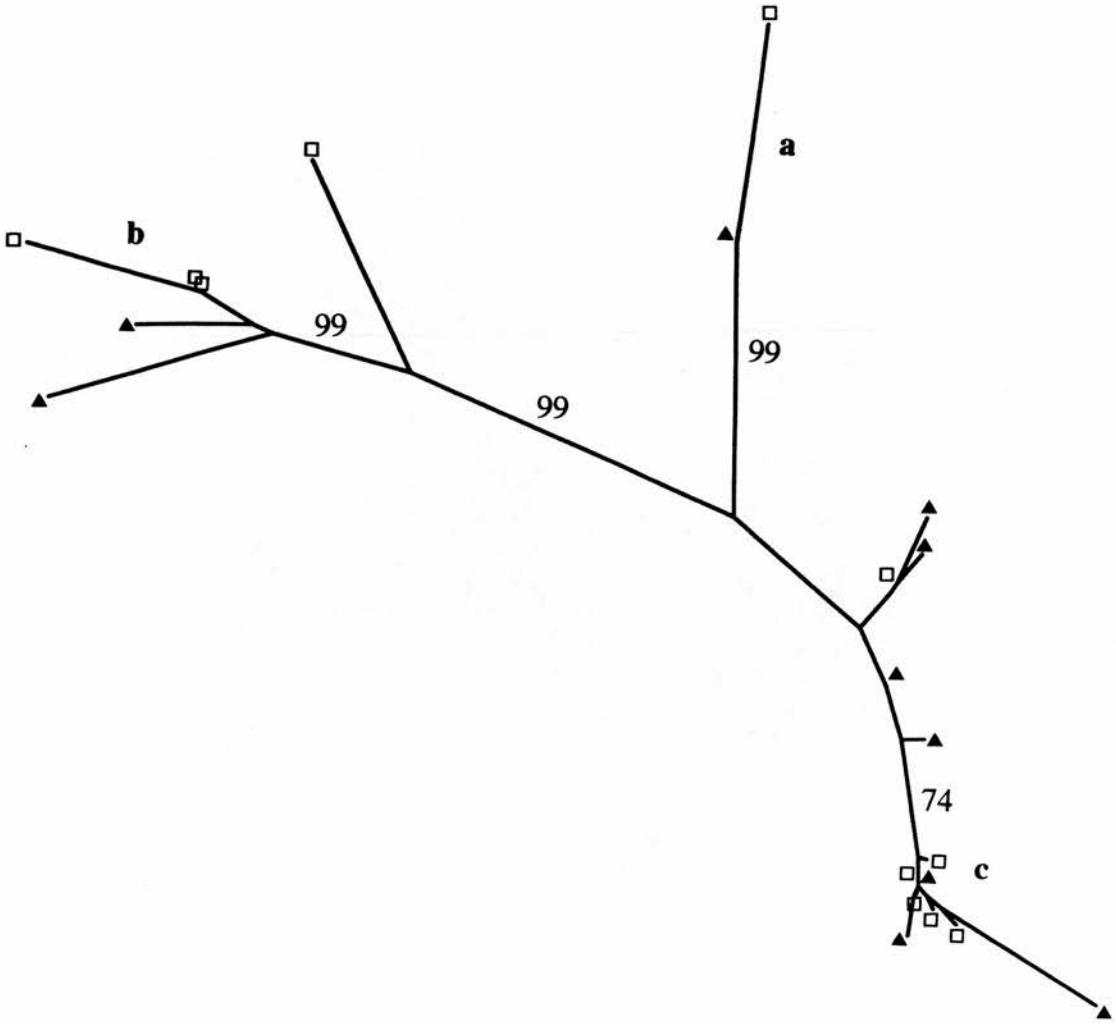


FIG 19C. Neighbour-joining trees of sequences in V1 and V2 domains from patient 6. Symbols: Brain ▲; Lymph node □. Bootstrap values indicate the percentage of trees showing the observed phylogenetic groupings.

(Q) at position 82 (10 of 11), glycine (G) at position 84 (9 of 11), arginine (R) at position 102 (7 of 11) and asparagine (N) at position 107 (9 of 11). However, the corresponding amino acids at these positions were absent in all of the lymph node-derived sequences and present as minor populations in lung-derived sequences at positions 20 (1 of 10), 82 (3 of 10) and 102 (1 of 10) only. In patient 6 there were no discernable amino acids present in the majority of brain-derived sequences when compared with those from lymph node tissue.

These differences were reflected in the phylogenetic trees constructed for each patient. For example, sequences from brain of p4 were found in all four lineages separated by high bootstrap values (Fig 19A), while, lineages a, b and d also contained a number of sequences from lymph node and lung tissue. In the other two study subjects a similar mixing of variants from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissue was observed. For example, in p5 five distinct lineages were observed separated by high bootstrap values, three of which contained sequences from lymph node and lung tissue (Fig 19B). Two lineages contained brain-derived sequences only (lineages a and e), reflecting the differences observed in the amino acid sequences (Fig 15A). In p6, each of the three lineages contained sequences obtained from brain and lymph node tissue (Fig 19C).

4.3.3 ANALYSIS OF NUMBER OF V1/V2 LENGTH VARIANTS AND DISEASE STATUS.

To investigate the accuracy of length polymorphism analysis (LPA) and its

suitability for population analysis, I compared length profiles of V1 and V2 with the range of predicted lengths derived from individual sequences obtained from the three study subjects (p4-p6). 1 μg of DNA was amplified, using nested PCR, from lymph node and brain tissue from each individual. This amplification was carried out in triplicate to demonstrate that representative populations were compared (Fig 20A-20B). A good concordance was observed between the number and length of variants obtained using LPA with the actual lengths of variants obtained from sequencing (Table 9a-9b), although LPA also detected minor variants not represented among the nucleotide sequences. From this initial investigation I found no consistent differences between lymph node and brain tissue. For example, in p4 the same length variant was observed in both tissues in V1 and V2. However, in patients 5 and 6 a number of different length variants were observed in both tissues.

Subsequently this technique was applied to examine the diversity and overall length of V1 and V2 variants infecting brain and lymphoid tissues of a larger study group (see Appendix VII and VIII). This comprised samples from 8 pre-symptomatic and 34 symptomatic individuals at time of death. Length analysis of variants from brain tissue was confined to patients with evidence of giant cell encephalitis (GCE) since low levels or undetectable frequencies of proviral sequences were observed in individuals without GCE (Bell *et al.,* 1996; Donaldson *et al.,* 1994). The number and length of variants from non-lymphoid and lymphoid tissue differed considerably between study subjects (Fig 21). I compared the number of different length variants obtained from tissues from pre-symptomatic

FIG 20A. LPA of HIV variants obtained from lymph node and brain tissue of p4, p5 and p6 for the V1 region. Sizes of bands in amino acids indicated.

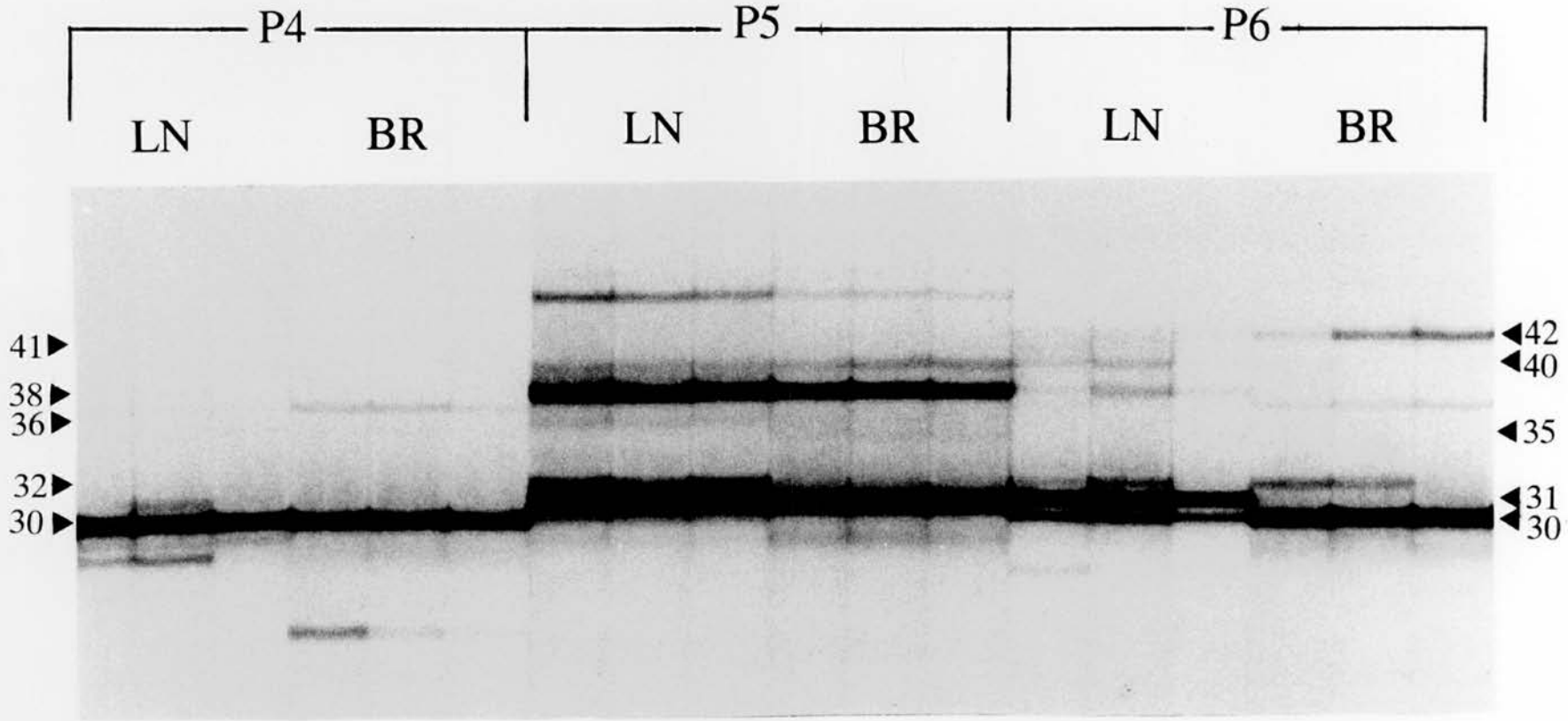

P4
P5
P6
LN
BR
LN
BR
LN
BR
41
38
36
32
30
42
40
35
31
30

FIG 20B. LPA of HIV variants obtained from lymph node and brain tissue of p4, p5 and p6 for the V2 region. Sizes of bands in amino acids indicated.

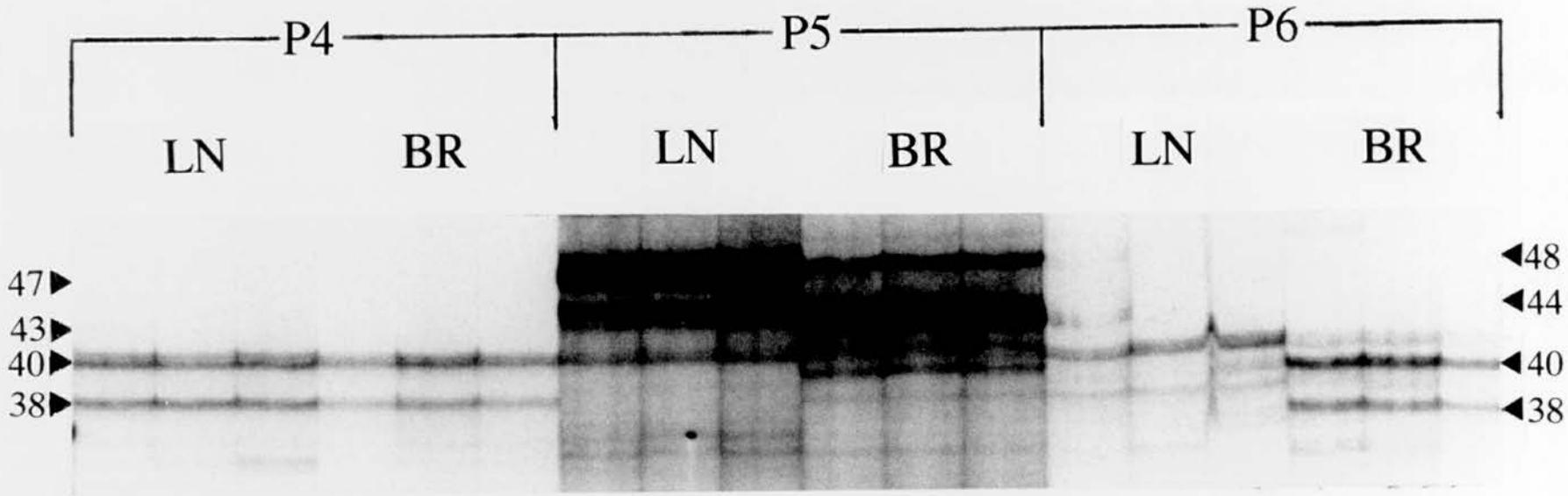

P4
P5
P6
LN
BR
LN
BR
LN
BR
47
43
40
38
48
44
40
38

TABLE 9.

COMPARISON OF LENGTHS OF V1 AND V2 OBTAINED BY LPA COMPARED WITH DIRECT SEQUENCING

A) V1 Region

Subject No.[b]	Organ	Observed lengths by LPA[a]										No.[b]	Actual lengths[c]										
		27	30	31	32	35	36	38	40	41	42		27	30	31	32	35	36	38	40	41	42	
p4	LN		✚									1		12									1
	BR		✚									1		10									1
p5	LN			✚	+		+	+				4			5			2					2
	BR			✚	+	+	+	+				5			1	1	3	3	1		2		6
p6	LN		+	✚					+	+	+	5		2	5						1	3	4
	BR		✚	+					+		+	4		2	7					1		1	4

B) V2 Region

Subject	Organ	Observed lengths							No.	Actual lengths							No.
		38	40	41	43	44	47	48		38	40	41	43	44	47	48	
p4	LN	+	✚						2		12						1
	BR	+	✚						2		10						1
p5	LN		+		+	+	✚	+	5				1		6		2
	BR		+		✚	+		+	4				9	1		1	3
p6	LN	+	✚						2	1	10						2
	BR	+	✚						2	1	10						2

[a]The Heavy cross (✚) indicates more prominent bands on LPA (see Fig. 5)
[b]Total number of different length variants detected by LPA or by direct sequencing
[c]Figures refer to the number of sequences obtained for each length

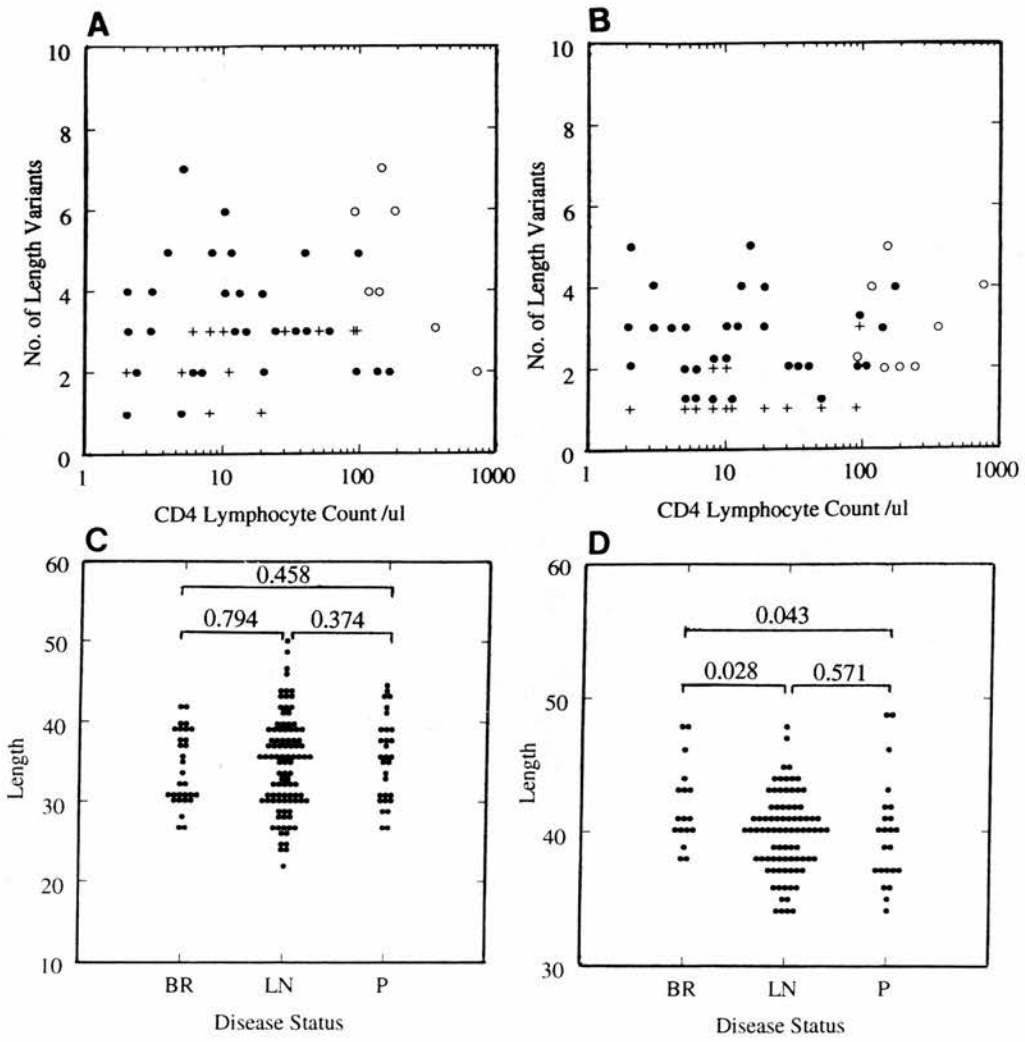


FIG 21. Plot of CD4 lymphocyte count -v- population diversity as determined by LPA in V1 (A) and V2 (B) regions; Symbols: "+" Brain from study subjects with GCE; "●": lymph node from study subjects with AIDS; "○": lymph node from pre-symptomatic individuals at times of death. (C, D): Comparison of the distribution of length variants observed in brain from study subjects with GCE (BR), lymph nodes from study subjects with AIDS (LN) and from pre-symptomatic individuals at time of death (P) for V1 (C) and V2 (D). (see Appendix VII).

and symptomatic individuals with CD4 count and found no significant difference between each group in either the V1 or V2 region (Fig 21A-21B). Similarly there was no correlation between the length of variants with disease status (Fig 21C-21D). However, the V2 region was on average longer amongst variants from brain compared to those from lymph node from symptomatic and pre-symptomatic study subjects, although their ranges overlapped considerably (p=0.028 and 0.043 respectively). Furthermore, variants from brain showed a significantly lower number of length variants (diversity) than those from lymph node of symptomatic patients in the V2 region (mean number of length variants in brain: 1.3 and lymph node: 2.5; p= 0.00), and pre-symptomatic patients in both V1 and V2 (mean number of length variants, V1: 4.1; V2: 3; p=0.039 and 0.00 respectively; Fig 21A-21B).

4.4 DISCUSSION.

4.4.1 LACK OF TISSUE SPECIFIC GROUPING BY SEQUENCE VARIATIONS IN V1 AND V2 HYPERVARIABLE DOMAINS.

This study was carried out to analyse tissue distribution and interpatient variability of V1 and V2 hypervariable domains of HIV-1. A number of V1 and V2 sequence variants from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues were analyzed from three HIV infected individuals dying in AIDS. Examination of primary sequences revealed no specific amino acid motifs in either the V1 or V2 regions that

correlated with tissue origin. A great deal of length diversity was observed within the V1 and V2 regions associated with either the addition or removal of potential N-linked glycosylation sites.

The V1 and V2 regions may be determinants of HIV-1 tropism and a number of studies have suggested that these two regions may be involved in determining the phenotype of the virus. However, there is little evidence to support the antigenicity of the V1 region. Van Tijn *et al.*, (1989) reported the detection of antibodies to a V1 peptide, corresponding to residues 19 to 34 in our numbering system, in 8 acutely infected individuals. From the three patients analysed here a number of amino acid changes can be seen within this region, although the vast majority of sequences contain 2 or 3 glycosylation sites which may effect envelope conformation. Indeed, Gram *et al.*, recently reported that the lack of an N-linked glycosylation site in the V1 loop rendered the mutant virus less sensitive to neutralization by V3 monoclonal antibodies and soluble CD4, suggesting the degree of glycosylation in the V1 region may modulate the tertiary structure of gp120 (Gram *et al.,* 1994). Moore *et al.*, have described a strong linear epitope, between residues 40 and 51 in our numbering system, recognized by antibodies from the serum of an infected lab worker (Moore *et al.,* 1993a). However, this region is highly variable in the three patients examined here and may therefore be highly type specific.

A number of neutralization epitopes (linear, conformation dependent and glycan dependent) have been identified in the V2 region (Jeang *et al.,* 1993; Sullivan *et al.,* 1993; Fung *et al.,* 1992; McKeating *et al.,* 1993). Warrier *et al.*,

described a novel glycan-dependent epitope in the V2 region encompassing residues 60 to 67 in our numbering system (Warrier *et al.,* 1994). Similarly, McKeating *et al.*, described a linear epitope within this region of V2 (residues 60 to 70 in our numbering system; McKeating *et al.,* 1993). This region is relatively well conserved within each of the patients described in this study. In patient 4, however an asparagine (N) at position 65 is prominent in brain isolates (10 of 12) but rare in lung (2 of 15) and absent in lymph node isolates (0 of 10). This amino acid was reported to have functional relevance in the C108G epitope described by Warrier *et al,* (Warrier *et al.,* 1994), suggesting this region may be of importance during infection. McKeating *et al.*, have also described a number of conformational epitopes located in the carboxy-terminal of the V2 loop (McKeating *et al.,* 1993). The carboxy-terminal from the 3 patients studied here show some degree of variability, although there was a preponderance towards the presence of a charged residue at position 87. Patients 4 and 6 contained an N-linked glycosylation site within this region which is conserved throughout all the sequences in these two patients. Similarly, patient 5 was highly glycosylated within this region (1 to 4 CHO sites). These features may therefore contribute to the maintenance of antigenic epitopes. Indeed if these epitopes are well exposed on the virion surface, as proposed, extensive glycosylation may help to mask these regions facilitating escape from the immune response.

Carbohydrate residues have previously been implicated in the adhesion of the gp120 molecule to CD4 (Matthews *et al.,* 1987). Using enzymatic deglycosylation Bernstein *et al.* (Bernstein *et al.,* 1994) found evidence for the

modification of gp120 by O-linked carbohydrates in addition to N-linked carbohydrates. Unlike N-linked glycosylation there is no defined sequence for O-linked glycosylation and the sites for carbohydrate addition were not experimentally determined. However, studies of simian immunodeficiency virus (SIV) have documented extended sequences, in the region homologous to V1 in gp120 of HIV-1, rich in serine and threonine residues (TTTSTTT), that resemble known O-linked glycosylation sites in other proteins (Jentoft, 1990; Overbaugh *et al.,* 1992). In this study serine/threonine rich insertions were observed in the V1 region which, although differing in sequence to those found in variants of SIV, may lead to the addition of O-linked as well as N-linked carbohydrates. This may be an important factor for the infectivity of HIV-1 as a number of diverse functions have been attributed to carbohydrate post translational modifications including cell recognition and cell adhesion (Paulson, 1989; Brandley *et al.,* 1986), escape from immunological constraints (Ezekowitz *et al.,* 1989) and reduced ability to bind antibody (Davis *et al.,* 1990). Syncytium formation by HIV-1 has also been shown to be blocked by antibodies to O-linked carbohydrate structures (Hansen *et al.,* 1991). Therefore, glycosylation of hypervariable regions may play an important role in the infectivity and pathogenicity of HIV-1.

4.4.2 RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN V1 AND V2 SEQUENCES AND TISSUE DISTRIBUTION.

To examine the tissue distribution of these variants unrooted neighbour-

joining trees were constructed. Numerous independent lineages were observed containing sequences from non-lymphoid tissues such as brain and lung mixed with those from lymphoid tissues. A number of these groupings were confirmed by bootstrap resampling analysis (Fig 19A-19C). This lack of tissue specific groupings of V1/V2 domains was consistent with a previous study of the evolutionary analysis and tissue distribution of the $p17_{gag}$ region and flanking regions of V1 and V2 from the same three individuals (Hughes *et al.,* 1997). In this previous study I found multiple evolutionary lineages in both of these regions of the HIV-1 genome. Using the $p17_{gag}$ region the time of diversification of *in vivo* variants from brain tissue was estimated at 4.1 to 6.2 years, suggesting infection of brain tissue may occur as an early event in disease preceding the onset of AIDS. The lack of organ specific groupings contrasts with previous comparisons in the V3 region in both my own and other investigations (Niedrig *et al.,* 1994; Reddy *et al.,* 1996; Ball *et al.,* 1994; Power *et al.,* 1994; Epstein *et al.,* 1991; Donaldson *et al.,* 1994) and may reflect different rates of sequence turnover in different tissues, combined with different constraints on the sequence of V3 for infectivity in different cell types (see chapter 3). This explanation would suggest that due to the lack of segregation of V1 and V2 sequences observed in this study, these two regions of the HIV-1 genome do not influence the tropism of HIV-1 to the same extent as V3 or do so in such a way that is not apparent from comparisons of primary amino acid sequences (see below).

Many phenotypic differences between isolates of HIV-1, such as syncytium induction have been mapped to V3, where it has been shown that SI variants

generally have a higher overall charge and a greater number of amino acid differences from the consensus subtype B sequence (Millich *et al.,* 1993). However, there is currently a consensus view that V2 (and V1) sequences of NSI and SI variants do not consistently differ from each other in overall charge, length or number of potential glycosylation sites (Fouchier *et al.,* 1995; Palmer *et al.,* 1996; Wang *et al.,* 1995; Cornelissen *et al.,* 1995). In this study, a similar lack of correlation was found between charge, length and number of potential glycosylation sites amongst variants amplified from different tissues. There was no evidence for any specific amino acid motif that correlated with tissue origin in either the V1 or V2 domains, nor a difference in length of V2 between pre-symptomatic and AIDS study subjects, despite the greater frequency of isolation of SI variants from the latter group.

These findings suggest that both V1 and V2 may be irrelevant to tissue tropism of HIV-1 or may contribute in a more subtle way undetectable by examination of primary sequences. For example, several studies have shown that V1 and V2 domains may co-operate with other regions of the envelope protein in determining cellular tropism of HIV-1 (McKeating *et al.,* 1993; Sullivan *et al.,* 1993; Koito *et al.,* 1995; Wyatt *et al.,* 1995; Andeweg *et al.,* 1993; Freed *et al.,* 1994; Koito *et al.,* 1994; Carrillo *et al.,* 1996; Groenink *et al.,* 1993). It seems unlikely that genomic regions which have been shown to influence viral infectivity and post binding events should not somehow influence cytopathology and tissue tropism. However, the evident degree of sequence flexibility tolerated by the virus in these regions may obscure the residues that determine these properties.

Comparison of the rates of synonymous and nonsynonymous substitutions in the V1 and V2 regions of *env* produced d_N/d_S ratios of 0.75, 0.73 and 0.97 for p4, p5 and p6 respectively. Similar values for the V1 and V2 regions were found in a previous study examining the relationship of HIV-1 infection between maternal and infant strains (Lamers *et al.,* 1993). These ratios do not suggest strong positive or negative selection for sequence change acting on this region overall, being similar to previous estimates for the whole *env* gene (Wolfs *et al.,* 1990; Li *et al.,* 1988). The ratios are higher than previous estimates of around 0.4 in these study subjects (Hughes *et al.,* 1997) and others (Gojobori *et al.,* 1990b; Myers *et al.,* 1992b; Li *et al.,* 1988b; Kasper *et al.,* 1995b) for $p17_{gag}$, a region characterised by a high frequency of silent substitutions and conservative amino acid replacements. Ratios substantially greater than 1.0 imply positive selection, for example sequence comparisons of the V3 region has produced ratios of 1.5 to 2.9 (Lukashov *et al.,* 1995; Simmonds *et al.,* 1990). However, it is difficult to base conclusions for V1 and V2 on a single figure as the region probably contains a combination of functionally critical amino acids (such as the cysteine residues), those where variation is neutral in effect and those which may be subject to positive selection.

Immune recognition may play a major role in positive selection for antigenic variants of HIV-1, not only for cytotoxic T cell recognition (Phillips *et al.,* 1991), but also from neutralising antibody recognising antigenic determinants in gp120. It has previously been suggested that the frequent insertions and deletions within V4 and V5 and the variability in the position and number of glycosylation sites may be mechanisms by which peptide epitopes are shielded from an evolving

immune response (Simmonds *et al.,* 1990b). This hypothesis appears even more likely for V1 and V2, given the existence of neutralising epitopes in this region (Warrier *et al.,* 1994; Ho *et al.,* 1991; Yoshiyama *et al.,* 1994; Moore *et al.,* 1993; Gorny *et al.,* 1994; Sullivan *et al.,* 1993; Fung *et al.,* 1992; van Tijn *et al.,* 1989).

4.4.3 DOES THE DIVERSITY OF V1 AND V2 SEQUENCE VARIANTS CORRELATE WITH DISEASE PROGRESSION?

A method to compare populations of HIV variants by high resolution gel electrophoresis of DNA sequences amplified across the V4 and V5 hypervariable regions has previously been described (Simmonds *et al.,* 1990b). Length profiles obtained in this way correlated well with the length obtained by sequencing of single molecules isolated at limiting dilution. In the current study, I applied the method of LPA to the V1 and V2 domains on variants amplified from non-lymphoid and lymphoid tissues from the three study subjects. Different length variants amplified from single molecules were equally represented in the analysis of length polymorphisms (Fig 20).

LPA provides only a partial description of the variability within a sample. Whereas each length variant represent a different amino acid sequence, often quite diverse sequences may have the same overall length, as was the case for p4 in V2 (Fig 21B). However, because such a large population can be amplified, less frequent variants visible as minor bands on the gel were frequently detected using LPA that were not detected by the amplification of single molecules, and in this

respect the method therefore provides a more complete analysis of diversity than sequencing based approaches (Table 9; Fig 20). Furthermore, LPA allows the rapid comparison of a large number of samples, providing a method to investigate the relationship between disease progression and tissue origin with population diversity on a greater range of samples than previously attempted. Although specific amino acid changes can not be detected by LPA, related techniques such as the heteroduplex mobility assays (Delwart *et al.,* 1993) that have been used to investigate *in vivo* variability do not differentiate between the majority of substitutions that are silent from those that change amino acid sequences. Variability in these assays can therefore also not be precisely equated to changes that influence virus phenotype.

Previous studies have observed an association between the isolation of SI variants with an increased rate in disease progression (Tersmette *et al.,* 1988; Richman *et al.,* 1994; Connor *et al.,* 1994). However, to date, sequence comparisons of variants *in vivo* have found little evidence for the existence of high frequencies of variants with an predicted SI phenotype based upon sequence comparisons in V3 (Lukashov *et al.,* 1995; Wolinsky *et al.,* 1996), including those of the study subjects described here (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994a). Wolinsky *et al.,* found no specific amino acid motifs associated with the appearance of variants with an SI phenotype in the V3 region from study subjects with evidence of both rapid T cell loss and stable T cell counts (Wolinsky *et al.,* 1996). Therefore, although *in vitro* studies have suggested an increase in viral virulence may predetermine the rate of disease progression there seems to be little *in vivo*

evidence to corroborate this hypothesis.

The "antigenic diversity threshold" model was proposed to explain viral diversity and disease progression (see introduction, section 1.5.3; Nowak *et al.*, 1991a). This theory predicts that during disease progression viral diversity is driven by an active immune response, resulting in escape mutants. This generation of antigenic diversity is thought to eventually overwhelm the immune system creating an anomaly whereby the active host immune response is intrinsically involved in its destruction. Wolinsky *et al.*, have shown relatively homogenous populations to be present, over a period of approximately three years, in individuals with rapidly declining T cell counts (associated with rapid progression to disease) and comparably higher diversity in patients with stable T cell counts and moderately declining T cell counts (associated with a slower progression to disease; Wolinsky *et al.,* 1996). A number of other studies have corroborated this finding, showing a decline in population diversity upon disease progression in regions of *env* that include V1 and V2 (McDonald *et al.,* 1997; Lukashov *et al.,* 1995; Delwart *et al.,* 1994; Ganeshan *et al.,* 1997). In this study, however I have shown that V1 and V2 viral variants were equally diverse in pre-symptomatic individuals and those dying in AIDS. I was therefore unable to experimentally confirm the findings of these previous studies for a decline in population diversity upon disease progression.

One of the difficulties of interpreting my own and published sequence comparisons is distinguishing between actively replicating HIV populations and those that may have infected cells latently or non-productively in the past. Evidence for variable persistence of non-expressing, "older" populations of HIV

have been obtained by comparisons of PBMC sequences in sequential samples from acutely infected individuals (where persistence may be extremely long; Simmonds *et al.,* 1991), or by monitoring the appearance of resistant populations following antiviral treatment (where one third of the PBMC populations remained wild type 6 months after the onset of treatment; Wei *et al.,* 1995). In these two studies, rapid and complete replacement of populations was observed only in the plasma virus population, which was generally less diverse than those in PBMCs for this reason. A recent study by Wong *et al.*, found evidence for extremely slow turnover of variants infecting brain tissues from sequence comparisons of the *pol* gene (see chapter 3: section 3.6.4; Wong *et al.,* 1997). Thus, particularly for the brain and other tissues where turnover of HIV populations may be slow, a clearer indication of the relationship between diversity and disease progression may be obtained by comparisons of the specifically transcriptionally active variants within the populations.

In summary, this study has shown no correlating factors between V1 and V2 with either an increase or decrease in diversity from pre-symptomatic and symptomatic individuals. No specific amino acid motifs were detected in either region which correlated with viral phenotype and no distinction could be made, from examining primary sequences, between variants found in different tissues. Therefore, there were no parameters in V1 or V2 that correlated with biological properties of the virus. If, as previously proposed, these two regions act in concert with other regions of gp120 to influence biological properties of HIV-1, this process remains undeterminable by analysis of their primary sequences.

CHAPTER 5: GENERAL DISCUSSION.

Since AIDS was first recognized in the early 1980s, the natural history of HIV-1 infection and clinical manifestations during progression of this disease have been elucidated. It is now recognized that HIV-1 infection induces a chronic and progressive disease process with a broad spectrum of clinical manifestations from acute primary infection to AIDS where a number of life threatening opportunistic infections and malignancies are observed. The course of disease is marked by increasing levels of viral replication, emergence of more virulent strains *in vitro* in approximately 50% of infected individuals, and progressive destruction of the immune system, primarily due to the resulting dysfunction and depletion of CD4 cells upon HIV-1 infection. Clinical AIDS is recognized as a combination of cytopathic infection, due to the direct action of HIV-1, and secondary or opportunistic infections primarily due to the suppression of the immune system. In the CNS, evidence of the cytopathic effect of HIV-1 occurs with increasing frequency and severity as immune defences are depleted (AIDS dementia complex/encephalitis), as do both minor (herpes zoster) and major (progressive multifocal leukoencephalopathy, toxoplasmosis and tuberculosis) opportunistic infections. This dichotomy of direct and indirect clinical manifestations is also observed in other tissues such as the gastrointestinal system, liver and heart during disease progression.

In order to investigate whether the spread of HIV-1 infection from lymphoid to non-lymphoid tissues occurs prior to immunosuppression (as an early event) or after an individual has progressed to full blown AIDS (a late event) I

have analysed the nucleic acid sequences of the $p17_{gag}$ region from a number of lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues obtained from individuals dying in AIDS. Also in order to determine whether the V1 or V2 hypervariable regions determine infection of such tissues I have analysed both primary amino acid sequences and nucleic acid sequences from tissue samples from the same patients. During disease progression an increase in infected tissues and clinical manifestations is evident. To investigate whether this is related to the degree of diversity of HIV-1 I have analysed brain and lymph node tissue from a wide range of symptomatic and pre-symptomatic patients.

Phylogenetic analysis of the $p17_{gag}$ region revealed polyphyletic lineages of lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues with obvious mixing between all tissues examined in three of the four patients analysed (p4, 5 and 6). The observation of polyphyletic lineages in brain provides no evidence for a specifically neurotropic variant of HIV, adapted for infection of brain tissue, where the expectation would be for variants recovered from brain to be monophyletic.

One of the surprising findings in the course of this study was the high diversity of the viral population in the brain. Mean synonymous pairwise distances were calculated using the $p17_{gag}$ region to estimate the average time of divergence of variants within each tissue. The average time of divergence between sequences from brain from patient 4, 5 and 6 (4.1 to 6.5 years) was found to be significantly higher than that estimated for lymphoid variants (2.65 to 6.5 years) suggesting infection of brain occurred relatively early in infection.

The restricted diversity observed in lymphoid tissue suggests that complete

population replacements may have occurred due to a more rapidly diverging population. This hypothesis is compatible with recent findings which have shown a rapid turnover of virus and CD4 lymphocytes in the peripheral circulation throughout infection (Ho *et al.,* 1995; Wei *et al.,* 1995). However, diversification of variants within brain tissue may be facilitated by the lack of cellular mobility, while the absence of positive selective pressure for change may continue to restrict sequence variability (see section 3.6.1).

Within the V1 and V2 regions the lack of tissue specific sequences was reflected in the phylogenetic analysis which revealed a number of mixed lineages containing variants from both lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues. Further analysis revealed no association between charge, length or number of glycosylation sites with tissue origin, consistent with the findings of Wang *et al.*, (Wang *et al.,* 1995). Therefore, there would appear to very little direct evidence from examination of primary sequences alone to substantiate that the V1/V2 regions influence viral tropism. Similarly, the claims that infection of brain tissue may require specific neurotropic variants would appear to be unfounded from examination of these regions. Amino acid differences in V1 and V2 between brain and lymphoid tissues noted in two of the three patients (p4 and 5) may be due to a lack of divergence as a result of the absence of selective pressure from the immune system or may simply reflect a requirement for infection of macrophage-like cells. *In vitro* studies have shown that these two regions may influence infection of macrophages to some extent (see section 4.1). However, this property may be influenced by interactions with other regions of gp120, and hence may be invisible from the examination of

primary sequences.

Analysis of the V3 region has suggested that this region may also be an important determinant of HIV-1 tropism (see section 1.4.3). Takeuchi *et al.*, reported the isolation of an HIV-1 variant that infected CD4+ brain cells (HIV_{GUN}), and showed that a single point mutation of the highly conserved proline at the tip of the V3 loop (GPGR) conferred an ability on this isolate to replicate in fibroblast like cells derived from human brain (BT cells; Takeuchi *et al.*, 1991). A subsequent study by the same research group isolated several new variants able to infect brain derived cells with a mutation from proline to serine, threonine or alanine in the conserved GPGR sequence at the tip of the V3 loop, suggesting amino acid sequences in this region may be important for infection of brain (Shimizu *et al.*, 1994). However, in an analysis of *in vivo* V3 sequences isolated from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues a proline residue was observed in the tip of the V3 loop, which was conserved in all sequences, although in three of the patients (one asymptomatic and two symptomatic) GPGS was detected in a number of sequences (Donaldson *et al.*, 1994a). In the same study the major variants found in brain tissue were also detected as minor variants in other tissues with relatively trivial differences detected between variants from different tissues, consisting of only one or two amino acids. Therefore, similar to my findings from analysis of the V1 and V2 sequences, there appears to be no signature sequence in the V3 region to indicate the existence of a specific neurotropic variant.

Analysis of primary sequences is a useful tool when constructing evolutionary relationships and provides important information regarding the

divergence of viral variants enabling us to discern when various tissues became infected during disease progression. However, analysis of primary sequences provides little information about the biological properties of a virus as these sequences are treated as distinct variables and cannot be analysed with respect to their secondary and tertiary interactions with other regions of the viral genome. Although such interactions may be speculated upon, no definite conclusions can be made from the examination of primary sequences alone. In the future, it is likely that more substantial evidence will require the functional characterization of HIV variants cloned directly from different tissues (see below).

The finding of high diversity within brain is in accordance with previous studies that suggest HIV can be detected in the brain at all stages of disease and in individuals without GCE (Davis *et al.,* 1992). In contrast, a number of other investigations have suggested a lack of productive infection of non-lymphoid tissues prior to immunosuppression where significant levels of provirus in non-lymphoid tissues from asymptomatic patients were not detected (Donaldson *et al.,* 1994b; Bell *et al.,* 1993). In a number of patients low levels of provirus were detected, although these levels were consistent with that expected from contamination by residual infected blood within tissues. This contrasts the detection of substantial levels of provirus in tissues from patients with AIDS, which were several orders of magnitude greater than that detected in asymptomatic patients. Furthermore, pathological examination of brain from asymptomatic patients failed to reveal any evidence for HIV encephalitis and p24 antigen was not detected by immunocytochemistry (Bell *et al.,* 1993). In a subsequent larger study, a clear

relationship between HIV encephalitis, detection of p24 antigen by immunocytochemistry and proviral load in brain from AIDS patients was detected (Bell *et al.,* 1996). More recently *in situ* PCR has been developed for detection of proviral sequences in tissue, and the results confirm previous findings of an absence of detectable infected cells in asymptomatic patients, with frequent detection of infected cells in AIDS patients with GCE (Bell *et al.,* 1996). Therefore, infection of brain tissue may not be productive during the asymptomatic stage of infection, it may be present at low levels undetectable by present techniques or be so dispersed in the brain that infection is not apparent from the single samples normally used for PCR, or histological examination.

The mode of entry of HIV-1 into brain is not well understood. It has been postulated that HIV-1 infected macrophages from the peripheral blood may be able to cross the blood-brain barrier bringing with them the virus ("Trojan horse" mechanism). This hypothesis is supported by the common origin and phenotype of macrophages and microglia. The restricted sequence diversity in V3 suggests that infection of brain simply may be a consequence of a requirement for macrophage-tropism and does not represent a specifically adapted neurotropic variant. Indeed, the existence of specific neurotropic variants would suggest that sequences of HIV from the brain should be monophyletic, whereas this was clearly not the case in most of the study subjects described here. Early seeding of brain (and other non-lymphoid tissues) may occur as the result of an inadequate immune response during primary infection with HIV-1. However, as an efficient immune response is mounted, viral replication within tissues may be contained at a very low level

during the asymptomatic stage. Subsequently, as disease progresses viral replication within tissues may no longer be limited and result in the pathological and clinical manifestations recognized in AIDS patients. In this respect, HIV-1 may be similar to the ubiquitous JC virus which causes a subacute demyelinating disease, progressive multifocal leukoencephalopathy (PML), infecting primarily oligodendrocytes and astrocytes. Seroepidemiological studies have shown approximately 70% of the population possess antibodies to JC virus (Padgett *et al.,* 1973), although infection remains undetectable in normal brain by modern techniques. PML occurs almost exclusively in immunosuppressed individuals, most often associated with lymphoproliferative disorders such as leukaemias and lymphomas, although in recent years PML has become increasingly common amongst AIDS patients, with the estimated incidence to be in the order of 3.8% (Berger *et al.,* 1987). As clinical manifestations of JC virus infection occur only in the absence of an effective host immune response, as appears to be the case for infection with HIV, reactivation of the latent virus may be the cause.

In order to understand the biological properties of a virus, functional studies must be carried out to examine these properties in as close to the natural state as possible. These generally involve *in vitro* culture of the virus in lymphocytes followed by characterization of the variants present. However, this technique can be misleading. It has been established for some time that culturing of HIV-1 selects for the outgrowth of more virulent variants *in vitro* which leads to the misrepresentation of viral populations. Also, during culturing of variants from tissues such as brain, bowel and lung there is a high probability of contamination

from residual lymphocytes which may be preferentially isolated upon co-culture with PBMCs, particularly if there were marked differences in tropism in tissue adapted variants. Even amongst variants present in PBMCs, there is evidence for strong selection for SI variants within the first week of *in vitro* culture even where the majority of the PBMC population has a predicted NSI macrophage tropic phenotype (P. Strappe, personal communication). In this study, all of the SI variants replicated in MT-2 cells and in each case the variants selected for had a higher charge (+5) than PBMC populations (+3).

We have recently attempted to address the problem of *in vitro* selection through a collaboration with Matthias Dittmar and colleagues (Dittmar *et al.*, 1997), in which variants of HIV infecting different tissues were cloned and expressed without prior *in vitro* culture. Long range PCR was used to construct a full-length provirus sequence from a primary isolate of p4 (one of the study subjects in this thesis) obtained three months before death, into which amplified *env* sequences from lymphoid and non-lymphoid tissues from the same study subject were inserted. The resultant recombinant viruses were characterized for biological properties such as tropism, cytopathology and co-receptor usage. This method eliminates *in vitro* selection of unrepresentative populations, since these replication competent viruses have been constructed from genomic DNA amplified directly from tissue samples. Remarkably, initial biological characterization of the expressed viruses from brain, lung and lymph node revealed that irrespective of tissue origin, they could only productively infect peripheral blood mononuclear T cells (Dittmar *et al.*, 1997). In contrast, recombinant viruses comprising the p4

background sequence with inserted *env* sequences from HIV_{gun} and HIV_{SF162} (macrophage tropic variants) were able to infect primary macrophages, ruling out the possibility that macrophage tropism was determined by parts of the genome of this clone outwith the *env* gene.

Furthermore, infection of PBMC with these recombinant viruses showed similar replication kinetics regardless of tissue origin. These findings now cast a shadow of doubt on the hypothesis that the only requirement for infection of brain is the ability to infect macrophages, and it is possible that there may be other factors which can influence viral tropism for tissues of non-lymphoid origin such as brain and lung. Although microglia are considered to be macrophage derived, a recent *in vitro* study has suggested that certain isolates may replicate preferentially in microglia (Strizki *et al.,* 1996). Extensive passaging of such an isolate revealed amino acid changes in the V3 loop shown to be associated with isolates from patients with HIV dementia.

Matthias Dittmar and colleagues are currently examining the possibility that co-receptor usage may influence infection of tissues such as brain. They intend to analyse the chemokine receptor usage of variants from different tissues, such as brain and lymph node, for entry into different cell types. In order to do this a number of proviruses, generated by long range PCR, from brain and lymph node tissue obtained from the same patient will be directly cloned and used to infect various different *in vitro* cell systems such as primary macrophages, primary dendritic cells and CD4+ lymphocytes.

In the future, functional and genetic characterization studies may provide

more insight with regard to the disease manifestations associated with HIV infection. Understanding the pathogenesis of HIV infection will involve the reconciliation of both clinical and pathological observations with virological studies. Infection of non-lymphoid tissues, such as the brain, may be a consequence of alterations in the character of the virus (tropism), discussed above, or a result of the ensuing immunosuppression characteristic of HIV infection. The fact that pathological abnormalities in non-lymphoid tissues, such as HIV encephalitis occur in the setting of immunosuppression and more active viral replication suggests that a decline in host defences against HIV may be an important factor in allowing infection of non-lymphoid tissues. Therefore, there is strong evidence to suggest that the host response may be instrumental in the containment of viral spread during the asymptomatic stage of HIV infection.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

ADA, G.L. (1993). HIV: Towards phase III trials for candidate vaccines. *Nature.* **364**, 489-490.

AHMAD, N. & VENKATESAN, S. (1988). Nef protein of HIV-1 is a transcriptional repressor of HIV-1 LTR. *Science* **241**, 1481-1485.

ALI, A., PATTERSON, S., CRUICKSHANK, K., RUDGE, P., DALGLEISH, A.G. & KNIGHT, S.C. (1993). Dendritic cells infected in vitro with human T-cell leukaemia/ lymphoma virus type-1 (HTLV-1) - enhanced lymphocytic proliferation and tropical spastic paraparesis. *Clin.Exp.Immunol* **94**, 32-37.

ALIZON, M., WAIN HOBSON, S., MONTAGNIER, L. & SONIGO, P. (1986). Genetic variability of the AIDS virus: nucleotide sequence analysis of two isolates from African patients. *Cell* **46**, 63-74.

ALIZON, M. & DRAGIC, T. (1994). CD26 antigen and HIV fusion? *Science* **264**, 1161-1162.

ALKHATIB, G., COMBADIERE, C., BRODER, C.C., FENG, Y., KENNEDY, P.E., MURPHY, P.M. & BERGER, E.A. (1996). CC CKR5: A RANTES, MIP-1 alpha, MIP-1 beta receptor as a fusion cofactor for macrophage-tropic HIV-1. *Science* **272**, 1955-1958.

ALLAN, J.S., COLIGAN, J.E., LEE, T.H., MCLEAN, M., KANKI, P., GROOPMAN, J. & ESSEX, M. (1985). A new HTLV-III/LAV encoded antigen detected by antibodies from AIDS patients. *Science* **230**, 810-813.

AMEISEN, J.C. & CAPRON, A. (1991). Cell dysfunction and depletion in AIDS: the programmed cell death hypothesis. *Immunol.Today* **12**, 102-105.

ANDEWEG, A.C., LEEFLANG, P., OSTERHAUS, A.D.M.E. & BOSCH, M.L. (1993). Both the V2 and V3 regions of the human immunodeficiency virus type-1 surface glycoprotein functionally interact with other envelope regions in syncytium formation. *J.Virol.* **67**, 3232-3239.

ANDEWEG, A.C., BOERS, P.H.M., OSTERHAUS, A.D.M.E. & BOSCH, M.L. (1995). Impact of natural sequence variation in the V2 region of the envelope protein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 on syncytium induction: a mutational analysis. *J.Gen.Virol.* **76**, 1901-1907.

ANONYMOUS. (1993). Experimental AIDS drug, d4T, now available to patients in critical need. *Ann. Allergy.* **71**, A27

ARMSTRONG, J.A., HORNE, R. (1984). Follicular dendritic cells and virus-like particles in AIDS-related lymphadenopathy. *Lancet.* **2**, 370-372.

ARRIGO, S.J., WEITSMAN, S., ROSENBLATT, J.D. & CHEN, I.S. (1989). Analysis of rev gene function on human immunodeficiency virus type 1 replication in lymphoid cells by using a quantitative polymerase chain reaction method. *J.Virol.* **63**, 4875-4881.

ARTHOS, J., DEEN, K.C., CHAIKIN, M.A., FORNWALD, J.A., SATHE, G., SATTENTAU, Q.J., CLAPHAM, P.R., WEISS, R.A., MCDOUGAL, J.S. & PIETROPAOLO, C. (1989). Identification of the residues in human CD4 critical for the binding of HIV. *Cell* **57**, 469-481.

ARTHUR, L.O., BEN, J.W., SOWDER, R.C., BENVENISTE, R.E., MANN, D.L., CHERMANN, J.C., HENDERSON, L.E. (1992). Cellular proteins bound to immunodeficiency viruses: implications for pathogenesis and vaccines. *Science* **258**, 1935-1938.

ASJO, B., ALBERT, J., KARLSSON, A., MORFELDT MANSON, L., BIBERFELD, G., LIDMAN, K. & FENYO, E.M. (1986). Replicative capacity of human immunodeficiency virus from patients with varying severity of HIV infection. *Lancet* **ii**, 660-662.

BABA, T.W., JEONG, Y.S., PENNINCK, D., BRONSON, R., GREENE, M.F. & RUPRECHT, R.M. (1995). Pathogenicity of live, attenuated SIV after mucosal infection of neonatal macaques. *Science.* **267**, 1820-1825.

BACK, N.K.T., SMIT, L., SCHUTTEN, M., NARA, P.L., TERSMETTE, M. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1993). Mutations in human immunodeficiency virus type-1 gp41 affect sensitivity to neutralization by gp120 antibodies. *J.Virol.* **67**, 6897-6902.

BAGASRA, O., FARZADEGAN, H., SESHAMMA, T., OAKES, J.W., SAAH, A. & POMERANTZ, R.J. (1994). Detection of HIV-1 proviral DNA in sperm from HIV-1- infected men. *AIDS* **8**, 1669-1674.

BAGASRA, O., LAVI, E., BOBROSKI, L., KHALILI, K., PESTANER, J.P., TAWADROS, R. & POMERANTZ, R.J. (1996). Cellular reservoirs of HIV-1 in the central nervous system of infected individuals: Identification by the combination of *in situ* polymerase chain reaction and immunohistochemistry. *AIDS* **10**, 573-585.

BALL, J.K., HOLMES, E.C., WHITWELL, H. & DESSELBERGER, U. (1994). Genomic variation of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) - molecular analyses of HIV-1 in sequential blood samples and various organs obtained at autopsy. *J.Gen.Virol.* **75**, 867-879.

BARBOZA, A., CASTRO, B.A., WHALEN, M., MOORE, C.C.D., PARKIN, J.S., MILLER, W.L., GONZALEZ SCARANO, F. & LEVY, J.A. (1992). Infection of cultured adrenal cells by different strains of the human immunodeficiency viruses, types 1 and 2. *AIDS* **6**, 1437-1444.

BARIN, F., M'BOUP, E.M., DENIS, F., KANKI, P., ALLAN, J.C., LEE, T.H. & ESSEX, M. (1985). Serological evidence for virus related to simian-T-lymphotropic retrovirus III in residents of West Africa. *Lancet* **ii**, 1387-1389.

BARONI, C.D., PEZZELLA, F., MIRDO, M., RUCO L.P., ROSSI, G.B. (1986). Immunohistochemical demonstration of p24 HTLV-III major core protein in different cell types within lymph nodes from patients with lymphadenopathy syndrome (LAS). *Histopathology* **10**, 5-13.

BARRE-SINOUSSI, F., CHERMAN, J.C., REY, F., NUGEYRE, M.T., CHAMARET, S., GRUEST, J., DAUGUET, C. & AXLER-BLIN, C. (1983). Isolation of a T lymphotropic retrovirus from a patient at risk for acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS). *Science* **220**, 868-871.

BATTULA, N. & LOEB, L.A. (1976). On the fidelity of DNA replication. *Journal of Biological Chemistry* **251**, 982-986.

BEBENEK, K., ABBOTTS, J., ROBERTS, J.D., WILSON, S.H. & KUNKEL, T.A. (1989). Specificity and mechanisms of error prone replication by Human Immunodeficiency-1 reverse transcriptase. *J Biol Chem* **264**, 16948-19656.

BEDNARIK, D.P. & FOLKS, T.M. (1992). Mechanisms of HIV-1 latency. *AIDS* **6**,

BELL, J.E., BUSUTTIL, A., IRONSIDE, J.W., REBUS, S., DONALDSON, Y.K., SIMMONDS, P. & PEUTHERER, J.F. (1993). Human immunodeficiency virus and the brain - investigation of virus load and neuropathologic changes in pre-AIDS subjects. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **168**, 818-824.

BELL, J.E., DONALDSON, Y.K., LOWRIE, S., MCKENZIE, C.A., ELTON, R.A., CHISWICK, A., BRETTLE, R.P., IRONSIDE, J.W. & SIMMONDS, P. (1996). Influence of risk group and zidovudine therapy on the development of HIV encephalitis and cognitive impairment in AIDS patients. *AIDS* **10**, 493-499.

BENK0, D.M., SCHWARTZ, S., PAUAKI, G. & FELBER, B. (1990). A novel HIV-1 protein, *tev,* shares sequences with *tat, env,* and *rev* proteins. *J. Virol.* **64**, 2505-2518.

BENN, S., RUTLEDGE, A., FOLKS, T., GOLD, J., BAKER, L., MCCORMICK, J., FEORINO, P., PIOT, P., QUINN, T. & MARTIN, M. (1985). Genomic heterogeneity of AIDS retroviral isolates from North America and Zaire. *Science*

230, 949-951.

BENTON, E., BRYANT, H., DECOSTER, M., ORENSTEIN, J., RIBAS, J., MELTZER, M.S. & GENDELMAN, H. (1992). No direct neuron-toxicity by HIV-1 virions or culture fluids from HIV-1 infected T-cells or monocytes. *AIDS Research and Human Retroviruses.* **8**, 495-501.

BERGER, E.A., FUERST, T.R. & MOSS, B. (1988). A soluble recombinant polypeptide comprising the amino-terminal half of the extra cellular region of the CD4 molecule contains an active binding site for human immunodeficiency virus. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **85**, 2357-2361.

BERGER, J., KASZOUITZ, B., DONOVAN, J. & DICKINSON, G. (1987). Progressive multifocal leukoencephalopathy associated with human immunodeficiency virus infection. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **107**, 78-87.

BERGERON, L. & SODROSKI, J. (1992). Dissociation of unintegrated viral DNA accumulation from single cell lysis induced by HIV-1. *J.Virol.* **66**, 5777-5787.

BERNSTEIN, H.B., TUCKER, S.P., HUNTER, E., SCHUTZBACH, J.S. & COMPANS, R.W. (1994). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope glycoprotein is modified by O-linked oligosaccharides. *J.Virol.* **68**, 463-468.

BIBERFELD, P., CHAYT, K.J., MARSELLE, L.M., BIBERFELD, G., GALLO, R.C., HARPER, M.E. (1986). HTLV-III expression in infected lymph nodes and relevance to pathogenesis of lymphadenopathy. *Am. J. Pathol.* **123**, 436-442.

BLAIR, D.G. (1977). Genetic recombination between avian leukosis and sarcoma viruses. *Virology* **77**, 534-544.

BLEUL, C.C., FARZAN, M., CHOE, H., PAROLIN, C., CLARKLEWIS, I., SODROSKI, J. & SPRINGER, T.A. (1996). The lymphocyte chemoattractant SDF-1 is a ligand for LESTR/fusin and blocks HIV-1 entry. *Nature* **382**, 829-833.

BOFILL, M., MOCROFT, A., LIPMAN, M., MEDINA, E., BORTHWICK, N.J., SABIN, C.A., TIMMS, A., WINTER, M., BAPTISTA, L., JOHNSON, M.A., LEE, C.A., PHILLIPS, A.N. & JANOSSY, G. (1996). Increased numbers of primed activated CD8+CD38+CD45RO+ T cells predict the decline of CD4+ T cells in HIV-1-infected patients. *AIDS* **10**, 827-834.

BOGNER, J.R. & GOEBEL, F.D. (1991). Lymphocyte subsets as surrogate markers in anti-retroviral therapy. *Infection.* **19**, S103-S107.

BOLLINGER, R.C., TRIPATHY, S.P. & QUINN, T.C. (1995). The human immunodeficiency virus epidemic in India. *Medicine.* **74**, 97-106.

BOUCHER, C.A.B., O'SULLIVAN, E., MULDER, J., RAMAUTARSING, C., KELLAM, P., DARBY, G., LANGE J.M.A., GOUDSMIT, J. & LARDER, B.A. (1992). Ordered appearance of zidovudine resistant mutations during treatment of 18 HIV positive subjects. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **165**, 105-110.

BOYD, M.T., SIMPSON, G.R., CANN, A.J., JOHNSON, M.A. & WEISS, R.A. (1993). A single amino acid substitution in the V1 loop of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 alters cellular tropism. *J.Virol.* **67**, 3649-3652.

BRANDLEY, B.K. & SCHNAAR, R.L. (1986). Cell-surface carbohydrates in cell recognition and response. *Journal of Leukocyte Biology.* **40**, 97-111.

BRETTLE, R.P., MCNEIL, A.J., BURNS, S., GORE, S.M., BIRD, A.G., YAP, P.L., MACCALLUM, L., LEEN, C.S.L. & RICHARDSON, A.M. (1996). Progression of HIV: Follow-up of Edinburgh injecting drug users with narrow seroconversion intervals in 1983-1985. *AIDS* **10**, 419-430.

BRIESEN, H.V., ANDREESEN, R. & RUBSAMEN WAIGMANN, H. (1990). Systematic classification of HIV biological subtypes on lymphocyte and monocyte/macrophages. *Virology.* **178**, 597-602.

BRIX, D.L., REDFIELD, R.R., TENCER, K., FOWLER, A., BURKE, D.S. & TOSATO, G. (1990). Induction of interleukin-6 during human immunodeficiency virus infection. *Blood.* **76**, 2303-2310.

BROLIDEN, P.A., MAKITALO, B., AKERBLOM, L., ROSEN, J., BROLIDEN, K., UTTER, G., JONDAL, M., NORRBY, E. & WAHREN, B. (1991). Identification of amino acids in the V3 region of gp120 critical for virus neutralisation by human HIV-1-specific antibodies. *Immunology* **73**, 371-376.

BROUNE, M.J., MAYER, K.H., CHAFEE, S., DUDLEY, M., POSNER, M., STEINBERG, S., GRAHAM, K., GELETKO, S., ZINNER, S., DENMAN, S., DUNKLE, L., KAUL, S., MCLAREN, C., SKOWRON, G., KOUTTAB, N., KENNEDY, T., WEITBERG, A. & CURT, G. (1993). 2',3'-Didehydro-3'-deoxythymidine (d4T) in patients with AIDS or ARC: a phase one trial. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **167**, 21-29.

BUKRINSKY, M.I., SHAROVA, N., DEMPSEY, M.D., STANWICK, T.L., BUKRINSKAYA, A.G., HAGGERTY, S., STEVENSON, M. (1992). Active nuclear import of human immunodeficency virus preintegration complexes. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **89**, 6580-6584.

BUTERA, S.T., ROBERTS, B.D. & FOLKS, T.M. (1993). Regulation of HIV-1 expression by cytokine networks in a CD4+ model of chronic infection. *J.Immunol*

150, 625-634.

BYRNE, B.C., LI, J.J., SNINSKY, J. & POIESZ, B.J. (1988). Detection of HIV-1 RNA sequences by in vitro DNA amplification. *Nucleic Acids Research* **16**, 4165

CACERES, C.F. & VANGRIENSVEN, G.J.P. (1994). Male homosexual transmission of HIV-1. *AIDS* **8**, 1051-1061.

CALIENDO, A.M., HIRSCH, M.S. (1994). Combination therapy for infection due to human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *Clin. Inf. Dis.* **18**, 515-524.

CALLEBAUT, C., KRUST, B., JACOTOT, E. & HOVANESSIAN, A.G. (1993). T-cell activation antigen, CD26, as a cofactor for entry of HIV in CD4+ cells. *Science* **262**, 2045-2050.

CANIVET, M., HOFFMAN, A.D., HARDY, D., SERNATINGER, J. & LEVY, J.A. (1990). Replication of HIV-1 in a wide variety of animal cells following phenotypic mixing with murine retroviruses. *Virology* **178**, 543-551.

CANTRIL, H.L., HENRY, K., JACKSON, B., ERICE, A., USSERY, F.M. & BALFOUR, H.H., JR. (1988). Recovery of human immunodeficiency virus from occular tissues in patients with acquired immune deficiency syndrome. *Ophthalmology.* **95**, 1458-1462.

CAO, Y.Z., FRIEDMAN KIEN, A.E. & HUANG, Y.X. (1990). CD4-independent productive human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infection of hepatoma cell lines *in vitro. J.Virol.* **64**, 2553-2559.

CARRILLO, A. & RATNER, L. (1996a). Human immunodeficiency type 1 tropism for T-lymphoid cell lines: Role of the V3 loop and C4 envelope determinants. *Journal of Virology* **70**, 1301-1309.

CARRILLO, A. & RATNER, L. (1996b). Cooperative effects of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope variable loops V1 and V3 in mediating infectivity for T cells. *Journal of Virology.* **70**, 1310-1316.

CDC. (1986). Classification system for human T-lymphotropic virus type III/lymphadenopathy-associated virus infections. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **105**, 234-237.

CDC. (1992). 1993 revised classification system for HIV infection and expanded surveillance case definition for AIDS among adolescents and adults. *MMWR* **41**, 1-19.

CELANDER, D. & HASELTINE, W.A. (1984). Tissue specific transcription preference as a determinant of cell tropism and leukaemogenic potential of murine

retroviruses. *Nature.* **312**, 159-162.

CELENTANO, D.D., AKARASEWI, P., SUSSMAN, L., SUPRASERT, S., MATANASARAWOOT, A., WRIGHT, N.H., THEETRANONT, C. & NELSON, K.E. (1994). HIV-1 infection among lower class commercial sex workers in chiang mai, Thailand - short communication. *AIDS* **8**, 533-537.

CENTRES FOR DISEASE CONTROL AND PREVENTION. (1995). *HIV/AIDS Surveillance Report.* **7**, 1-39.

CHAYT, K.J., HARPER, M.E., MARSELLE, L.M., LEWIN, E.B., ROSE, R.M., OLESKE, J.M., EPSTEIN, L.G., WONG STAAL, F. & GALLO, R.C. (1986). Detection of HTLV-III RNA in lungs of patients with AIDS and pulmonary involvement. *JAMA.* **256**, 2356-2359.

CHENG MAYER, C., RUTKA, J.T., ROSENBLUM, M.L., MCHUGH, T., STITES, D.P. & LEVY, J.A. (1987). The Human Immunodeficiency Virus can productively infect cultured human glial cells. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **84**, 3526-3530.

CHENG MAYER, C., QUIROGA, M., TUNG, J.W., DINA, D. & LEVY, J.A. (1990). Viral determinants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 T-cell or macrophage tropism, cytopathogenicity, and CD4 antigen modulation. *J.Virol.* **64**, 4390-4398.

CHENG, H.H., ZHANG, J.P., CAPIZZI, J., YOUNG, N.L. & MASTRO, T.D. (1994). Introduction of HIV-1 subtype E into Yunnan, China. *Lancet* **344**, 953-954.

CHENG-MAYER, C., SETO, D., TATENO, M. & LEVY, J.A. (1988). Biological features of HIV-1 that correlate with virulence in the host. *Science* **240**, 80-82.

CHENG-MAYER, C., LIU, R., LANDAU, N.R. & STAMATATOS, L. (1997). Macrophage tropism of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 and utilization of the CC-CKR5 co-receptor. *J.Virol.* **71**, 1657-1661.

CHESEBRO, B., BULLER, R., PORTIS, J. & WEHRLY, K. (1990). Failure of human immunodeficiency virus entry and infection in CD4-positive human brain and skin cells. *J. Virol.* **64**, 215-221.

CHESEBRO, B., WEHRLY, K., NISHIO, J. & PERRYMAN, S. (1992). Macrophage-tropic human immunodeficiency virus isolates from different patients exhibit unusual V3 envelope sequence homogeneity in comparison with T cell-tropic isolates: definition of critical amino acids involved in cell tropism. *J.Virol* **66**, 6547-6554.

CHIODI, F., FUERSTENBERG, S., GIDLUND, M., ASJO, B. & FENYO, E.M. (1987). Infection of brain-derived cells with the human immunodeficiency virus. *J.Virol.* **61**, 1244-1247.

CHO, M.W., SHIBATA, R. & MARTIN, M.A. (1996). Infection of chimpanzee peripheral blood mononuclear cells by human immunodeficiency virus type 1 requires cooperative interaction between multiple variable regions of gp120. *J.Virol.* **70**, 7318-7321.

CHOE, H., FARZAN, M., SUN, Y., SULLIVAN, N., ROLLINS, B., PONATH, P.D., WU, L.J., MACKAY, C.R., LAROSA, G., NEWMAN, W., GERARD, N., GERARD, C. & SODROSKI, J. (1996). The beta-chemokine receptors CCR3 and CCR5 facilitate infection by primary HIV-1 isolates. *Cell* **85**, 1135-1148.

CHRISTIE, I.L. & ALMEIDA, J.D. (1988). The morphology of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) by negative staining. *J. Med. Virol.* **25**, 281-288.

CICHUTEK, K., MERGET, H., NORLEY, S., LINDE, R., KREUZ, W., GAHR, M. & KURTH, R. (1992). Development of a quasispecies of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 *in vivo*. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA.* **89**, 7365-7369.

CLAPHAM, P.R., WEBER, J.N., WHITBY, D., MCINTOSH, K., DALGLEISH, A.G., MADDON, P.J., DEEN, K.C., SWEET, R.W. & WEISS, R.A. (1989). Soluble CD4 blocks the infectivity of diverse strains of HIV and SIV for T cells and monocytes but not for brain and muscle cells. *Nature* **337**, 368-370.

CLARK, S.J., SAAG, M.S., DECKER, W.D., CAMPBELL-HILL, S., ROBERTSON, J.L., VELDKAMP, P.J., KAPPES, J.C., HAHN, B.H. & SHAW, G.M. (1991). High titres of cytopathic virus in plasma of patients with symptomatic primary HIV-1 infection. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **324**, 954-960.

CLAVEL, F., GUETARD, D., BRUN VEZINET, F., CHAMARET, S., REY, M.A., SANTOS FERREIRA, M.O., LAURENT, A.G., DAUGUET, C., KATLAMA, C., ROUZIOUX, C., KLATZMANN, D., CHAMPALIMAND, J.C. & MONTAGNIER, L. (1986). Isolation of a new human retrovirus from West Africa patients with AIDS. *Science* **233**, 343-346.

CLAVEL, F., HOGGAN, M.D., WILLEY, R.L., STREBEL, K., MARTIN, M.A. & REPASKE, R. (1989). Genetic Recombination of Human Immunodeficiency Virus. *Journal of Virology* **63**, 1455-1459.

CLAYTON, L.K., SIEH, M., PIOUS, D.A. & REINHERZ, E.L. (1989). Identification of human CD4 residues affecting class II MHC versus HIV-1 gp120 binding. *Nature* **339**, 548-551.

CLERICI, M., LUCEY, D.R., ZAJAC, R.A., BOSWELL, R.N., GEBEL, H.M., TAKAHASHI, H., BERZOFSKY, J.A. & SHEARER, G.M. (1991). Detection of cytotoxic T lymphocytes specific for synthetic peptides of gp160 in HIV-seropositive individuals. *J.Immunol.* **146**, 2214-2219.

CLOYD, M. & LYNN, W.S. (1991). Perturbation of host-cell membrane is a primary mechanism of HIV cytopathology. *Virology.* **181**, 500-511.

CLOYD, M.W. & MOORE, B.E. (1990). Spectrum of biological properties of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV-1) isolates. *Virology.* **174**, 103-116.

COCCHI, F., DEVICO, A.L., GARZINO-DEMO, A., CARA, A., GALLO, R.C. & LUSSO, P. (1996). The V3 domain of the HIV-1 gp120 envelope glycoprotein is critical for chemokine-mediated blockade of infection. *Nature Med* **1**, 1244-1247.

COFFIN, J., HAASE, A., LEVY, J.A., MONTAGNIER, L., OROSZLAN, S., TEICH, N., TEMIN, H., TOYOSHIMA, K., VARMUS, H., VOGT, P. & ET AL. (1986a). Human immunodeficiency viruses. *Science.* **232**, 697

COFFIN, J., HAASE, A., LEVY, J.A., MONTAGNIER, L., OROSZLAN, S., TEICH, N., TEMIN, H., TOYOSHIMA, K., VARMUS, H., VOGT, P. & ET AL. (1986b). What to call the AIDS virus? *Nature.* **321**, 10

COFFIN, J.M. (1979). Review: Structure, replication, and recombination of retrovirus genomes: some unifying hypotheses. *J. Gen. Virol.* **42**, 1-26.

COFFIN, J.M., TSICHLIS, P.N., BARKER, C.S., VOOGNOW, S. & ROBINSON, H. (1980). Variation in avian retrovirus genomes. *Ann.N.Y.Acad.Sci.* **354**, 410-425.

COFFIN, J.M. (1992). Genetic diversity and evolution of retroviruses. *Curr.Top.Microbiol.Immunol.* **176**, 143-164.

COFFIN, J.M. (1996). HIV viral dynamics. *AIDS* **10**, S75-S84.

COHEN, A.H., SUN, N.C.J., SHAPSHAK, P. & IMAGAWA, T. (1989). Demonstration of human immunodeficiency virus in renal epithelium in HIV-associated nephropathy. *Modern.Pathol.* **2**, 125-128.

COHEN, E.A., TERWILLIGER, E.F., SODROSKI, J.G. & HASELTINE, W.A. (1989). Identification of a protein encoded by the *vpu* gene of HIV-1. *Nature* **334**, 532-534.

COLLIER, A.C., COOMBS, R.W., SCHOENFELD, D.A., REICHMAN, R.C., HOOPER, C., COREY, L. (1996). Treatment of human immunodeficiency virus infection with saquinavir, zidovudine and zalcitabine. *New Engl. J. Med.* **334**,

1011-1017.

COLLINGRIDGE, G.L. & BLISS, T.V. (1987). NMDA receptors: their role in long-term potentiation. *Trends in Neurosci.* **10**, 288-293.

CONALDI, P.G., SERRA, C., DOLEI, A., BASOLO, F., MARIANI, G., SPEZIALE, P. & TONIOLO, A. (1995). Productive HIV-1 infection of human vascular endothelial cells requires cell proliferation and is stimulated by combined treatment with interleukin-1 beta plus tumor necrosis factor-alpha. *J.Med Virol.* **47**, 355-363.

CONCORDE COORDINATING COMMITTEE. (1994). Concorde: MRC/ANRS randomized double blind controlled trial of immediate and deferred zidovudine in symptom free HIV infection. *Lancet* **343**, 871-881.

CONDRA, J.H., SCHLEIF, W.A., BLAHY, O.M., GABRYELSKI, L.J., GRAHAM, D.J., QUINTERO, J.C., RHODES, A., ROBBINS, H.L., ROTH, E., SHIVAPRAKASH, M., TITUS, D., YANG, T., TEPPLER, H., SQUIRES, K.E., DEUTSCH, P.J. & EMINI, E.A. (1995). In vivo emergence of HIV-1 variants resistant to multiple protease inhibitors. *Nature* **374**, 569-571.

CONNOR, R.I. & HO, D.D. (1994). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 variants with increased replicative capacity develop during the asymptomatic stage before disease progression. *J.Virol.* **68**, 4400-4408.

COOMBS, R.W., COLLIER, A.C., ALLAIN, J.-P., NIKORA, B., LEUTHER, M., GJERSET, G. & COREY, L. (1989). Plasma viraemia in human immunodeficiency virus infection. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **321**, 1626-1631.

COOPER, A.D., MACLEAN, P., FINLAYSON, R., MICHELMORE, H., GOLD, J., DONOVAN, B., BARNES, T., BRODEE, D. & PENNY, R. (1985). Acute AIDS retrovirus infection: Definition of a clinical illness associated with seroconversion. *Lancet* **I**, 537-540.

COOPER, D.A., GATELL, J.M., KROON, S., CLUMECK, N., MILLARD, J., GOEBEL, F.D., BRUUN, J.N., STINGL, G., MELVILLE, R.L., GONZALEZLAHOZ, J., STEVENS, J.W. & FIDDIAN, A.P. (1993). Zidovudine in persons with asymptomatic HIV infection and CD4+ cell counts greater than 400 per cubic millimetre. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **329**, 297-303.

CORBEIL, J. & RICHMAN, D. (1995). Productive infection and subsequent interaction of CD4-gp120 at the cellular membrane is required for HIV-induced apoptosis of CD4+ T cells. *J.Gen.Virol.* **76**, 681-690.

CORNELISSEN, M., HOGERVORST, E., ZORGDRAGER, F., HARTMAN, S. &

GOUDSMIT, J. (1995). Maintenance of syncytium-inducing phenotype of HIV type 1 is associated with positively charged residues in the HIV type 1 gp120 V2 domain without fixed positions, elongation, or relocated N-linked glycosylation sites. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **11**, 1169-1175.

CULLEN, B.R. (1991). Regulation of HIV-1 gene expression. *FASEB J.* **5**, 2361-2368.

DA SILVA, M., SHEVCHUK, M., CRONIN, W.J., ARMENAKAS, N.A., TANNENBAUM, M., FRACCHIA, J.A. & LOACHIM, H.L. (1989). Detection of HIV-related protein in testes and prostates of patients with AIDS. *Am.J.Clin.Pathol.* **93**, 196-201.

DAAR, E.S., MOUDGIL, T., MEYER, R.D. & HO, D.D. (1991). Transient high levels of viraemia in patients with primary human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infection. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **324**, 961-964.

DABIS, F., MSELLATI, P., DUNN, D., LEPAGE, P., NEWELL, M.L., PECKHAM, C., VANDEPERRE, P., FRANSEN, L., NKOWANE, B., ANDIMAN, W., BHAT, G., BLANCHE, S., BOULOS, R., BULTERYS, M., CHIPHANGWI, J., DATTA, P., EMBREE, J., GIAQUINTO, C., HALSEY, N., HITIMANA, G., HOM, D., KARITA, E., LALLEMANT, M., MALANDA, N., MAYAUX, M.J., MITCHELL, C., MIOTTI, P., MMIRO, F., NZINGOULA, S., OMENACA, F., RYDER, R., SHAFFER, N., COMMENGES, D., ADJORLOLO, G., BUTZLER, J.P., CASANOVA, J., DELAPORTE, E., FUMBI, J., HEYWARD, W., LAPOINTE, N., PIOT, P., STEVENS, A.M., TARDIEU, M. & TEMMERMAN, M. (1993). Estimating the rate of mother-to-child transmission of HIV -report of a workshop on methodological issues ghent (Belgium), 17-20 February 1992. *AIDS* **7**, 1139-1148.

DALGLEISH, A.G., BEVERLEY, P.C., CLAPHAM, P.R., CRAWFORD, D.H., GREAVES, M.F. & WEISS, R.A. (1984). The CD4 (T4) antigen is an essential component of the receptor for the AIDS retrovirus. *Nature.* **312**, 763-767.

DALGLEISH, A.G., WILSON, S., GOMPELS, M., LUDLAM, C., GAZZARD, B., COATES, A. & HABESHAW, J. (1992). T-cell receptor variable gene products and early HIV infection. *Lancet.* **339**, 824-828.

DANIEL, M.D., KIRCHOFF, F., CZAJAK, S.C., SEHGAL, P.K. & DESROSIERS, R.C. (1992). Protective effects of a live attenuated SIV vaccine with a deletion in the *nef* gene. *Science.* **258**, 1938-1940.

DANNER, S.A., CARR, A., LEONARD, J.M., LEHMAN, L.M., GUDIOL, F., GONZALES, J., RAVENTOS, A., RUBIO, R., BOUZA, E., PINTADO, V., AGUADO, A.G., DELOMAS, J.G., DELGADO, R., BORLEFFS, J.C.C., HSU, A.,

VALDES, J.M., BOUCHER, C.A.B., COOPER, D.A., GIMENO, C., CLOTET, B., TOR, J., FERRER, E., MARTINEZ, P.L., MORENO, S., ZANCADA, G., ALCAMI, J., NORIEGA, A.R., PULIDO, F. & GLASSMAN, H.N. (1995). A short-term study of the safety, pharmacokinetics, and efficacy of ritonavir, an inhibitor of HIV-1 protease. *N.Engl.J.Med* **333**, 1528-1533.

DAUGHERTY, B. (1996). Cloning, expression and characterization of the human eosinophil expressed vector. *J.Exp.Med.* **183**, 2349-2359.

DAVIES, A.G., DOMINY, N.J., PETERS, A., BATH, G.E., BURNS, S.M. & RICHARDSON, A.M. (1995). HIV injecting drug users in Edinburgh: Prevalence and correlates. *J.Acquir.Immune.Defic.Syndr.* **8**, 399-405.

DAVIS, D., STEPHENS, D.M., WILLERS, C. & LACHMANN, P.J. (1990). Glycosylation governs the binding of antipeptide antibodies to regions of hypervariable amino acid sequence within recombinant gp120 of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J.Gen.Virol.* **71**, 2889-2898.

DAVIS, L.E., HJELLE, B.L. & MILLER, V.E. (1992). Early brain invasion in iatrogenic human immunodeficiency virus infection. *Neurology* **42**, 1736-1739.

DE JONG, J.J., GOUDSMIT, J., KEULEN, W., KLAVER, B., KRONE, W. & . (1992). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 clones chimeric for the envelope V3 domain differ in syncytium formation and replication capacity. *J.Virol.* **66**, 757-765.

DE JONG, J., SIMON, F., VANDERGROEN, G., BAAN, E., SARAGOSTI, S., BRUNVEZINET, F. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1996). V3 loop sequence analysis of seven HIV type 1 group O isolates phenotyped in peripheral blood mononuclear cells and MT-2 cells. *AIDS Res Hum Retroviruses* **12**, 1503-1507.

DEDERA, D. & RATNER, L. (1991). Demonstration of two distinct cytopathic effects with syncytium formation-defective human immunodeficiency virus type-1 mutants. *J.Virol.* **65**, 6129-6136.

DEEN, K.C., MCDOUGAL, J.S., INACKER, R., FOLENA WASSERMAN, G., ARTHOS, J., ROSENBERG, J., MADDON, P.J., AXEL, R. & SWEET, R.W. (1988). A soluble form of CD4 (T4) protein inhibits AIDS virus infection. *Nature.* **331**, 82-84.

DELEYS, R., VANDERBORGHT, B., VANDENHAESEVELD, M., HEYNDRICKX, L., VAN GEEL, A., WAUTERS, C., BERNAERTS, R., SAMAN, E., NIJS, P., WILLEMS, B., TAELMAN, H., VAN DER GROEN, G., PIOT, P., TERSMETTE, T., HUISMAN, J.G. & VAN HEUVERSWYN, H. (1990). Isolation and partial characterization of an unusual human immunodeficiency retrovirus from two persons of West-Central African origin. *J.Virol.* **64**, 1207-1216.

DELFRAISSY, J.F. (1993). Abstracts of the IXth International conference on AIDS. *Berlin, Germany* 69.

DELTA CO-ORDINATING COMMITTEE. (1996). Delta: a randomised double-blind controlled trial comparing combinations of zidovudine plus didanosine or zalcitabine with zidovudine alone in HIV-infected individuals. *Lancet.* **348**, 283-291.

DELWART, E.L., SHPAER, E.G., LOUWAGIE, J., MCCUTCHAN, F.E., GREZ, M., RUBSAMENWAIGMANN, H. & MULLINS, J.I. (1993). Genetic relationships determined by a DNA heteroduplex mobility assay - analysis of HIV-1 env genes. *Science* **262**, 1257-1261.

DELWART, E.L., SHEPPARD, H.W., WALKER, B.D., GOUDSMIT, J. & MULLINS, J.I. (1994). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 evolution in vivo tracked by DNA heteroduplex mobility assays. *J.Virol.* **68**, 6672-6683.

DENG, H.K., LIU, R., ELLMEIER, W., CHOE, S., UNUTMAZ, D., BURKHART, M., DIMARZIO, P., MARMON, S., SUTTON, R.E., HILL, C.M., DAVIS, C.B., PEIPER, S.C., SCHALL, T.J., LITTMAN, D.R. & LANDAU, N.R. (1996). Identification of a major co-receptor for primary isolates of HIV-1. *Nature* **381**, 661-666.

DES JARLAIS, D.C., FRIEDMAN, S.R. & STONEBURNER, R.L. (1988). HIV infection and intravenous drug use: critical issues in transmission dynamics, infection outcomes, and prevention. *Rev.Infect.Dis.* **10**, 151-158.

DEWHURST, S., SAKAI, K., BRESSER, J., STEVENSON, M., EVINGER HODGES, M.J. & VOLSKY, D.J. (1987). Persistent productive infection of human glial cells by human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) and by infectious molecular clones of HIV. *J.Virol.* **61**, 3774-3782.

DI STEFANO, M., WILT, S., GRAY, F., DUBOIS DALCQ, M. & CHIODI, F. (1995). HIV-1 V3 sequences and the development of dementia during AIDS. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **12**, 471-767.

DIETRICH, U., GREZ, M., VONBRIESEN, H., PANHANS, B., GEISSENDORFER, M., KUHNEL, H., MANIAR, J., MAHAMBRE, G., BECKER, W.B., BECKER, M.L.B. & RUBSAMENWAIGMANN, H. (1993). HIV-1 strains from India are highly divergent from prototypic African and United-States/European strains, but are linked to a South African isolate - short communication. *AIDS* **7**, 23-27.

DINARELLO, C.A. & MIER, J.W. (1987). Current concepts- lymphokines. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **317**, 940-945.

DITTMAR, M.T., SIMMONS, G., DONALDSON, Y.K., SIMMONDS, P., CLAPHAM, P., SCHULZ, T. & WEISS, R.A. (1997). Biological characterisation of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) clones derived from different organs of an AIDS patient by long range polymerase chain reaction. *J.Virol.* **submitted,**

DITZEL, H.J., BINLEY, J.M., MOORE, J.P., SODROSKI, J., SULLIVAN, N., SAWYER, L.S.W., HENDRY, R.M., YANG, W.P., BARBAS, C.F. & BURTON, D.R. (1995). Neutralizing recombinant human antibodies to a conformational V2- and CD4-binding site-sensitive epitope of HIV-1 gp120 isolated by using an epitope-masking procedure. *J.Immunol* **154**, 893-906.

DOLEI, A., SERRA, C., ARCA, M.V. & TOIOLO, A. (1992). Acute HIV-1 infection of CD4+ human lung fibroblasts. *AIDS* **6**, 232-233.

DOMINGO, E., DAVILA, M. & ORTIN, J. (1980). Nucleotide sequence heterogeneity of the RNA from a natural population of foot and mouth disease virus. *Gene* **11**, 333-346.

DONALDSON, Y.K., BELL, J.E., HOLMES, E.C., HUGHES, E.S., BROWN, H.K. & SIMMONDS, P. (1994a). *In vivo* distribution and cytopathology of variants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 showing restricted sequence variability in the V3 loop. *J.Virol.* **68**, 5991-6005.

DONALDSON, Y.K., BELL, J.E., IRONSIDE, J.W., BRETTLE, R.P., ROBERTSON, J.R., BUSUTTIL, A. & SIMMONDS, P. (1994b). Redistribution of HIV outside the lymphoid system with onset of AIDS. *Lancet* **343**, 382-385.

DORFMAN, T., MAMMANO, F., HASELTINE, W.A. & GOTTLINGER, H.G. (1994). Role of the matrix protein in the virion association of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope glycoprotein. *J.Virol.* **68**, 1689-1696.

DORNER, A.J. & COFFIN, J.M. (1986). Determinants for receptor interaction and cell killing on the avian retrovirus glycoprotein gp85. *Cell.* **45**, 365-373.

DOUGHERTY, J.P. & TEMIN, H.M. (1988). Determination of the rate of base-pair substitution and insertion mutations in retrovirus replication. *J. Virol.* **62**, 2817-2822.

DRAGIC, T., LITWIN, V., ALLAWAY, G.P., MARTIN, S.R., HUANG, Y.X., NAGASHIMA, K.A., CAYANAN, C., MADDON, P.J., KOUP, R.A., MOORE, J.P. & PAXTON, W.A. (1996). HIV-1 entry into CD4(+) cells is mediated by the chemokine receptor CC-CKR-5. *Nature* **381**, 667-673.

DREW, W.L., MINTZ, L., MINER, R.C., SANDS, M. & KETTERER, B. (1981). Prevalence of cytomegalovirus infection in homosexuals. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **143**, 1888-1892.

DREYER, E.B., KAISER, P.K., OFFERMANN, J.T. & LIPTON, S.A. (1990). HIV-1 coat protein neurotoxicity prevented by calcium channel antagonists. *Science* **248**, 364-367.

DUMITRESCU, O., KALISH, M.L., KLIKS, S.C., BANDEA, C.I. & LEVY, J.A. (1994). Characterization of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 isolates from children in Romania - identification of a new envelope subtype. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **169**, 281-288.

DUVALL, E. & WYLIE, A.H. (1986). Death and the cell. *Immunol.Today.* **7**, 115-119.

EASTMAN, P.S., BOYER, E., MOLE, L., KOLBERG, J., URDEA, M. & HOLODNIY, M. (1995). Non-isotopic hybridization assay for determination of relative amounts of genotypic human immunodeficiency virus type 1 zidovudine resistance. *Journal of Clinical Microbiology* **33**, 2777-2780.

EMBRETSON, J., ZUPANCIC, M., RIBAS, J.L., BURKE, A., RACZ, P., TENNERRACZ, K. & HAASE, A.T. (1993). Massive covert infection of helper T lymphocytes and macrophages by HIV during the incubation period of AIDS. *Nature* **362**, 359-362.

ENGELMAN, A., MIZUCHI, K. & CRAIGIE, R. (1991). HIV-1 DNA integration: mechanism of viral DNA cleavage and DNA strand transfer. *Cell* **67**, 1211-1221.

EPSTEIN, L.G., KUIKEN, C., BLUMBERG, B.M., HARTMAN, S., SHARER, L.R., CLEMENT, M. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1991). HIV-1 V3 domain variation in brain and spleen of children with AIDS: tissue-specific evolution within host-determined quasispecies. *Virology* **180**, 583-590.

ESSEX, M., MCLANE, M.F., LEE, T.H., FALK, L., HOWE, C.W.S., MULLINS, J., CABRADILLA, C. & FRANCIS, D. (1983). Antibodies to cell membrane

antigens associated with human T-cell leukemia virus patients with AIDS. *Science* **220**, 859-862.

EUROPEAN STUDY GROUP. (1989). Risk factors for male to female transmission of HIV. *BMJ.* **298**, 411-415.

EUROPEAN STUDY GROUP. (1992). Comparison of female to male and male to female transmission of HIV in 563 stable couples. *BMJ.* **304**, 809-813.

EVANS, L.A., MCHUGH, T.M., STITES, D.P. & LEVY, J.A. (1987). Differential ability of human immunodeficiency virus to productively infect human cells. *J.Immunol.* **138**, 3415-3418.

EVANS, L.H. & MORREY, J.D. (1987). Tissue specific replication of Friend and Moloney Murine Leukemia viruses in infected mice. *J. Virol.* **61**, 1350-1357.

EZEKOWITZ, R.A., KUHLMAN, M., GROOPMAN, J.E. & BYRN, R.A. (1989). A human serum mannose-binding protein inhibits *in vitro* infection by the human immunodeficiency virus. *J.Exp.Med.* **169**, 185-196.

FAHEY, J.L., PRINCE, H., WEAVER, M., GROOPMAN, J., VISSCHER, B., SCHWARTZ, K. & DETELS, R. (1984). Quantitative changes in T helper or T suppressor/cytotoxic lymphocyte subsets that distinguish AIDS from other immune subset disorders. *Am.J.Med.* **76**, 95-100.

FAHEY, J.L., TAYLOR, J.M.G., DETELS, R., HOFMANN, B., MELMED, R., NISHANIAN, P. & GIORGI, J.V. (1990). The prognostic value of cellular and serologic markers in infection with human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **322**, 166-172.

FAUCI, A.S. (1993a). Multifactorial nature of human immunodeficiency virus disease -implications for therapy. *Science* **262**, 1011-1018.

FAUCI, A.S. (1993b). Immunopathogenesis of HIV infection. *Journal of Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome* **6**, 655-622.

FELBER, B.K. & PAVLAKIS, G.N. (1993). Molecular biology of HIV-1 - positive and negative regulatory elements important for virus expression. *AIDS* **7**, S51-S62.

FELSENSTEIN, J. (1988). Confidence limits on phylogenies: An approach to using the bootstrap. *Evolution* **39**, 783-791.

FELSENSTEIN, J. (1989). PHYLIP-phylogeny inference package (version 3.2). *Cladistics* **5**, 164-166.

FENG, Y., BRODER, C.C., KENNEDY, P.E. & BERGER, E.A. (1996). HIV-1 entry cofactor: Functional cDNA cloning of a seven-transmembrane, G protein-coupled receptor. *Science* **272**, 872-877.

FENYO, E.M., MORFELDT MANSON, L., CHIODI, F., LIND, B., VON GEGERFELT, A., ALBERT, J., OLAUSSON, E. & ASJO, B. (1988). Distinct replicative and cytopathic characteristics of human immunodeficiency virus isolates. *J.Virol.* **62**, 4414-4419.

FENYO, E.M., ALBERT, J. & ASJO, B. (1989). Replicative capacity, cytopathic effect and cell tropism of HIV. *AIDS.* **3 Suppl 1**, S5-12.

FERBAS, J., DAAR, E.S., GROVITFERBAS, K., LECH, W.J., DETELS, R., GIORGI, J.V. & KAPLAN, A.H. (1996). Rapid evolution of human immunodeficiency virus strains with increased replicative capacity during the seronegative window of primary infection. *J.Virol.* **70**, 7285-7289.

FIORE, R.J., POTENZA, D., MONNO, L., APPICE, A., DISTEFANO, M., GIANNELLI, A., LAGRASTA, L., ROMANELLI, C., DIBARI, C. & PASTORE, G. (1995). Detection of HCV RNA in serum and seminal fluid from HIV-1 co-infected intravenous drug addicts. *Journal of Medical Virology* **46**, 364-367.

FISCHL, M.A., RICHMAN, D.D., GRIECO, M.H., DURACK, D.T., KING, D. & AND THE AZT COLLABORATIVE WORKING GROUP. (1987). The efficacy of azidothymidine (AZT) in the treatment of patients with AIDS and AIDS related complex: a double blind, placebo controlled trial. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **317**, 185-191.

FISCHL, M.A., RICHMAN, D.D., HANSEN, N., COLLIER, A.C., CAREY, J.T. & PARA, M.F. (1990). The safety and efficacy of zidovudine (AZT) in treatment of subtypes with mildly symptomatic HIV-1 infection: a double blind, placebo controlled trial. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **112**, 727-737.

FISCHL, M.A., STANLEY, K., COLLIER, A.C., ARDUINO, J.M., STEIN, D.S., FEINBERG, J.E., ALLAN, J.D., GOLDSMITH, J.C., POWDERLY, W.G., RAINES, C.P., MAYJO, K.J., KERULY, J.C., CRAVEN, D., HIRSHORN, L., HIRSCH, M.S., JAYAWEERA, D.T., YOUNG, S.W., PATRONEREESE, J., BRETTLER, D., SPERBER, K., GERITS, P., SEREMETIS, S., GILL, J.C., GELB, L.D., MCGUIRE, M.L., STIFFLER, T., LEDERMAN, M.M., CAREY, J.T., WALLACE, M., MACARTHUR, R.D., BERGE, P., MILDVAN, D., COREY, L., COOMBS, R.W., CUMMINGS, D.K., SCHOOLEY, R.T., RAY, M.G., WAITE, V., KURITZKES, D.R., FUHRER, J., TENZLER, R.J., DONLON, W., VANDERHORST, C.M., TROIANI, L., HORTON, J., LANE, T.W., MURPHY, R.R., PHAIR, J.P., KESSLER, H.A. & ETAL. (1995). Combination and monotherapy with zidovudine and zalcitabine in patients with advanced HIV disease. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **122**, 24-32.

FISCUS, S.A., HEGGEM-SNOW, E.M., TROIANI, L., WALLMARK, E., FOLDS, J.D., SHEFF, B. & VAN DER HORSTR, C.M. (1995). Transient high titres of HIV-1 in plasma and progression of disease. *J.Acquir.Immune.Defic.Syndr.* **9**, 51-57.

FISHER, A.G., ENSOLI, B., IVANOFF, L., CHAMBERLAIN, M., PETTEWAY, S., RATNER, L., GALLO, R.C. & WONG-STAAL, F. (1987). The *sor* gene of HIV-1 is required for efficient virus transmission *in vitro*. *Science* **237**, 888-893.

FISHER, A.G., ENSOLI, B., LOONEY, D., ROSE, A., GALLO, R.C., SAAG, M.S., SHAW, G.M., HAHN, B.H. & WONG STAAL, F. (1988). Biologically diverse molecular variants within a single HIV-1 isolate. *Nature* **334**, 444-447.

FISHER, R.A., BERTONIS, J.M. & MEIER, W. (1988). HIV infection is blocked *in vitro* by recombinant soluble CD4. *Nature* **331**, 76-78.

FOLKS, T., KELLY, J., BENN, S., KINTER, A. & JUSTEMENT, J. (1986). Susceptibility of normal human lymphocytes to infection with HTLV-III/LAV. *J.Immunol.* **136**, 4049-4053.

FOLKS, T., KESSLER, S., ORENSTEIN, J.M., JUSTEMENT, J.S., JAFFE, E. & FAUCI, A.S. (1988). Infection and replication of HIV-1 in purified progenitor cells of normal human bone marrow. *Science* **242**, 919-922.

FOUCHIER, R.A.M., GROENINK, M., KOOTSTRA, N.A., TERSMETTE, M., HUISMAN, H.G., MIEDEMA, F. & SCHUITEMAKER, H. (1992). Phenotype-associated sequence variation in the third variable domain of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 molecule. *J.Virol* **66**, 3138-3187.

FOUCHIER, R.A.M., BROERSEN, S.M., BROUWER, M., TERSMETTE, M., VANTWOUT, A.B., GROENINK, M. & SCHUITEMAKER, H. (1995). Temporal relationship between elongation of the HIV type 1 glycoprotein 120 V2 domain and the conversion toward a syncytium-inducing phenotype. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **11**, 1473-1478.

FRANCHINI, G., RUSCHE, J.R., O'KEEFFE, T.T. & WONG-STAAL, F. (1988). The human immunodeficiency virus type 2 (HIV-2) contains a novel gene encoding a 16 KD protein associated with mature virions. *AIDS Research and Human Retroviruses.* **4**, 243-250.

FRANK, I., STOIBER, H., GODAR, S., STOCKINGER, H., KATINGER, H., DIERCH, M.P. (1996). Acquisition of host cell-surface derived molecules by HIV-1. *AIDS.* **10**, 1611-1620.

FREED, E.O., MYERS, D.J. & RISSER, R. (1990). Characterization of the fusion

domain of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope glycoprotein gp41. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **87**, 4650-4654.

FREED, E.O., MYERS, D.J. & RISSER, R. (1991). Identification of the principal neutralizing determinant of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 as a fusion domain. *J.Virol.* **65**, 190-194.

FREED, E.O. & MARTIN, M.A. (1994). Evidence for a functional interaction between the V1/V2 and C4 domains of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope glycoprotein gp120. *J.Virol.* **68**, 2503-2512.

FREED, E.O., ENGLUND, G., MARTIN, M.A. (1995). Role of the basic domain of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 matrix in macrophage infection. *J. Virol* **69**, 3949-3954.

FREED, E.O. & MARTIN, M.A. (1996). Domains of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 matrix and gp41 cytoplasmic tail required for envelope incorporation into virions. *J.Virol.* **70**, 341-351.

FREEDMAN, A.R., GIBSON, F.M., FLEMING, S.C., SPRY, C.J. & GRIFFIN, G.E. (1991). Human immunodeficiency virus infection of eosinophils in human bone marrow cultures. *J.Exp.Med.* **174**, 1661-1664.

FRIEDMAN KIEN, A.E., LAUBENSTEIN, L.J., RUBINSTEIN, P., BUIMOVICI KLEIN, E., MARMOR, M., STAHL, R., SPIGLAND, I., KIM, K.S. & ZOLLA PAZNER, S. (1982). Disseminated Kaposi's sarcoma in homosexual men. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **96**, 693-700.

FUCHS, D., BANEKOVICH, M., ., HAUSEN, A., HUHEVER, J., REIBNEGGER, G., WERNER, E.R., GSCHNAIT, F.D., DIERICH, M.P. & WACHTER, H. (1988a). Neopterin estimation compared with the ratio of T cell sub-populations in persons infected with HIV-1. *Clin. Chem.* **34**, 2415-2417.

FUCHS, D., HAUSEN, A., REIBNEGGER, G., WERNER, E.R., DIERICH, M.P. & WACHTER, H. (1988b). Neopterin as a marker for activated cell mediated immunity: Application in HIV infection. *Immunol Today* **9**, 150-155.

FUCHS, D., KRAMER, A., REIBNEGGER, G., WERNER, E.R., DIERICH, M.P., GOEDERT, J.J. & WACHTER, H. (1991). Neopterin and beta-2 -microglobulin as prognostic indices in HIV infection. *Infection.* **19**, S98-S102.

FUKASAWA, M., MIURA, T., HASEGAWA, A., MORIKAWA, S., TSUJIMOTO, H., MIKI, K., KITAMURA, T. & HAYAMI, M. (1988). Sequence of simian immunodeficiency virus from African green monkey, a new member of the HIV/SIV group. *Nature* **333**, 457-461.

FUNG, M.S., SUN, C.R., GORDON, W.L., LIOU, R.S., CHANG, T.W., SUN, W.N., DAAR, E.S. & HO, D.D. (1992). Identification and characterization of a neutralization site within the second variable region of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120. *J.Virol.* **66**, 848-856.

GAINES, H., ALBERT, J., VON SYDOW, M., SONNERBORG, A., CHIODI, F., EHRNST, A., STRANNEGARD, O. & ASJO, B. (1987). HIV antigenaemia and virus isolation from plasma during primary HIV infection. *Lancet.* **1**, 1317-1318.

GALLO, R.C., SALAHUDDIN, S.Z., POPOVIC, M., SHEARER, G.M., KAPLAN, M., HAYNES, B.F., PALKER, T.J., REDFIELD, R., OLESKE, J., SAFAI, B. & ET AL. (1984). Frequent detection and isolation of cytopathic retroviruses (HTLV-III) from patients with AIDS and at risk for AIDS. *Science.* **224**, 500-503.

GANESHAN, S., DICKOVER, R.E., KORBER, B.T.M., BRYSON, Y.J. & WOLINSKY, S.M. (1997). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 genetic evolution in children with different rates of development of disease. *J Virol* **71**, 663-677.

GARCIA, J.V. & MILLER, A.D. (1991). Serine phosphorylation-independent down regulation of cell surface CD4 by nef. *Nature* **350**, 508-511.

GARTNER, S., MARKOVITS, P., MARKOVITZ, D.M., BETTS, R.F. & POPOVIC, M. (1986a). Virus isolation from and identification of HTLV-III/LAV infection-producing cells in brain tissue from a patient with AIDS. *JAMA.* **256**, 2365-2371.

GARTNER, S., MARKOVITS, P., MARKOVITZ, D.M., KAPLAN, H., GALLO, R.C. & POPOVIC, M. (1986b). The role of mononuclear phagocytes in HTLV-III/LAV infection. *Science* **233**, 215-219.

GELDERBLOM, H.R., HAUSMANN, E.H., OZEL, M., PAULI, G. & KOCH, M.A. (1987). Fine structure of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) and immunolocalization of structural proteins. *Virology.* **156**, 171-176.

GELDERBLOM, H.R., OZEL, M. & PAULI, G. (1989). Morphogenesis and morphology of HIV. Structure-function relations. *Arch.Virol.* **106**, 1-13.

GELDERBLOM, H.R. (1991). Assembly and morphology of HIV: potential effects of structure on viral function. *AIDS* **5**, 617-638.

GELMAN, E.P., POPOVIC, M., BLAYNEY, D., MASUR, H., SIDHU, G., STAHL, R. & GALLO, R.C. (1983). Proviral DNA of a retrovirus, human T-cell leukemia virus, in two patients with AIDS. *Science* **220**, 862-865.

GENDELMAN, H.E., BACA, L.M., HUSAYNI, H., TURPIN, J.A., SKILLMAN, D., KALTER, D.C., ORENSTEIN, J.M., HOOVER, D.L. & MELTZER, M.S. (1990). Macrophage-HIV interaction: viral isolation and target cell tropism. *AIDS.* **4**, 221-228.

GERUS, P., JETT, M., BERNTON, E.W., BOYLE, T., GELBARD, H.A., DZENKO, K., KEANE, R.W., RESNICK, L., MIZRACHI, Y., VOLSKY, D.J., EPSTEIN, L.G. & GENDELMAN, H.E. (1992). Cytokines and arachidonic acid metabolites produced during HIV-infected macrophage-astroglial interactions: implications for the neuropathogenesis of HIV disease. *J.Exp.Med.* **176**, 1703-1718.

GILL, M.J., SUTHERLAND, L.R. & CHURCH, D.L. (1992). Gastrointestinal tissue cultures for HIV in HIV-infected/AIDS patients. *AIDS.* **6**, 553-556.

GIORGI, J.V., FAHEY, J.L., SMITH, D., HULTIN, L.E., CHENG, H., MITSUYASU, R.T. & DETELS, R. (1987). Early effects of HIV on CD4 lymphocytes *in vivo*. *J.Immunol.* **138**, 3725-3730.

GIULIAN, D., VACA, K. & NOONAN, C.A. (1990). Secretion of neurotoxins by mononuclear phagocytes infected with HIV-1. *Science* **250**, 1593-1596.

GOJOBORI, T., MORIYAMA, E.N., INA, Y., IKEO, K., MIURA, T., TSUJIMOTO, H., HAYAMI, M. & YOKOYAMA, S. (1990a). Evolutionary origin of human and simian immunodeficiency viruses. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **87**, 4108-4111.

GOJOBORI, T., MORIYAMA, E.N. & KIMURA, M. (1990b). Molecular clock of viral evolution, and the neutral theory. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA.* **87**, 10015-10018.

GOJOBORI, T., MONYAMA, E.E., KIMURA, M. (1990c). Molecular evolution: Computer analysis of protein and nucleic acid sequences. pp531-550. Academic press, New York.

GOODENOW, M., HUET, T., SAURIN, W., KWOK, S., SNINSKY, J. & WAIN-HOBSON, S. (1989). HIV-1 isolates are rapidly evolving quasispecies: Evidence for viral mixtures and preferred nucleotide substitutions. *Journal of AIDS* **2**, 344-352.

GOODWIN, G.M., PRETSELL, D.O., CHISWICK, A., EGAN, V. & BRETTLE, R.P. (1996). The Edinburgh cohort of HIV-positive injecting drug users at 10 years after infection: A case-control study of the evolution of dementia. *AIDS* **10**, 431-440.

GORNY, M.K., CONLEY, A.J., KARWOWSKA, S., BUCHBINDER, A., XU,

J.Y., EMINI, E.A., KOENIG, S. & ZOLLAPAZNER, S. (1994a). Neutralization of diverse human immunodeficiency virus type 1 variants by an anti-V3 human monoclonal antibody. *J.Virol.* **66**, 7538-7542.

GORNY, M.K., MOORE, J.P., CONLEY, A.J., KARWOWSKA, S., SODROSKI, J., WILLIAMS, C., BURDA, S., BOOTS, L.J. & ZOLLAPAZNER, S. (1994b). Human anti-V2 monoclonal antibody that neutralizes primary but not laboratory isolates of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J.Virol.* **68**, 8312-8320.

GOTTLIEB, M.S., SCHROFF, R., SCHANKER, H.M., WEISMAN, J.D., FAN, P.T., WOLF, R.A. & SAXON, A. (1981). Pneumocystis carinii pneumonia and mucosal candidiasis in previously healthy homosexual men: evidence of a new acquired cellular immunodeficiency. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **305**, 1425-1431.

GOUDSMIT, J., DE WOLF, F., PAUL, D.A., EPSTEIN, L.G., LANGE, J.M., KRONE, W.J., SPEELMAN, H., WOLTERS, E.C., VAN DER NOORDAA, J., OLESKE, J.M. & ET AL. (1986). Expression of human immunodeficiency virus antigen (HIV-Ag) in serum and cerebrospinal fluid during acute and chronic infection. *Lancet.* **2**, 177-180.

GRAHAM, N.M.H., ZEGER, S., PARK, L.P., VERMUND, S.H., DETELS, R., RINALDO, C.R. & PHAIR, J.P. (1992). The effects on survival of early treatment of HIV infection. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **326**, 1037-1042.

GRAM, G.J., HEMMING, A., BOLMSTEDT, A., JANSSON, B., OLOFSSON, S., AKERBLOM, L., NIELSEN, J.O. & HANSEN, J.E.S. (1994). Identification of an N-linked glycan in the V1-loop of HIV- 1 gp120 influencing neutralization by anti-V3 antibodies and soluble CD4. *Arch.Virol.* **139**, 253-261.

GRASSI, F., MENEVERI, R., GULLBERG, M., LOPALCO, L., ROSSI, G.B., LANZA, P., DE SANTIS, C., BRATTSAND, G., BUTTO, S. & GINELLI, E. (1991). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 mimics a hidden monomorphic epitope borne by class I major histocompatibility complex heavy chains. *J.Exp.Med.* **174**, 53-62.

GRAZIOSI, C., PANTALEO, G., DEMAREST, J.F., COHEN, O.J., VACCAREZZA, M., BUTINI, L., MONTRONI, M. & FAUCI, A.S. (1993). HIV-1 infection in the lymphoid organs. *AIDS* **7**, S53-S58.

GREGSON, S., GARNETT, G.P. & ANDERSON, R.M. (1994). Is HIV-1 likely to become a leading cause of adult mortality in sub-Saharan Africa? *J. AIDS.* **7**, 839-852.

GREWE, C., BECK, A. & GELDERBLOM, H.R. (1990). HIV: early virus-cell interactions. *J.Acquir.Immune.Defic.Syndr.* **3**, 965-974.

GREZ, M., DIETRICH, U., BALFE, P., VONBRIESEN, H., MANIAR, J.K., MAHAMBRE, G., DELWART, E.L., MULLINS, J.I. & RUBSAMENWAIGMANN, H. (1994). Genetic analysis of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 and 2 (HIV-1 and HIV-2) mixed infections in India reveals a recent spread of HIV-1 and HIV-2 from a single ancestor for each of these viruses. *J.Virol.* **68**, 2161-2168.

GRODY, W.W., CHENG, L. & LEWIS, W. (1990). Infection of the heart by the human immunodeficiency virus. *Am. J. Cardiol.* **66**, 203-206.

GROENINK, M., FOUCHIER, R.A.M., BROERSEN, S., BAKER, C.H., KOOT, M., VAN'T WOUT, A.B., HUISMAN, H.G., MIEDEMA, F., TERSMETTE, M. & SCHUITEMAKER, H. (1993). Relation of phenotype evolution of HIV-1 to envelope V2 configuration. *Science* **260**, 1513-1516.

GROUX, H., TORPIER, G., MONTE, D., MOUTON, Y., CAPRON, A. & AMEISEN, J.C. (1992). Activation-induced death by apoptosis in CD4+ T cells from human immunodeficiency virus-infected asymptomatic individuals. *J.Exp.Med.* **175**, 331-340.

GURTLER, L.G., HAUSER, P.H., EBERLE, J., VONBRUNN, A., KNAPP, S., ZEKENG, L., TSAGUE, J.M. & KAPTUE, L. (1994). A new subtype of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (mvp- 5180) from Cameroon. *J.Virol.* **68**, 1581-1585.

GUYADER, M., EMERMAN, M., SONIGO, P., CLAVEL, F., MONTAGNIER, L. & ALIZON, M. (1987). Genome organization and transactivation of the human immunodeficiency virus type 2. *Nature.* **326**, 662-669.

GUYADER, M., EMERMAN, M., MONTAGNIER, L. & PEDEN, K. (1989). Vpx mutants of HIV-2 are infectious in established cell lines but display a severe defect in peripheral blood lymphocytes. *EMBO.J.* **8**, 1169-1175.

GYORKEY, F., MELNICK, J.L. & GYORKEY, P. (1987). Human immunodeficiency virus in brain biopsies of patients with AIDS and progressive encephalopathy. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **155**, 870-876.

HAHN, B.H., SHAW, G.M., ARYA, S.K., POPOVIC, M., GALLO, R.C. & WONG STAAL, F. (1984). Molecular cloning and characterization of the HTLV-III virus associated with AIDS. *Nature.* **312**, 166-169.

HAHN, B.H., SHAW, G.M., TAYLOR, M.E., REDFIELD, R.R., MARKHAM, P.D., SALAHUDDIN, S.Z., WONG STAAL, F., GALLO, R.C., PARKS, E.S. & PARKS, W.P. (1986). Genetic variation in HTLV-III/LAV over time in patients with AIDS or at risk for AIDS. *Science* **232**, 1548-1553.

HAIGWOOD, N.L., SHUSTER, J.R., MOORE, G.K., LEE, H., SKILES, P.V., HIGGINS, K.W., BARR, P.J., GEORGE NASCIMENTO, C. & STEIMER, K.S. (1990). Importance of hypervariable regions of HIV-1 gp120 in the generation of virus neutralizing antibodies. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **6**, 855-869.

HANSEN, J.E., NIELSEN, C., ARENDRUP, M., OLOFSSON, S., MATHIESEN, L., NIELSEN, J.O. & CLAUSEN, H. (1991). Broadly neutralizing antibodies targeted to mucin-type carbohydrate epitopes of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J.Virol.* **65**, 6461-6467.

HAROUSE, J.M., KUNSCH, C. & HARTLE, H.T. (1989). CD4-independent infection of human neural cells by human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J.Virol.* **63**, 2527-2533.

HARPER, M.E., MARSELLE, L.M., GALLO, R.C. & WONG STAAL, F. (1986). Detection of lymphocytes expressing human T lymphotropic virus type III in lymph nodes and peripheral blood from infected individuals by *in situ* hybridisation. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **83**, 772-776.

HARRER, E., HARRER, T., BUCHBINDER, S., MANN, D.L., FEINBERG, M., YILMA, T., JOHNSON, R.P. & WALKER, B.D. (1994). HIV-1-specific cytotoxic T lymphocyte response in healthy, long-term nonprogressing seropositive persons. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **10**, S77-S78.

HATTORI, T., KOITO, A., TAKATSUKI, K., KIDO, H. & KATUNUMA, N. (1989). Involvement of tryptase-related cellular protease(s) in human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infection. *FEBS Lett.* **248**, 48-52.

HE, J., CHEN, Y., FARZAN, M., CHOE, H., OHAGEN, A., GARTNER, S., BUSCIGLIO, J., YANG, X., HOFMANN, W., NEWMAN, W., MACKAY, C.R., SODROSKI, J. & GABUZDA, D. (1997). CCR3 and CCR5 are co-receptors for HIV-1 infection of microglia. *Nature.* **385**, 645-649.

HEINZINGER, N.K., BUKRINSKY, M.I., HAGGERTY, S.A., RAYLAND, A.M., KEWALRAMANI, V., LEE, M-A., GENDELMAN, W.E., RATNER, L., STEVENSON, M., EMERMAN, M. (1994). The vpr protein of HIV-1 influences nuclear localization of viral nucleic acids in non-dividing host cells. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **91**, 7311-7315.

HELSETH, E., OLSHEVSKY, U., FURMAN, C. & SODROSKI, J. (1991). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 envelope glycoprotein regions important for association with the gp41 transmembrane glycoprotein. *J.Virol* **65**, 2119-2123.

HENDERSON, L., SOWDER, R., COPELAND, T.D., OROZLAN, S., ARTHUR, L.O., ROBEY, W.G., FISCHINGER, P.G. (1987). Direct identification of class II

histocompatibility DR proteins in preparations of human T cell lymphotropic virus type III. *J. Virol* **61**, 629-632.

HENDERSON, L.A. & QURESHI, M.N. (1993). A peptide inhibitor of human immunodeficiency virus infection binds to novel human cell surface polypeptides. *Journal of Biological Chemistry* **268**, 15291-15297.

HEVERKOS, H.W. & QUINN, T.C. (1995). The third wave: HIV infection among heterosexuals in the United States and Europe. *Int.J.STD.AIDS* **6**, 227-232.

HILDRETH, J.E. & ORENTAS, R.J. (1989). Involvement of a leukocyte adhesion receptor (LFA-1) in HIV-induced syncytium formation. *Science* **244**, 1075-1078.

HIRSCH, V.M., OLMSTED, R.A., MURPHEY CORB, M., PURCELL, R.H. & JOHNSON, P.R. (1989). An African primate lentivirus (SIVsm) closely related to HIV-2. *Nature.* **339**, 389-392.

HO, D.D., MOUDGIL, T. & ALAM, M. (1989). Quantitation of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in the blood of infected persons. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **321**, 1621-1625.

HO, D.D., FUNG, M.S., CAO, Y.Z., LI, X.L., SUN, C., CHANG, T.W. & SUN, N.C. (1991). Another discontinuous epitope on glycoprotein gp120 that is important in human immunodeficiency virus type 1 neutralization is identified by a monoclonal antibody. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **88**, 8949-8952.

HO, D.D., NEUMANN, A.U., PERELSON, A.S., CHEN, W., LEONARD, J.M. & MARKOWITZ, M. (1995). Rapid turnover of plasma virions and CD4 lymphocytes in HIV-1 infection. *Nature* **373**, 123-126.

HOBER, D., LUCAS, B., WATTRE, P., CAPRON, A. & HAQUE, A. (1992). TNF-alpha production by U937 promonocytes is enhanced by factors released from HIV-infected T4 lymphocytes: TNF-alpha is one of the mediators causing lysis of HIV-infected T4 cells. *Clin.Immunol.Immunopathol.* **62**, 168-175.

HOBER, D., AJANA, F., PETIT, M.C., SARTIAUX, C., BONIFACE, M., CAILLAUX, M., MOUTON, Y., WATTRE, P. & MANIEZMONTREUIL, M. (1993). Granulocyte-macrophage colony-stimulating factor and tumor necrosis factor-alpha in patients with human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) type-1 infection. *Microbiol.Immunol* **37**, 785-792.

HOFMANN, B., WANG, Y., CUMBERLAND, W.G., DETELS, R., BOZORGMELUI, M. & FAHEY, J.L. (1990). Serum beta-2-microglobulin level increases with HIV infection: Relation to seroconversion, CD4 T cell fall and prognosis. *AIDS* **4**, 207-214.

HOGLUND, S. (1990). Assembly of the internal HIV core proteins. VIII international congress of virology, Berlin. *Abstract* W47-1.

HOLLAND, C.A., HARTLEY, J.W., ROWE, W.P. & HOPKINS, N. (1985). At least four viral genes contribute to the leukeomogenicty of murine retrovirus MCF 247 in AKR mice. *J. Virol.* **53**, 158-165.

HOLMES, E.C., ZHANG, L.Q., SIMMONDS, P., LUDLAM, C.A. & LEIGH BROWN, A.J. (1992). Convergent and divergent sequence evolution in the surface envelope glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 within a single infected patient. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **89**, 4835-4839.

HOLMES, E.C., ZHANG, L.Q., SIMMONDS, P., ROGERS, A.S. & BROWN, A.J.L. (1993). Molecular investigation of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) infection in a patient of an HIV-infected surgeon. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **167**, 1411-1414.

HOLMES, E.C., ZHANG, L.Q., ROBERTSON, P., CLELAND, A., HARVEY, E., SIMMONDS, P. & BROWN, A.J.L. (1995). The molecular epidemiology of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in Edinburgh. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **171**, 45-53.

HOWCRAFT, T.K., STREBEL, K., MARTIN, M.A. & SINGER, D.S. (1993). Repression of MHC class 1 gene promoter activity by two-exon *tat* of HIV. *Science* **260**, 1320-1322.

HU, W.S. & TEMIN, H. (1990). Genetic consequences of packaging two RNA genomes in one retroviral particle: pseudodiploidy and high rate of genetic recombination. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **87**, 1556-1560.

HUANG, Y.X., PAXTON, W.A., WOLINSKY, S.M., NEUMANN, A.U., ZHANG, L.Q., HE, T., KANG, S., CERADINI, D., JIN, Z.Q., YAZDANBAKHSH, K., KUNSTMAN, K., ERICKSON, D., DRAGON, E., LANDAU, N.R., PHAIR, J., HO, D.D. & KOUP, R.A. (1996). The role of a mutant CCR5 allele in HIV-1 transmission and disease progression. *Nature Med* **2**, 1240-1243.

HUBER, C., BATCHELOR, J.R., FUCHS, D., HAUSEN, A., LANG, A., NEIDERWIESER, D., REIBNEGGER, G., SWELTY, P., TROPPMAIR, J. & WACHTER, H. (1984). Immune response-associated production of neopterin: Release from macrophage primarily under control of interferon-gamma. *J.Exp.Med.* **160**, 310-316.

HUET, T., CHEYNIER, R., MEYERHANS, A., ROELANTS, G. & WAIN HOBSON, S. (1990). Genetic organization of a chimpanzee lentivirus related to HIV-1. *Nature* **345**, 356-359.

HUGHES, E.S., BELL, J.E. & SIMMONDS, P. (1997). Investigation of the dynamics of the spread of human immunodeficiency virus to brain and other tissues by evolutionary analysis of sequences from the p17gag and env genes. *J.Virol.* **71**, 1272-1280.

HUGIN, A.W., VACCHIO, M.S. & MORSE, H.C. (1991). A virus-encoded "superantigen" in a retrovirus-induced immunodeficiency syndrome of mice. *Science.* **19; 252**, 424-427.

HUNTER, E. (1978). The mechanism for genetic recombination in the avian retroviruses. *Curr.Top.Microbiol.Immunol.* **79**, 295-309.

HWANG, S.S., BOYLE, T.J., LYERLY, H.K. & CULLEN, B.R. (1991). Identification of the envelope V3 loop as the primary determinant of cell tropism in HIV-1. *Science* **253**, 71-74.

IMBERTI, L., SOTTINI, A., BETTINARDI, A., PUCTI, M. & PRIMI, D. (1991). Selective depletion in HIV infection of T cells that bear specific T cell receptor V beta sequences. *Science.* **254**, 860-862.

IVEY HOYLE, M., CLARK, R.K. & ROSENBERG, M. (1991). The N-terminal 31 amino acids of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope protein gp120 contain a potential gp41 contact site. *J.Virol.* **65**, 2682-2685.

JACKS, T., POWER, M., MASLARZ, F., LUCIW, P., BARR, P. & VARMUS, H. (1988). Characterization of ribosomal frameshifting in HIV-1 gag-pol expression. *Nature* **331**, 280-283.

JACKSON, J.B. & BALFOUR, H.H. (1988). Practical diagnostic testing for immunodeficiency virus. *Clin.Microbiol.Rev.* **1**, 124-138.

JACKSON, J.B., MACDONALD, K., CADWELL, J., SULLIVAN, C. & KLINE, W.E. (1990). Absence of HIV infection in blood donors with indeterminate Western-blot tests for antibody to HIV-1. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **322**, 217-222.

JACOBSEN, H., HANGGI, M., OTT, M., DUNCAN, I.B., OWEN, S., ANDREONI, M., VELLA, S. & MOUS, J. (1996). In vivo resistance to a human immunodeficiency virus type 1 proteinase inhibitor: Mutations, kinetics, and frequencies. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **173**, 1379-1387.

JACOBSON, M.A., ABRAMS, D.I., VOLBERDING, P.A., BACCHETTI, P., WILBER, J., CHAISSON, R.E., CROWE, S., HOWARD, W. & MOSS, A. (1989). Sreum beta-2-microglobulin decreases in patients with AIDS or ARC treated with zidovudine. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **159**, 1029-1036.

JACQUEZ, J.A., KOOPMAN, J.S., SIMON, C.P., LONGINI, I.M. (1994). Role of the primary infection in epidemics of HIV infection in gay cohorts. *J. Acquir. Immune. Defic. Syndr* **7**, 1169-1184.

JANSENS, W., HEYNDRICKX, L., FRANSEN, K., MOTTE, J., NKENGASONG, J.N., NDUMBE, P.M., DELAPORTE, E., PERRET, J.L., ATENDE, C., PIOT, P. & VAN DER GROEN, G. (1994). Genetic and phylogenetic analysis of env subtypes G and H in Central Africa. *Aids Res. and Hum. Retro.* **10**, 877-879.

JAVAHERIAN, K., LANGLOIS, A.J., MCDANAL, C., ROSS, K.L., ECKLER, L.I., JELLIS, C.L., PROFY, A.T., RUSCHE, J.R., BOLOGNESI, D.P. & PUTNEY, S.D. (1989). Principal neutralizing domain of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope protein. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **86**, 6768-6772.

JAVAHERIAN, K., LANGLOIS, A.J., LAROSA, G.J., PROFY, A.T., BOLOGNESI, D.P., HERLIHY, W.C., PUTNEY, S.D. & MATTHEWS, T.J. (1990). Broadly neutralizing antibodies elicited by the hypervariable neutralizing determinant of HIV-1. *Science* **250**, 1590-1593.

JEANG, K.T., CHUN, R., LIN, N.H., GATIGNOL, A., GLABE, C.G. & FAN, H. (1993). *In vitro* and *in vivo* binding of human immunodeficiency virus type- 1 tat protein and sp1 transcription factor. *J.Virol.* **67**, 6224-6233.

JENKINSON, E.J., KINGSTON, R., SMITH, C.A., WILLIAMS, G.T. & OWEN, J.J.T. (1989). Antigen induced apoptosis in developing T cells: a mechanism for negative selection of the TCR repertoire. *Eur.J.Immunol.* **19**, 2175-2177.

JENTOFT, N. (1990). Why are proteins O-glycosylated? *TIBS* **15**, 291-294.

JOHNSON, J.E. (1992). Detection of HIV-1 antibody by using commercially available whole-cell lysate, synthetic peptide, and recombinant protein enzyme immunoassay systems. *Journal of Clinical Microbiology* **30**, 216-218.

JUKES, T.H., CANTOR,C.R. (1969). Mammalian protein metabolism: Evolution of protein molecules. pp21-132. Academic press, New York.

KALDOR, J.M., SITTITRAI, W., JOHN, T.J. & KITAMURA, T. (1994). The emerging epidemic of HIV infection and AIDS in Asia and the Pacific. *AIDS* **8**, S1-S2.

KAN, N.C., FRANCHINI, G., WONG STAAL, F., DUBOIS, G.C., ROBEY, W.G., LAUTENBERGER, J.A. & PAPAS, T.S. (1986). Identification of HTLV-III/LAV sor gene product and detection of antibodies in human sera. *Science* **231**, 1553-1555.

KANG, C.Y., NARA, P., CHAMAT, S., CARALLI, V., RYSKAMP, T., HAIGWOOD, N., NEWMAN, R. & KOHLER, H. (1991). Evidence for non-V3-specific neutralizing antibodies that interfere with gp120/CD4 binding in human immunodeficiency virus 1-infected humans. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **88**, 6171-6175.

KANKI, P.J., KURTH, R., BECKER, W., DREISMAN, G., MOLANE, M.F. & ESSEX, M. (1985). Antibodies to simian T-lymphotropic retrovirus type III in African green monkeys and recognition of STLV-III viral proteins by AIDS and related sera. *Lancet* **i**, 1330-1332.

KAPPES, J.C., CONVOAY, J.A., LEE, S.W., SHAW, G.M., HAHN, B.H. (1991). Human immunodeficiency virus type 2 vpx protein augments viral infectivity. *Virology* **184**, 197-209.

KAPPLER, J., KOTZIN, B., HERRON, L., GELFAND, E., BIGLER, R., BOYLSTON, A., CARREL, S., POSNETT, D., CHOI, Y. & MARRACK, P. (1980). V-beta-specific stimulation of human T cells by staphylococcal toxins. *Science.* **244**, 811-813.

KARN, J., DINGWALL, C., FINCH, J.T., HEAPHY, S. & GAIT, M.J. (1991). RNA binding by the tat and rev proteins of HIV-1. *Biochimie* **73**, 9-16.

KASPER, P., KAISER, R., OLDENBURG, J., BRACKMANN, H.H., MATZ, B. & SCHNEWEIS, K.E. (1994). Parallel evolution in the V3 region of HIV type 1 after infection of hemophiliacs from a homogeneous source. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **10**, 1669-1678.

KASPER, P., SIMMONDS, P., SCHNEWEIS, K.E., KAISER, R., MATZ, B., OLDENBURG, J., BRACKMANN, H.H. & HOLMES, E.C. (1995). The genetic diversification of the HIV type 1 gag p17 gene in patients infected from a common source. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **11**, 1197-1201.

KATZ, J., NISHANIAN, P., MITSUYASU, R.T. & BONAVIDA, B. (1988). Antibody dependent cellular cytotoxicity (ADCC)- mediated destruction of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) coated CD4+ T lymphocytes by acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS) effector cells. *J.Clin.Immunol.* **8**, 453-458.

KATZ, R.A. & SKALKA, A.M. (1990). Generation of diversity in retroviruses. *Annu.Rev.Genet.* **24**, 409-445.

KIMURA,M. (1980). A simple method for estimating evolutionary rate of base substitution through comparative studies of nucleotide sequences. *J. Mol. Evol.* **16**, 111-120.

KISHINO, H., HASEGAWA, M. (1989). Evaluation of the maximum likelihood estimate of the evolutionary tree topologies from DNA sequence data, and the branching order in Hominoidea. *J. Mol. Evol.* **29**, 170-179.

KESHET, E. & TEMIN, H.M. (1979). Cell killing by spleen necrosis virus is correlated with a transient accumulation of spleen necrosis virus DNA. *J.Virol.* **31**, 376-388.

KESTLER, H.W., RINGLER, D.J., MORI, K., PANICALI, D.L., SEHGAL, P.K., DANIEL, M.D. & DESROSIERS, R.C. (1991). Importance of the nef gene for maintenance of high virus loads and for development of AIDS. *Cell.* **65**, 651-662.

KEYS, B., KARIS, J., FADEEL, B., VALENTIN, A., NORKRANS, G., HAGBERG, L. & CHIODI, F. (1993). V3 sequences of paired HIV-1 isolates from blood and cerebrospinal fluid cluster according to host and show variation related to the clinical stage of disease. *Virology* **196**, 475-483.

KHABBAZ, R.F., HENEINE, W., GEORGE, J.R., PAREKH, B., ROWE, T., WOODS, T., SWITZER, W.M., MCCLURE, H.M., MURPHEYCORB, M. & FOLKS, T.M. (1994). Infection of a laboratory worker with simian immunodeficiency virus. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **330**, 172-177.

KIKUKAWA, R., KOYANAGI, Y., HARADA, S., KOBAYASHI, N., HATANAKA, M. & YAMAMOTO, N. (1986). Differential susceptibility to the acquired immunodeficiency syndrome retrovirus in cloned cells of human leukaemic T cell line molt-4. *J. Virol.* **57**, 1159-1162.

KLATZMANN, D., BARRE-SINOUSSI, F. & NUGEYRE, M.T. (1984a). Selective tropism of lymphadenopathy-associated virus (LAV) for helper induced lymphocytes. *Science* **225**, 59-63.

KLATZMANN, D., CHAMPAGNE, E., CHAMARET, S., GRUEST, J., GUETARD, D., HERCEND, T., GLUCKMAN, J.C. & MONTAGNIER, L. (1984b). T-lymphocyte T4 molecule behaves as the receptor for human retrovirus LAV. *Nature.* **312**, 767-768.

KLEIN, R.S., HARRIS, C.A., BUTKUS-SMALL, C., THOLL, B., LESSER, M. & FRIEDLAND, G.H. (1984). Oral candidiasis in high risk patients as the original manifestation of the acquired immune deficiency syndrome. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **311**, 354-358.

KLIMKAIT, T., STREBEL, K., HOGGAN, M.D., MARTIN, M.A. & ORENSTEIN, J.M. (1991). The HIV-1 specific protein vpu is required for efficient virus maturation and release. *J.Virol.* **64**, 621-629.

KNIGHT, S.C., MACATONIA, S.E. & PATTERSON, S. (1993). Infection of dendritic cells with HIV-1: virus load regulates stimulation and suppression of T-cell activity. *Res.Virology* **144**, 75-80.

KNOX, K.K. & CARRIGAN, D.R. (1996). Active HHV-6 infection in the lymph nodes of HIV-infected patients: In vitro evidence that HHV-6 can break HIV latency. *J.Acq.Immun.Defic.Synd.Hum.R.* **11**, 370-378.

KOENIG, S., GENDELMAN, H.E., ORENSTEIN, J.M., DAL CANTO, M.C., PEZESHKPOUR, G.H., YUNGBLUTH, M., JANOTTA, F., AKSAMIT, A., MARTIN, M.A. & FAUCI, A.S. (1986). Detection of AIDS virus in macrophages in brain tissue from AIDS patients with encephalopathy. *Science.* **233**, 1089-1093.

KOGA, Y., LINDSTROM, E., FENYO, E.M., WIGZELL, H. & MAK, T.W. (1988). High levels of heterodisperse RNAs accumulate in T cells infected with HIV and in normal lymphocytes. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **85**, 4521-4525.

KOITO, A., HARROWE, G., LEVY, J.A. & CHENGMAYER, C. (1994). Functional role of the V1/V2 region of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope glycoprotein gp120 in infection of primary macrophages and soluble CD4 neutralization. *J.Virol.* **68**, 2253-2259.

KOITO, A., STAMATATOS, L. & CHENG-MAYER, C. (1995). Small amino acid sequence changes within the V2 domain can affect the function of a T cell line tropic human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope gp120. *Virology.* **206**, 878-884.

KORBER, B.T.M., KUNSTMAN, K.J., PATTERSON, B.K., FURTADO, M., MCEVILLY, M.M., LEVY, R. & WOLINSKY, S.M. (1994). Genetic differences between blood- and brain-derived viral sequences from human immunodeficiency virus type 1- infected patients: evidence of conserved elements in the V3 region of the envelope protein of brain-derived sequences. *J.Virol.* **68**, 7467-7481.

KOTLER, D.P. (1993). Organ-specific manifestations of HIV infection gastrointestinal diseases. *AIDS* **7**, S211-S213.

KOUP, R.A., SAFRIT, J.T., CAO, Y.Z., ANDREWS, C.A., MCLEOD, G., BORKOWSKY, W., FARTHING, C. & HO, D.D. (1994). Temporal association of cellular immune responses with the initial control of viraemia in primary human immunodeficiency virus type 1 syndrome. *J.Virol.* **68**, 4650-4655.

KOWALSKI, M., POTZ, J., BASIRIPOUR, L., DORFMAN, T., GOH, W.C., TERWILLIGER, E., DAYTON, A., ROSEN, C., HASELTINE, W. & SODROSKI, J. (1987). Functional regions of the envelope glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *Science.* **237**, 1351-1355.

KOWALSKI, M., BERGERON, L., DORFMAN, T., HASELTINE, W. & SODROSKI, J. (1991). Attenuation of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 cytopathic effect by a mutation affecting the transmembrane envelope glycoprotein. *J.Virol.* **65**, 281-291.

KOYANAGI, Y., MILES, S., MITSUYASU, R.T., MERRILL, J.E., VINTERS, H.V. & CHEN, I.S. (1987). Dual infection of the central nervous system by AIDS viruses with distinct cellular tropisms. *Science.* **236**, 819-822.

KUIKEN, C.L., ZWART, G., BAAN, E., COUTINHO, R.A., VANDENHOEK, J.A.R. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1993). Increasing antigenic and genetic diversity of the V3 variable domain of the human immunodeficiency virus envelope protein in the course of the AIDS epidemic. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **90**, 9061-9065.

KUIKEN, C.L., GOUDSMIT, J., WEILLER, G.F., ARMSTRONG, J.S., HARTMAN, S., PORTEGIES, P., DEKKER, J. & CORNELISSEN, M. (1995). Differences in human immunodeficiency virus type 1 V3 sequences from patients with and without AIDS dementia complex. *Journal of General Virology* **76**, 175-180.

KUMAR, S., TAMURA, K. & NEI, M. (1993). In *MEGA: Molecular Evolutionary Genetics Analysis, version 1.0.* University Park. The Pensylvannia State University.

KUNZI, M.S. & GROOPMAN, J.E. (1993). Identification of a novel human immunodeficiency virus strain cytopathic to megakaryocytic cells. *Blood* **81**, 3336-3342.

LACKRITZ, E.M., RUEBUSH, T.K., ZUCKER, J.R., ADUNGOSI, J.E., WERE, J.B.O. & CAMPBELL, C.C. (1993). Blood transfusion practices and blood-banking services in a kenyan hospital. *AIDS* **7**, 995-999.

LACKRITZ, E.M., SATTEN, G.A., ABERLEGRASSE, J., DODD, R.Y., RAIMONDI, V.P., JANSSEN, R.S., LEWIS, W.F., NOTARI, E.P. & PETERSEN, L.R. (1995). Estimated risk of transmission of the human immunodeficiency virus by screened blood in the United States. *N.Engl.J.Med* **333**, 1721-1725.

LAMBERT, J., SEIDLIN, M., REICHMAN, R.C., PETTINELLI, C., VALENTINE, F.T. & DOLIN, R. (1990). 2'3'-Dideoxyinosine (ddI) in patients with AIDS or ARC: a phase one trial. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **322**, 1333-1340.

LAMERS, S.L., SLEASMAN, J.W., SHE, J.X., BARRIE, K.A., POMEROY, S.M., BARRETT, D.J. & GOODENOW, M.M. (1993). Independent variation and positive selection in *env* V1 and V2 domains within maternal-infant strains of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 *in vivo*. *J.Virol.* **67**, 3951-3960.

LANG, W., PERKINS, H., ANDERSON, R.E., ROYCE, R., JEWELL, N. & WINKELSTEIN, W. (1989). Patterns of T lymphocyte changes with human immunodeficiency virus infection: from seroconversion to the development of AIDS. *AIDS* **2**, 63-69.

LANZAVECCHIA, A., ROOSNEK, E., GREGORY, T., BERMAN, P. & ABRIGNANI, S. (1988). T cells can present antigens such as HIV gp120 targeted to their own surface molecules. *Nature.* **334**, 530-532.

LARDER, B.A., DARBY, G. & RICHMAN, D.D. (1989). HIV with reduced sensitivity to zidovudine (AZT) isolated during prolonged therapy. *Science* **243**, 1731-1734.

LARDER, B.A., KOHLI, A., BLOOR, S., KEMP, S.D., HARRIGAN, P.R., SCHOOLEY, R.T., LANGE, J.M.A., PENNINGTON, K.N. & STCLAIR, M.H. (1996). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 drug susceptibility during zidovudine (AZT) monotherapy compared with AZT plus 2',3'-dideoxyinosine or AZT plus 2',3'-dideoxycytidine combination therapy. *J.Virol.* **70**, 5922-5929.

LAROSA, G.J., DAVIDE, J.P., WEINHOLD, K., WATERBURY, J.A., PROFY, A.T., LEWIS, J.A., LANGLOIS, A.J., DREESMAN, G.R., BOSWELL, R.N. & SHADDUCK, P. (1990). Conserved sequence and structural elements in the HIV-1 principal neutralizing determinant. *Science* **249**, 932-935.

LASKY, L.A., NAKAMURA, G., SMITH, D.H., FENNIE, C., SHIMASAKI, C., PATZER, E., BERMAN, P., GREGORY, T. & CAPON, D.J. (1987). Delineation of a region of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 glycoprotein critical for interaction with the CD4 receptor. *Cell.* **50**, 975-985.

LAURENT-CRAWFORD, A.G., KRUST, B., MULLER, S., RIVIERE, Y., REYCUILLE, M.A., BECHET, J.M., MONTAGNIER, L. & HOVANESSIAN, A.G. (1991). The cytopathic effect of HIV is associated with apoptosis. *Virology.* **185**, 829-839.

LAURENT-CRAWFORD, A.G., KRUST, B., RIVIERE, Y., DESGRANGES, C., MULLER, S., KIENY, M.P., DAUGUET, C. & HOVANESSIAN, A.G. (1993). Membrane expression of HIV envelope glycoproteins triggers apoptosis in CD4 cells. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **9**, 761-773.

LAZZARIN, A., SARACCO, A., MUSICCO, M., NICOLOSI, A. (1991). Man to woman sexual transmission of the human immunodeficiency virus: Risk factors related to sexual behaviour, man's infectiousness, and woman's susceptibility. *Arch. Intern. Med* **151**, 2411-2416.

LEIDER, J.M., PALESE, P. & SMITH, F.I. (1988). Determination of the mutation

rate of a retrovirus. *J. Virol.* **62**, 3084-3091.

LEIS, J., BALTIMORE, D., BISHOP, M., COFFIN, J., FLEISSHER, E., GOFF, P.S., OROSZLAN, S., ROBINSON, H., SKALKA, A.M., TEMIN, H.M. & VOGT, V. (1988). Standardized and simplified nomenclature for proteins common to all retroviruses. *J. Virol.* **62**, 1808-1809.

LEIST, T.P., RUEDI, E. & ZINKERNAGEL, R.M. (1988). Virus-triggered immune suppression in mice caused by virus-specific cytotoxic T cells. *Journal of Experimental Medicine.* **167**, 1749-1754.

LEONARD, C.K., SPELLMAN, M.W., RIDDLE, L., HARRIS, R.J., THOMAS, J.N. & GREGORY, T.J. (1990). Assignment of intrachain disulphide bonds and characterization of potential glycosylation sites of the type 1 recombinant human immunodeficiency virus envelope glycoprotein (gp120) expressed in Chinese hamster ovary cells. *Journal of Biological Chemistry* **265**, 10373-10382.

LEVY, J.A., HOFFMAN, A.D., KRAMER, S.M., LANDIS, J.A. & SHIMABUKURO, J.M. (1984). Isolation of lymphocytopathic retroviruses from San Francisco patients with AIDS. *Science* **225**, 840-842.

LEVY, J.A., SHIMABUKURO, J., MCHUGH, T., CASAVANT, C., STITES, D. & OSHIRO, L. (1985). AIDS-associated retroviruses (ARV) can productively infect other cells besides human T helper cells. *Virology.* **147**, 441-448.

LEVY, J.A. (1988). Mysteries of HIV: challenges for therapy and prevention. *Nature* **333**, 519-523.

LEVY, D.N., FERNANDEZ, L.S., WILLIAMS, W.V., WEINER, D.B. (1993). Induction of cell differentiation by HIV-1 vpr. *Cell* **72**, 541-550.

LI, W.H., WOLFE, K.H., SOURDIS, J., SHARP, M.P. (1987). Reconstruction of phylogenetic trees and estimation of divergence times under non-constant rates of evolution. *Quant. Biol.* **52**, 847-856.

LI, W.H., TANIMURA, M. & SHARP, P.M. (1988). Rates and dates of divergence between AIDS virus nucleotide sequences. *Mol.Biol.Evol.* **5**, 313-330.

LI, X.L., MOUDGIL, T., VINTERS, H. & HO, D.D. (1990). CD4-independent productive infection of a neuronal cell line by human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J. Virol.* 1383-1387.

LI, Y.X., KAPPES, J.C., CONWAY, J.A., PRICE, R.W., SHAW, G.M. & HAHN, B.H. (1991). Molecular characterization of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 cloned directly from uncultured human brain tissue: identification of

replication-competent and -defective viral genomes. *J.Virol.* **65**, 3973-3985.

LIFSON, J.D., FEINBERG, M., REYES, G.R., RABIN, L., BANAPOUR, B., CHAKRABARTI, S., MOSS, B., WONG STAAL, F., STEIMER, K. & ENGLEMAN, E. (1986a). Induction of CD4 dependent cell fusion by the HTLV-III/LAV envelope glycoprotein. *Nature.* **323**, 725-728.

LIFSON, J.D., REYES, G.R., MCGRATH, M.S., STEIN, B.S. & ENGLEMAN, E.G. (1986b). AIDS retrovirus induced cytopathology: giant cell formation and involvement of CD4 antigen. *Science.* **232**, 1123-1127.

LINIAL, M.L. & BROWN, S. (1979). High frequency recombination within the *gag* gene of Rous sarcoma virus. *J. Virol.* **31**, 257-260.

LINSLEY, P.S., LEDBETTER, J.A., KINNEY-THOMAS, E. & HU, S.L. (1988). Effects of anti-gp120 monoclonal antibodies on CD4 receptor binding by the *env* protein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J. Virol.* **62**, 3695-3702.

LIPTON, S.A. (1992). Models of neuronal injury in AIDS: another role for the NMDA receptor. *Trends in Neurosci.* **15**, 75-79.

LIU, R., PAXTON, W.A., CHOE, S., CERADINI, D., MARTIN, S.R., HORUK, R., MACDONALD, M.E., STUHLMANN, H., KOUP, R.A. & LANDAU, N.R. (1996). Homozygous defect in HIV-1 co-receptor accounts for resistance of some multiply-exposed individuals to HIV-1 infection. *Cell* **86**, 367-377.

LIU, Z.Q., WOOD, C., LEVY, J.A. & CHENG MAYER, C. (1990). The viral envelope gene is involved in macrophage tropism of a human immunodeficiency virus type 1 strain isolated from brain tissue. *J.Virol.* **64**, 6148-6153.

LIVINGSTONE, W.J., MOORE, M., INNES, D., BELL, J.E., SIMMONDS, P., WHITELAW, J., WYLD, R., ROBERTSON, J.R. & BRETTLE, R.P. (1996). Frequent infection of peripheral blood CD8-positive T-lymphocytes with HIV-1. *Lancet* **348**, 649-654.

LOETSCHER, M., GEISER, T., O'REILLY, T., ZWAHLEU, R., BAGGIOLINI, M. & MOSTER, B. (1994). Cloning of a human seven-transmembrane domain receptor LESTR, that is highly expressed in leukocytes. *Journal of Biological Chemistry* **269**, 232-237.

LOONEY, D.J., FISHER, A.G., PUTNEY, S.D., RUSCHE, J.R., REDFIELD, R.R., BURKE, S.D., GALLO, R.C. & WONG STAAL, F. (1988). Type restricted neutralization of molecular clones of HIV. *Science* **241**, 357-359.

LOUWAGIE, J., MCCUTCHAN, F.E., PEETERS, M., BRENNAN, T.P.,

SANDERSBUELL, E., EDDY, G.A., VANDERGROEN, G., FRANSEN, K., GERSHYDAMET, G.M., DELEYS, R. & BURKE, D.S. (1993). Phylogenetic analysis of *gag* genes from 70 international HIV-1 isolates provides evidence for multiple genotypes. *AIDS* **7**, 769-780.

LOUWAGIE, J., DELWART, E.L., MULLINS, J.I., MCCUTCHAN, F.E., EDDY, G. & BURKE, D.S. (1994). Genetic analysis of HIV-1 isolates from Brazil reveals presence of two distinct genetic subtypes. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **10**, 561-567.

LUGINBUHL, L.M., ORAV, E.J., MCINTOSH, K. & LIPSHULTZ, S.E. (1993). Cardiac morbidity and related mortality in children with HIV infection. *JAMA* **269**, 2869-2875.

LUKASHOV, V.V., KUIKEN, C.L. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1995). Intrahost human immunodeficiency virus type 1 evolution is related to length of the immunocompetent period. *J.Virol.* **69**, 6911-6916.

LUTLEY, R., PETURSSON, G., PALSSON, P.A., GEORGSSON, G., KLEIN, J. & NATHANSON, N. (1983). Antigenic drift in Visna: virus variation during long-term infection of Icelandic sheep. *J. Gen. Virol.* **64**, 1433-1440.

LUZURIAGA, K., BRYSON, Y., KROGSTAD, P., ROBINSON, J., STECHENBERG, B., LAMSON, M., CORT, S., SULLIVAN, J.L. (1997). Combination treatment with zidovudine, didanosine and navirapine in infant with HIV-1 infection. *New Engl. J. Med.* **336**, 1343-1349.

LYERLY, H.K., MATTHEWS, T.J., LANGLOIS, A.J., BOLOGNESI, D.P. & WEINHOLD, K.J. (1987). Human T-cell lymphotropic virus IIIB glycoprotein (gp120) bound to CD4 determinants on normal lymphocytes and expressed by infected cells serves as target for immune attack. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **84**, 4601-4605.

LYNN, W., TWEEDALE, A. & CLOYD, M. (1988). Human immunodeficiency virus type-1 (HIV-1) cytotoxicity: Perturbation of the cell membrane and depression of phospholipid synthesis. *Virology.* **163**, 43-51.

MACDONELL, K.B., CHIMIEL, J.S., POGGENSEE, L., WU, S. & PHAIR, J.P. (1990). Predicting progression to AIDS: Combined usefulness of CD4 lymphocyte counts and p24 antigenaemia. *Am.J.Med.* **89**, 706-712.

MACKEWICZ, C.E., ORTEGA, H.W. & LEVY, J.A. (1991). CD8+ Cell Anti-HIV Correlates with the Clinical State of the Infected Individual. *Journal of Clinical Investigation* **87**, 1462-1466.

MACREADIE, I.G., CASTELLI, L.A., HEWISH, D.R., KIREPATRIDE, A.,

WARD, A.C., AZAD, A.A. (1995). A domain of HIV-1 vpr containing repeated H(S/F)RIG amino acid motifs causes cell growth arrest and structural defects. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **92**, 2770-2774.

MADDON, P.J., LITTMAN, D.R., GODFREY, M., MADDON, D.E., CHESS, L. & AXEL, R. (1985). The isolation and nucleotide sequence of a cDNA encoding the T cell surface protein T4: a new member of the immunoglobulin gene family. *Cell* **42**, 93-104.

MADDON, P.J., DALGLEISH, A.G., MCDOUGAL, J.S., CLAPHAM, P.R., WEISS, R.A. & AXEL, R. (1986). The T4 gene encodes the AIDS virus receptor and is expressed in the immune system and the brain. *Cell.* **47**, 333-348.

MADDON, P.J., MCDOUGAL, J.S., CLAPHAM, P.R., DALGLEISH, A.G., JAMA, S., WEISS, R.A. & AXEL, R. (1988). HIV infection does not require endocytosis of it's receptor, CD4. *Cell* **54**, 865-874.

MALDARELLI, F., SATO, H., BERTHOLD, E., ORENSTEIN, J. & MARTIN, M.A. (1995). Rapid induction of apoptosis by cell-to-cell transmission of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J.Virol.* **69**, 6457-6465.

MANKOWSKI, J.L., SPELMAN, J.P., RESSETAR, H.G., STRANDBERG, J.D., LATERRA, J., CARTER, D.L., CLEMENTS, J.E. & ZINK, M.C. (1994). Neurovirulent simian immunodeficiency virus replicates productively in endothelial cells of the central nervous system *in vivo* and *in vitro*. *J.Virol.* **68**, 8202-8208.

MANNUCCI, P.M. (1993). Clinical evaluation of viral safety of coagulation factor-VIII and factor-IX concentrates. *Vox Sang.* **64**, 197-203.

MANSKY, L.M. & TEMIN, H.M. (1995). Lower *in vivo* mutation rate of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 than that predicted from the fidelity of purified reverse transcriptase. *J.Virol.* **69**, 5087-5094.

MARKOWITZ, M., MO, H.M., KEMPF, D.J., NORBECK, D.W., BHAT, T.N., ERICKSON, J.W. & HO, D.D. (1995). Selection and analysis of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 variants with increased resistance to ABT-538, a novel protease inhibitor. *J.Virol.* **69**, 701-706.

MASTROIANNI, C.M., PAOLETTI, F., VULLO, V., DELIA, S. & SORICE, F. (1990). Serum beta-2-microglobulin in asymptomatic HIV infected patients treated with zidovudine. *AIDS.* **4**, 1297

MASUR, H., MICHELIS, M.A., GREENE, J.B., ONORATO, I., STOUWE, R.A., HOLZMAN, R.S., WORMSER, G., BRETTMAN, L., LANGE, M., MURRAY, H.W. & CUNNINGHAM RUNDLES, S. (1981). An outbreak of

community-acquired Pneumocystis carinii pneumonia: initial manifestation of cellular immune dysfunction. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **305**, 1431-1438.

MATSUSHITA, S., ROBERT GUROFF, M., RUSCHE, J., KOITO, A., HATTORI, T., HOSHINO, H., JAVAHERIAN, K., TAKATSUKI, K. & PUTNEY, S.D. (1988). Characterization of a human immunodeficiency virus neutralizing monoclonal antibody and mapping of the neutralizing epitope. *J.Virol.* **62**, 2107-2114.

MATSUYAMA, T., HAMAMOTO, Y., SOMA, G., MIZUNO, D., YAMAMOTO, N. & KOBAYASHI, N. (1989). Cytocidal effect of tumor necrosis factor on cells chronically infected with human immunodeficiency virus (HIV): enhancement of HIV replication. *J.Virol.* **63**, 2504-2509.

MATTHEWS, R.E.F. (1979). Classification and nomenclature of viruses. Third report of the international committee on taxonomy of viruses. *Intervirology* **12**, 234-238.

MATTHEWS, T.J., WEINHOLD, K.J., LYERLY, H.K., LANGLOIS, A.J., WIGZELL, H. & BOLOGNESI, D.P. (1987). Interaction between the human T-cell lymphotropic virus type IIIB envelope glycoprotein gp120 and the surface antigen CD4: role of carbohydrate in binding and cell fusion. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **84**, 5424-5428.

MCCLURE, M.O., MARSH, M. & WEISS, R.A. (1988). Human immunodeficiency virus infection of CD4-bearing cells occurs by a pH-independent mechanism. *EMBO J.* **7**, 513-518.

MCCONKEY, D.J., HARTZELL, P., AMADOR-PEREZ, J.F., ORRENIUS, S. & JONDAL, M. (1989). Ca^{2+}-dependent killing of immature thymocytes by stimulation via CD3/TCR complex. *J. Immunol.* **143**, 1801-1806.

MCCUTCHAN, F.E., HEGERICH, P.A. & BRENNAN, T.P. (1992a). Genetic variants of HIV-1 in Thailand. *AIDS Research and Human Retroviruses.* **8**, 1887-1895.

MCCUTCHAN, F.E., UNGAR, B.L., HEGERICH, P., ROBERTS, C.R., FOWLER, A.K., HIRA, S.K., PERINE, P.L. & BURKE, D.S. (1992b). Genetic analysis of HIV-1 isolates from Zambia and an expanded phylogenetic tree for HIV-1. *J.Acquir.Immune.Defic.Syndr.* **5**, 441-449.

MCDONALD, R.A., MAYERS, D.L., CHUNG, R.C.Y., WAGNER, K.F., RATTO-KIM, S., BIRX, D.L. & MICHAEL, N.L. (1997). Evolution of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 *env* sequence variation in patients with diverse rates of disease progression and T-cell function. *J. Virol.* **71**, 1871-1879.

MCDOUGAL, J.S., KENNEDY, M.S., SLIGH, J.M., CORT, S., MAWLE, A.C. & NICHOLSON, J.K.A. (1986a). Binding of HTLV-III/LAV to T4+ T cells by a complex of the 110K viral protein and the T4 molecule. *Science* **231**, 382-385.

MCDOUGAL, J.S., MAWLE, A.C. & CORT, S. (1986b). Cellular tropism of the human retrovirus HTLV-III/LAV 1. Role of T cell activation and expression of the T4 antigen. *J. Immunol.* **135**, 3151-3162.

MCGAUGH, A. (1989). Involvement of hormonal and neuromodulatory systems in the regulation of memory storage. *Ann. Rev. Neurosci.* **12**, 255-287.

MCKEATING, J.A., GOW, J., GOUDSMIT, J., PEARL, L.H., MULDER, C. & WEISS, R.A. (1989). Characterization of HIV-1 neutralization escape mutants. *AIDS* **3**, 777-784.

MCKEATING, J.A., SHOTTON, C., CORDELL, J., GRAHAM, S., BALFE, P., SULLIVAN, N., CHARLES, M., PAGE, M., BOLMSTEDT, A., OLOFSSON, S., KAYMAN, S.C., WU, Z., PINTER, A., DEAN, C., SODROSKI, J. & WEISS, R.A. (1993). Characterization of neutralizing monoclonal antibodies to linear and conformation-dependent epitopes within the 1st and 2nd variable domains of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 gp120. *J.Virol.* **67**, 4932-4944.

MENZO, S., BAGNARELLI, P., GIACCA, M., MANZIN, A., VARALDO, P.E. & CLEMENTI, M. (1992). Absolute quantitation of viraemia in human immunodeficiency virus infection by competitive reverse transcription and polymerase chain reaction. *Journal of Clinical Microbiology* **30**, 1752-1757.

MERVIS, R., AHMED, N., LILLEHOJ, E., RAUM, M., SALAZAR, F., CHAN, H. & VENKATESAN, S. (1988). The *gag* gene products of human immunodeficiency virus type 1: Alignment within the *gag* open reading frame, identification of postranslational modifications and evidence for alternative *gag* precursors. *J. Virol.* **62**, 3993-4002.

METROKA, C.E., CUNNINGHAM RUNDLES, S., POLLACK, M., SONNABEND, J., DAVIS, J., GORDON, B., FERNANDEZ, R. & MOURADIAN, J. (1983). Generalized lymphadenopathy in homosexual men. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **99**, 585-591.

MEYERHANS, A., CHEYNIER, R., ALBERT, J., SETH, M., KWOK, S., SNINSKY, J., MORFELDT MANSON, L., ASJO, B. & WAIN HOBSON, S. (1989). Temporal fluctuations in HIV quasispecies *in vivo* are not reflected by sequential HIV isolations. *Cell* **58**, 901-910.

MICHAEL, N.L., VAHEY, M., BURKE, D.S. & REDFIELD, R.R. (1992). Viral DNA and mRNA expression correlate with the stage of human immunodeficiency

virus (HIV) type 1 infection in humans: evidence for viral replication in all stages of HIV disease. *J.Virol.* **66**, 310-316.

MICHAELS, J., SHARER, L.R. & EPSTEIN, E.G. (1988). Human immunodeficiency virus type-1 (HIV-1) infection of the nervous system: a review. *Immunodef. Rev.* **1**, 71-104.

MIEDEMA, F., TERSMETTE, M. & VAN LIER, R.A.W. (1990a). AIDS pathogenesis: A dynamic interaction between HIV and the immune system. *Immunol Today* **11**, 293-297.

MIEDEMA, F., TERSMETTE, M. & VAN LIER, R.A.W. (1990b). AIDS pathogenesis: a dynamic interaction between HIV and the immune system. *Immunology today* **11**, 293-297.

MILDVAN, D., MATHUR, V., ENLOW, R.W., ROMAIN, P., WINCHESTER, R., SINGMAN, H., ADELSBERG, B. & SPIGLAND, I. (1982). Opportunistic infections and immune deficiency in homosexual men. *Ann.Intern.Med.* **96**, 700-704.

MILLER, M.D., WARMERDAM, M.T., GASTON, I., GREENE, W.C. & FEINBERG, M.B. (1994). The human immunodeficiency virus-1 *nef* gene product - a positive factor for viral infection and replication in primary lymphocytes and macrophages. *J.Exp.Med.* **179**, 101-113.

MILLICH, L., MARGOLIN, B. & SWANSTROM, R. (1993). V3 loop of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 env protein: interpreting sequence variability. *J.Virol.* **67**, 5623-5634.

MODROW, S., HAHN, B.H., SHAW, G.M., GALLO, R.C., WONG STAAL, F. & WOLF, H. (1987). Computer-assisted analysis of envelope protein sequences of seven human immunodeficiency virus isolates: prediction of antigenic epitopes in conserved and variable regions. *J.Virol.* **61**, 570-578.

MOLINA, J.M., SCHINDLER, R. & FERRIANI, K. (1990). Production of cytokines by peripheral blood monocytes/macrophages infected with human immunodeficiency virus type-1 (HIV-1). *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **161**, 888-893.

MOLLA, A., KORNEYEVA, M., GAO, Q., VASAVANONDA, S., SCHIPPER, P.J., MO, H.M., MARKOWITZ, M., CHERNYAVSKIY, T., NIU, P., LYONS, N., HSU, A., GRANNEMAN, G.R., HO, D.D., BOUCHER, C.A.B., LEONARD, J.M., NORBECK, D.W. & KEMPF, D.J. (1996). Ordered accumulation of mutations in HIV protease confers resistance to ritonavir. *Nature Med* **2**, 760-766.

MONK, R.J., MALIK, F.G., STOKESBERRY, D. & EVANS, L.H. (1992). Direct determination of the point mutation rate of a murine retrovirus. *Journal of Virology* **66**, 3683-3689.

MONTELARO, -R.C., PAREKH, B., ORREGO, A. & ISSEL, C.J. (1984). Antigenic variation during persistent infection by Equine Infectious Anemia Virus, a retrovirus. *The Journal of Biological Chemistry.* **259**, 10539-10544.

MOORE, J.P., SATTENTAU, Q.J., YOSHIYAMA, H., THALI, M., CHARLES, M., SULLIVAN, N., POON, S.W., FUNG, M.S., TRAINCARD, F., PINKUS, M., ROBEY, G., ROBINSON, J.E., HO, D.D. & SODROSKI, J. (1993a). Probing the structure of the V2-domain of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 surface glycoprotein gp120 with a panel of eight monoclonal antibodies - human immune response to the V1-domain and V2-domain. *J.Virol.* **67**, 6136-6151.

MOORE, J.P., THALI, M., JAMESON, B.A., VIGNAUX, F., LEWIS, G.K., POON, S.W., CHARLES, M., FUNG, M.S., SUN, B., DURDA, P.J., AKERBLOM, L., WAHREN, B., HO, D.D., SATTENTAU, Q.J. & SODOROSKI, J. (1993b). Immunochemical analysis of the gp120 surface glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type-1: probing the structure of the C4-domain and V4-domain and the interaction of the C4-domain with the V3 loop. *J.Virol.* **67**, 4785-4796.

MORRIS, J.F., STERNBERG, E.J., GUTSHALL, L., PETTEWAY, S.R. & IVANOFF, L.A. (1994). Effect of a single amino acid substitution in the V3 domain of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1: generation of revertant viruses to overcome defects in infectivity in specific cell types. *J.Virol.* **68**, 8380-8385.

MORRIS, M., PODHISITA, C., WAWER, M.J. & HANDCOCK, M.S. (1996). Bridge populations in the spread of HIV/AIDS in Thailand. *AIDS* **10**, 1265-1271.

MORRISON, H.G., KIRCHHOFF, F. & DESROSIERS, R.C. (1993). Evidence for the cooperation of gp120 amino acids 322 and 448 in SIVmac entry. *Virology* **195**, 167-174.

MOSES, A.V., BLOOM, F.E., PAUZA, C.D. & NELSON, J.A. (1993). Human immunodeficiency virus infection of human brain capillary endothelial cells occurs via a CD4/galactosylceramide-independent mechanism. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **90**, 10474-10478.

MOSIER, D.E., GULIZIA, R.J., MACISAAC, P.D., TORBETT, B.E. & LEVY, J.A. (1993). Rapid loss of CD4+ T cells in human-PBL-SCID mice by non-cytopathic HIV isolates. *Science* **260**, 689-692.

MOSKOWITZ, L.B., KORY, P., CHAN, J.C., HAVERKOS, H., CONLEY, F. & HENSLEY, G. (1983). Unusual causes of death in Haitians residing in Miami. *JAMA.* **250**, 1187-1190.

MOVAT, H. (1987). Tumor necrosis factor and interleukin-1: role in acute inflammation and microvascular injury. *J.Lab.Clin.Med.* **110**, 668-681.

MUESING, M.A., SMITH, D.H., CABRADILLA, C.D., BENTON, C.V., LASKY, L.A. & CAPON, D.J. (1985). Nucleic acid structure and expression of the human AIDS/lymphadenopathy retrovirus. *Nature* **313**, 450-458.

MULLER, S., RICHALET, P., LAURENT-CRAWFORD, A.G., BARAKAT, S., RIVIERE, Y., PARROT, F., CHAMARET, S., BRIAND, J.P., MONTAGNIER, L. & HOVANESSIAN, A.G. (1992). Autoantibodies typical of non-organ-specific autoimmune diseases in HIV-seropositive patients. *AIDS.* **6**, 933-942.

MULLINS, J., CHEN, S. & HOOVER, E. (1986). Disease-specific and tissue-specific production of unintegrated feline leukaemia virus variant DNA in feline AIDS. *Nature.* **319**, 333-336.

MYERS, G., KORBER, B., BERZOFSKY, J., SMITH, T. F. & PAVLAKIS, G. N. (1991). In *Human retroviruses and AIDS 1993*, Los Alamos, New Mexico: Los Alamos National Laboratory.

MYERS, G., KORBER, B., SMITH, R. F., BERZOFSKY, J. A. & PAVLAKIS, G. N. (1992a). *Human retroviruses and AIDS.* Edited by G. Myers, B. Korber, R. F. Smith, J. Berzofsky & G. N. Pavlakis. New Mexico: Los Alamos national laboratory. Los Alamos.

MYERS, G., MACINNES, K. & KORBER, B. (1992b). The emergence of simian/human immunodeficiency viruses. *AIDS Research and Human Retroviruses.* **8**, 373-386.

MYERS, G. & PAVLAKIS, G. N. (1992c). Evolutionary potential of complex retroviruses. In *The Retroviridae, Volume 1.* pp. 51-105. Edited by J. A. Levy. New York: Plenium Press.

NAHILL, S.R. & WELSH, R.M. (1993). High frequency of cross-reactive cytotoxic T lymphocytes elicited during the viral induced polyclonal cytotoxic T lymphocyte response. *J.Exp.Med.* **177**, 317-327.

NATH, A., PSOOY, K., MARTIN, C., KNUDSEN, B., MAGNUSON, D.S.K., HAUGHEY, N. & GEIGER, J.D. (1996). Identification of a human immunodeficiency virus type 1 *tat* epitope that is neuroexcitatory and neurotoxic. *J.Virol.* **70**, 1475-1480.

NEI, M. & GOJOBORI, T. (1986). Simple methods for estimating the numbers of synonymous and non-synonymous nucleotide substitutions. *Mol.Biol.Evol.* **3**, 418-426.

NEI, M. (1987). Molecular evolutionary genetics. Columbia University press, New York.

NEI, M., RZHETSKY, A.Y. (1991). Evolution of MHC genes: Reconstruction of phylogenetic trees and evolution of major compatibility complex genes. pp13-27. Spring harbour, Heidelberg.

NELSON, H. (1996). Protease inhibitors show promise in HIV infection. *Lancet* **347**, 383

NEWELL, M.L. & PECKHAM, C. (1993). Risk factors for vertical transmission of HIV-1 and early markers of HIV-1 infection in children. *AIDS* **7**, S91-S97.

NICHOLSON, J.K., CROSS, G.D., CALLAWAY, C.S. & MCDOUGAL, J.S. (1986). In vitro infection of human monocytes with human T lymphotropic virus type III/lymphadenopathy-associated virus (HTLV-III/LAV). *J.Immunol.* **137**, 323-329.

NIEDERMAN, T.M., THIELAN, B.J. & RATNER, L. (1989). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 negative factor is a transcriptional silencer. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **86**, 1128-1132.

NIEDRIG, M., GELDERBLOM, H.R., PAULI, G., MARZ, J., BICKHARD, H., WOLF, H. & MODROW, S. (1994). Inhibition of infectious human immunodeficiency virus type 1 particle formation by *gag* protein-derived peptides. *J.Gen.Virol.* **75**, 1469-1474.

NISHANIAN, P., HUSKINS, K.R., STEHN, S., DETELS, R. & FAHEY, J.L. (1990). A simple method for improved assay demonstrates that HIV p24 antigen is present as immune complexes in most sera from HIV-infected individuals. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **162**, 21-28.

NOTTAY, B.K., KEW, O.M., HATCH, M.H., HEYWARD, J.T. & OBIJESKI, J.F. (1981). Molecular variation of type 1 vaccine related and wild poliovirus during replication in humans. *Virology* **108**, 405-423.

NOTTET, H. & GENDELMAN, H.E. (1995). Unravelling the neuroimmune mechanisms for the HIV-1 associated cognitive/motor complex. *Immunol.Today.* **16**, 441-448.

NOWAK, M.A., ANDERSON, R.M., MCLEAN, A.R., WOLFS, T.F.W.,

GOUDSMIT, J. & MAY, R.M. (1991a). Antigenic diversity thresholds and the development of AIDS. *Science* **254**, 963-969.

NOWAK, M.A. & MAY, R.M. (1991b). Mathematical Biology of HIV Infections: Antigenic Variation and Diversity Threshold. *Mathematical Biosciences* **106**, 1-21.

NOWAK, M.A., MAY, R.M., PHILLIPS, R.E., ROWLANDJONES, S., LALLOO, D.G., MCADAM, S., KLENERMAN, P., KOPPE, B., SIGMUND, K., BANGHAM, C.R.M. & MCMICHAEL, A.J. (1995). Antigenic oscillations and shifting immunodominance in HIV- 1 infections. *Nature* **375**, 606-611.

NUOVO, G.J., FORDE, A., MACCONNELL, P. & FAHRENWALD, R. (1993). In situ detection of PCR-amplified HIV-1 nucleic acids and tumor necrosis factor cDNA in cervical tissues. *Am.J.Pathol.* **143**, 40-48.

O'BRIEN, W.A., KOYANAGI, Y., NAMAZIE, A., ZHAO, J.Q., DIAGNE, A., IDLER, K., ZACK, J.A. & CHEN, I.S. (1990). HIV-1 tropism for mononuclear phagocytes can be determined by regions of gp120 outside the CD4-binding domain. *Nature.* **348**, 69-73.

ODERMATT, B., EPPLER, M., LEIST, T.P., HENGARTNER, H. & ZINKERNAGEL, R.M. (1991). Virus-triggered acquire immune deficiency by cytotoxic T-cell-dependent destruction of antigen-presenting cells and lymph follicle structure. *Proc. Natl. Sci. USA.* **88**, 8252-8256.

OGAWA, K., SHIBATA, R., KIYOSAU, T., HIGUCHI, I., KICHIDA, Y., ISHIMOTO, A. & ADACHI, A. (1989). Mutational analysis of the HIV *vpr* open reading frame. *J. Virol.* **63**, 4110-4114.

OKA, S., IDA, S., SHIODA, T., TAKEBE, Y., KOBAYASHI, N., SHIBUYA, Y., OHYAMA, K., MOMOTA, K., KIMURA, S. & SHIMADA, K. (1994). Genetic analysis of HIV-1 during rapid progression to AIDS in an apparently healthy man. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **10**, 271-277.

OTTMANN, M., INNOCENTI, P., THENADEY, M., MICOUD, M., PELLOQUIN, F. & SEIGNEURIN, J.M. (1991). The polymerase chain reaction for the detection of HIV-1 genomic RNA in plasma from infected individuals. *J.Virol.Methods* **31**, 237-284.

OU, C.Y., KWOK, S., MITCHELL, S.W., MACK, D.H., SNINSKY, J.J., KREBS, J.W., FEORINO, P., WARFIELD, D. & SCHOCHETMAN, G. (1988). DNA amplification for direct detection of HIV-1 in DNA of peripheral blood mononuclear cells [published erratum appears in Science 1988 Apr 8;240(4849):240]. *Science.* **239**, 295-297.

OU, C.Y., CIESIELSKI, C.A., MYERS, G., BANDEA, C.I., LUO, C.C., KORBER, B.T., MULLINS, J.I., SCHOCHETMAN, G., BERKELMAN, R.L. & ECONOMOU, A.N. (1992). Molecular epidemiology of HIV transmission in a dental practice. *Science* **256**, 1165-1171.

OVERBAUGH, J. & RUDENSEY, L.M. (1992). Alterations in potential sites for glycosylation predominate during evolution of the simian immunodeficiency virus envelope gene in macaques. *J. Virol.* **66**, 5937-5948.

PADGETT, B.L. & WALKER, D.L. (1973). Prevalence of antibodies in human sera against JC virus, an isolate from a case of progressive multifocal leukoencephalopathy. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **127**, 467-470.

PALASANTHIRAN, P., ZIEGLER, J.B., STEWART, G.J., STUCKEY, M., ARMSTRONG, J.A., COOPER, D.A., PENNY, R. & GOLD, J. (1993). Breast-feeding during primary maternal human immunodeficiency virus infection and risk of transmission from mother to infant. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **167**, 441-444.

PALMER, C., BALFE, P., FOX, D., MAY, J.C., FREDERIKSSON, R., FENYO, E.M. & MCKEATING, J.A. (1996). Functional characterization of the V1V2 region of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *Virology* **220**, 436-449.

PANG, S., KOYANAGI, Y., MILES, S., WILEY, C., VINTERS, H.V. & CHEN, I.S. (1990). High levels of unintegrated HIV-1 DNA in brain tissue of AIDS dementia patients. *Nature.* **343**, 85-89.

PANTALEO, G., GRAZIOSI, C., BUTINI, L., PIZZO, P.A., SCHNITTMAN, S.M., KOTLER, D.P. & FAUCI, A.S. (1991). Lymphoid organs function as major reservoirs for human immunodeficiency virus. *Proc. Natl. Sci. USA.* **88**, 9838-9842.

PANTALEO, G., GRAZIOSI, C., DEMAREST, J.F., BUTINI, L., MONTRONI, M., FOX, C.H., ORENSTEIN, J.M., KOTLER, D.P. & FAUCI, A.S. (1993). HIV infection is active and progressive in lymphoid tissue during the clinically latent stage of disease. *Nature* **362**, 355-358.

PARK, L.W. & SODROSKI, J. (1995). Amino acid sequence requirements for the incorporation of the vpx protein of SIV into virion particles. *J.Acq.Immun.Defic.Synd.Hum.R.* **10**, 506-510.

PARVIN, J.D., MOSCONA, A., PAN, W.T., LEIDER, J.M. & PALESE, P. (1986). Measurement of the mutation rates of animal viruses: Influenza A virus and poliovirus type 1. *J. Virol.* **59**, 377-383.

PATHAK, V.K. & TEMIN, H.M. (1990). Broad spectrum of *in vivo* forward

mutations, hypermutations, and mutational hotspots in a retroviral shuttle vector after a single replication cycle: substitutions, frameshifts, and hypermutations. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA.* **87**, 6019-6023.

PATTERSON, S., ROBERTS, M.S., ENGLISH, N.R., MACATONIA, S.E., GOMPELS, M.N., PINCHING, A.J. & KNIGHT, S.C. (1994). Detection of HIV DNA in peripheral blood dendritic cells of HIV-infected individuals. *Res.Virology* **145**, 171-176.

PAULSON, J.C. (1989). Glycoproteins: What are the sugar chains for? *TIBS* **14**, 272-275.

PAUZA, C.D. & PRICE, T.M. (1988). Human immunodeficiency virus infection of T cells and monocytes proceeds via receptor-mediated endocytosis. *J.Cell Biol.* **107**, 959-968.

PAUZA, C.D., GALINDO, J. & RICHMAN, D.D. (1990). Reinfection results in accumulation of unintegrated viral DNA in cytopathic and persistent human immunodeficiency virus type-1 infection of CEM cells. *J.Exp.Med.* **172**, 1035-1042.

PECKHAM, C. & GIBB, D. (1995). Current concepts - mother-to-child transmission of the human immunodeficiency virus. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **333**, 298-302.

PEDERSEN, C., MOLLER-NIELSEN, C., VESTERGAARD, B.F., GERSTOFT, J., KROGSGAARD, K. & NIELSEN, J.O. (1987). Temporal relation of antigenaemia and loss of antibodies to core antigens to development of clinical disease in HIV infection. *Br.Med.J.* **295**, 567-589.

PEETERS, M., FRANSEN, K. & DELAPORTE, E. (1992). Isolation and characterization of a new chimpanzee lentivirus (simian immunodeficiency virus isolate cpz-ant) from a wild-captured chimpanzee. *AIDS* **6**, 447-451.

PEETERS, M., GAYE, A., MBOUP, S., BADOMBENA, W., BASSABI, K., PRINCEDAVID, M., DEVELOUX, M., LIEGEOIS, F., VANDERGROEN, G., SAMAN, E. & DELAPORTE, E. (1996). Presence of HIV-1 group O infection in West Africa. *AIDS* **10**, 343-344.

PELUSO, R., HASSE, A., STOWRING, L., EDWARDS, M. & VENTURA, P. (1985). A Trojan horse mechanism for the spread of visna virus in monocytes. *Virology.* **147**, 231-236.

PERELSON, A.S., NEUMANN, A.U., MARKOWITZ, M., LEONARD, J.M. & HO, D.D. (1996). HIV-1 dynamics in vivo: Virion clearance rate, infected cell life-span, and viral generation time. *Science* **271**, 1582-1586.

PEUTHERER, J.F., EDMOND, E., SIMMONDS, P., DICKSON, J.D. & BATH, G.E. (1985). HTLV-III antibody in Edinburgh drug addicts. *Lancet* **ii**, 1129-1130.

PFEIFER, K., BACHMANN, M., SCHRODER, H.C., WEILER, B.E., UGARKOVIC, D., OKAMOTO, T. & MULLER, W.E. (1991). Formation of a small ribonucleoprotein particle between Tat protein and trans-acting response element in human immunodeficiency virus-infected cells. *Journal of Biological Chemistry* **266**, 14620-14626.

PHAIR, J.P. & WOLINSKY, S. (1992). Diagnosis of infection with human immunodeficiency virus. *Clin.Infect.Dis.* **15**, 13-16.

PHILLIPS, A.N., LEE, C.A., ELFORD, J., JANOSSY, G., TIMMS, A., BOFILL, M. & KERNOFF, P.B. (1991). Serial CD4 lymphocyte counts and development of AIDS [see comments]. *Lancet.* **337**, 389-392.

PHILLIPS, R.E., ROWLAND JONES, S., NIXON, D.F., GOTCH, F.M., EDWARDS, J.P., OGUNLESI, A.O., ELVIN, J.G., ROTHBARD, J.A., BANGHAM, C.R. & RIZZA, C.R. (1991). Human immunodeficiency virus genetic variation that can escape cytotoxic T cell recognition. *Nature* **354**, 453-459.

PIATAK, M., SAAG, M.S., YANG, L.C., CLARK, S.J., KAPPES, J.C., LUK, K.C., HAHN, B.H., SHAW, G.M. & LIFSON, J.D. (1993). High levels of HIV-1 in plasma during all stages of infection determined by competitive PCR. *Science* **259**, 1749-1754.

PINTER, A., HONNEN, W.J., RACHO, M.E. & TILLEY, S.A. (1993). A potent, neutralizing human monoclonal antibody against a unique epitope overlapping the CD4-binding site of HIV-1 gp120 that is broadly conserved across North American and African virus isolates. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **9**, 985-996.

PINTO, L.A., SULLIVAN, J., BERZOFSKY, J.A., CLERICI, M., KESSLER, H.A., LANDAY, A.L. & SHEARER, G.M. (1995). ENV-specific cytotoxic T lymphocyte responses in HIV seronegative health care workers occupationally exposed to HIV- contaminated body fluids. *Journal of Clinical Investigation* **96**, 867-876.

PITTALUGA, A., PATTARINI, R., SEVERI, P. & RAITERI, M. (1996). Human brain N-methyl-D-aspartate receptors regulating noradrenaline release are positively modulated by HIV-1 coat protein gp120. *AIDS* **10**, 463-468.

PLATA, F., AUTRAN, B., MARTINS, L.P., WAIN-HOBSON, S., RAPHAEL, M., MAYAUD, C., DENIS, M., GUILLON, J.M. & DEBRE, P. (1987). AIDS virus-specific cytotoxic T lymphocytes in lung disorders. *Nature* **328**, 348-351.

PLATA, F., GARCIA PONS, F., RYTER, A., LEBARGY, F., GOODENOW, M.M., DAT, M.H.Q., AUTRAN, B. & MAYAUD, C. (1990). HIV-1 infection of lung alveolar fibroblasts and macrophages in humans. *AIDS Research and Human Retroviruses.* **6**, 979-986.

POLI, G., BRESSLER, P. & KINTER, A. (1990a). Interleukin-6 induces human immunodeficiency virus expression in monocyte cells alone and in synergy with TNF-alpha by transcriptional and post-transcriptional mechanisms. *J.Exp.Med.* **172**, 151-158.

POLI, G., KINTER, A. & JUSTEMENT, J.S. (1990b). Tumor necrosis factor alpha functions in an autocrine manner in the induction of HIV expression. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **87**, 782-785.

POLI, G. & FAUCI, A.S. (1992). The effect of cytokines and pharmacologic agents of chronic HIV infection. *AIDS Research and Human Retroviruses.* **8**, 191-197.

POTTS, K.E., KALISH, M.L., LOTT, T., ORLOFF, G., LUO, C.C., BERNARD, M.A., ALVES, C.B., BADARO, R., SULEIMAN, J., FERREIRA, O., SCHOCHETMAN, G., JOHNSON, W.D., OU, C.Y. & HO, J.L. (1993). Genetic heterogeneity of the V3 region of the HIV-1 envelope glycoprotein in Brazil. *AIDS* **7**, 1191-1197.

POWER, C., MCARTHUR, J.C., JOHNSON, R.T., GRIFFIN, D.E., GLASS, J.D., PERRYMAN, S. & CHESEBRO, B. (1994). Demented and nondemented patients with AIDS differ in brain-derived human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope sequences. *J.Virol.* **68**, 4643-4649.

PRESTON, B.D., POIESZ, B.J. & LOEB, L.A. (1988). Fidelity of HIV-1 Reverse Transcriptase. *Science* **242**, 1168-1171.

PRICE, R.W., BREW, B., SIDTIS, J., ROSENBLUM, M., SCHECK, A.C. & CLEARY, P. (1988). The Brain in AIDS: Central Nervous System HIV-1 and AIDS Dementia Complex. *Science* **239**, 586-592.

PULLIAM, L., HERNDIER, B.G., TANG, N.M. & MCGRATH, M.S. (1991). Human immunodeficiency virus-infected macrophages produce soluble factors that cause histological and neurochemical alterations in cultured human brains. *Journal of Clinical Investigation* **87**, 503-512.

PUMAROLA SUNE, T., NAVIA, B.A., CORDON CARDO, C., CHO, E.S. & PRICE, R.W. (1987). HIV antigen in the brains of patients with the AIDS dementia complex. *Ann.Neurol.* **21**, 490-496.

PURTSCHER, M., TRKOLA, A., GRUBER, G., BUCHACHER, A., PREDL, R., STEINDL, F., TAUER, C., BERGER, R., BARRETT, N., JUNGBAUER, A. & KATINGER, H. (1994). A broadly neutralizing human monoclonal antibody against gp41 of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **10**, 1651-1658.

PURTSCHER, M., TRKOLA, A., GRASSAUER, A., SCHULZ, P.M., KLIMA, A., DOPPER, S., GRUBER, G., BUCHACHER, A., MUSTER, T. & KATINGER, H. (1996). Restricted antigenic variability of the epitope recognized by the neutralizing gp41 antibody 2F5. *AIDS* **10**, 587-593.

QUINN. (1996). Global burden of the HIV pandemic. *Lancet* **348**, 276

QURESHI, M.N., BARR, C.E., SESHAMMA, T., REIDY, J., POMERANTZ, R.J. & BAGASRA, O. (1995). Infection of oral mucosal cells by human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in seropositive persons. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **171**, 190-193.

RAITERI, R., FORA, R. & SINICCO, A. (1994). No HIV-1 transmission through lesbian sex. *Lancet* **344**, 270

RANA, S., BESSON, G., COOK, D.G., RUCKER, J., SMYTH, R.J., YI, Y., TURNER, J.D., GUO, H., DU, J., PEIPER, S.C., LAVI, E., SAMSON, M., LIBERT, F., LIESNARD, C., VASSART, G., DOMS, R.W., PARMENTIER, M. & COLLMAN, R.G. (1997). Role of CCR5 in infection of primary macrophages and lymphocytes by macrophage-tropic strains of human immunodeficiency virus: resistance to patient-derived and prototype isolates resulting from the *ccr5* mutation. *J.Virol.* **71**, 3219-3227.

RATNER, L., GALLO, R.C. & WONG STAAL, F. (1985a). HTLV-III, LAV, ARV are variants of same AIDS virus. *Nature* **313**, 636-637.

RATNER, L., HASELTINE, W., PATARCA, R., LIVAK, K.J., STARCICH, B., JOSEPHS, S.F., DORAN, E.R., RAFALSKI, J.A., WHITEHORN, E.A., BAUMEISTER, K. & ET AL. (1985b). Complete nucleotide sequence of the AIDS virus, HTLV-III. *Nature.* **313**, 277-284.

REDDY, R.T., ACHIM, C.L., SIRKO, D.A., TEHRANCHI, S., KRAUS, F.G., WONGSTAAL, F., WILEY, C.A., GRANT, I., ATKINSON, J.H., KELLY, M., CHANDLER, J.L., WALLACE, M.R., MCCUTCHAN, J.A., SPECTOR, S.A., THAL, L., HEATON, R.K., HESSELINK, J., JERNIGAN, T., MASLIAH, E., ABRAMSON, I., BUTTERS, N., PATTERSON, T., ZISOOK, S. & JESTE, D. (1996). Sequence analysis of the V3 loop in brain and spleen of patients with HIV encephalitis. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **12**, 477-482.

REDDY, T.R., ACHIM, C.L., SIRKO, D.A., TEHRANCHI, S., KRAUS, F.G., WONG-STAAL, F. & WILEY, C.A. (1996). Sequence analysis of the V3 loop in brain and spleen of patients with HIV encephalitis. *AIDS Res.Hum.Retroviruses* **12**, 477-482.

REIDEL, N., HOOVER, E.A., DORNSIFE, R.E. & MULLINS, J.I. (1988). Pathogenic and host range determinants of the feline aplastic anemia retrovirus. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **85**, 2758-2762.

REITZ, M.S., WILSON, C., NAUGLE, C., GALLO, R.C. & ROBERTGUROFF, M. (1988). Generation of a neutralization resistant variant of HIV-1 is due to selection for a point mutation in the envelope gene. *Cell* **54**, 57-63.

REY, F., SALAUN, D., LESBORDES, J.L., GADELLE, S., OLLIVIER-HENRY, F., BARRE-SINOUSSI, F., CHERMANN, J. & GEORGES, A.J. (1986). HIV-I and HIV-II double infection in central African Republic. *Lancet* **2**, 1391-1392.

RHIM, H., PARK, J. & MORROW, C.D. (1991). Deletions in the tRNA(Lys) primer-binding site of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 identify essential regions for reverse transcription. *J.Virol.* **65**, 4555-4564.

RICHMAN, D.D. & BOZZETTE, S.A. (1994). The impact of the syncytium-inducing phenotype of human immunodeficiency virus on disease progression. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **169**, 968-974.

ROBERTGUROFF, M., REITZ, M.S., ROBEY, W.G. & GALLO, R.C. (1986). *In vitro* generation of an HTLV-III variant by neutralizing antibody. *J. Immunol.* **137**, 3306-3309.

ROBERTS, J.D., BEBENEK, K. & KUNKEL, T.A. (1988). The accuracy of reverse transcriptase from HIV-1. *Science.* **242**, 1171-1173.

ROBERTSON, D.L., SHARP, P.M., MCCUTCHAN, F.E. & HAHN, B.H. (1995). Recombination of HIV-1. *Nature* **374**, 124-126.

ROBERTSON, J.R., BUCKNALL, A.B.V., WELSBY, P.D., ROBERTS, J.J.K., INGLIS, J.M., PEUTHERER, J.F. & BRETTLE, R.P. (1986a). Epidemic of AIDS related virus (HTLV-III/LAV) among intravenous drug abusers. *BMJ.* **292**, 527-529.

ROBERTSON, J.R., BUCKNALL, A.B.V. & WIGGINS, P. (1986b). Regional variations in HIV antibody seropositivity in British intravenous drug users. *Lancet.* 1435-1436.

ROBINSON, H.L. & SOMASUNDARAN, M. (1990). Correction: copy numbers of

HIV-1 RNA. *Science.* **247**, 1531

RODRIGUES, J.J., MEHENDALE, S.M., SHEPHERD, M.E., DIVEKAR, A.D., GANGAKHEDKAR, R.R., QUINN, T.C., PARANJAPE, R.S., RISBUD, A.R., BROOKMEYER, R.S., GADKARI, D.A., GOKHALE, M.R., ROMPALO, A.M., DESHPANDE, S.G., KHALANDKAR, M.M., MAWAR, N. & BOLLINGER, R.C. (1995). Risk factors for HIV infection in people attending clinics for sexually transmitted diseases in India. *Br.Med.J.* **311**, 283-286.

ROGERS, M.F., OU, C.Y., RAYFIELD, M., THOMAS, P.A., SCHOENBAUM, E.E., ABRAMS, E., KRASINSKI MOORE, J. & KAUL, A. (1989). Use of the polymerase chain reaction for early detection of the proviral sequences of human immunodeficiency virus in infants born to seropositive mothers. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **320**, 1649-1654.

RONALD, P.J.M., ROBERTSON, J.R., WYLD, R. & WEIGHTMAN, R. (1993). Heterosexual transmission of HIV in injecting drug users. *Br.Med.J.* **307**, 1184-1185.

ROSENBERG, Z.F. & FAUCI, A.S. (1990). Immunopathogenic mechanisms of HIV infection: cytokine induction of HIV expression. *Immunol.Today.* **11**, 176-180.

ROUSE, B.T., NORLEY, S. & MARTIN, S. (1988). Antiviral cytotoxic T lymphocyte induction and vaccination. *Rev.Infect.Dis.* **10**, 16-33.

RUSCHE, J.R., JAVAHERIAN, K., MCDANAL, C., PETRO, J., LYNN, D.L., GRIMAILA, R., LANGLOIS, A., GALLO, R.C., ARTHUR, L.O., FISCHINGER, P.J., BOLOGNESI, D.P., PUTNEY, S.D. & MATTHEWS, T.J. (1988). Antibodies that inhibit fusion of human immunodeficiency virus-infected cells bind a 24-amino-acid sequence of the viral envelope, gp120. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **85**, 3198-3202.

SAAG, M.S., HAHN, B.H., GIBBONS, J., LI, Y., PARKS, E.S., PARKS, W.P. & SHAW, G.M. (1988). Extensive variation of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 *in vivo*. *Nature* **334**, 440-444.

SAAG, M.S., CRAIN, M.J., DECKER, W.D., CAMPBELL-HILL, S., ROBINSON, S., BROWN, W.E., LEUTHER, M., WHITLEY, R.J., HAHN, B.H. & SHAW, G.M. (1991). High-level viraemia in adults and children infected with human immunodeficiency virus: Relation to disease stage and CD4+ lymphocyte levels. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **164**, 72-80.

SABATIER, J.M., VIVES, E., MABROUK, K., BENJOUAD, A., ROCHAT, H., DUVAL, A., HUE, B. & BAHAROUI, E. (1991). Evidence for neurotoxic activity of *tat* from human immunodeficiency virus type-1. *J. Virol.* **65**, 961-967.

SABINO, E.C., SHPAER, E.G., MORGADO, M.G., KORBER, B.T.M., DIAZ, R.S., BONGERTZ, V., CAVALCANTE, S., GALVAOCASTRO, B., MULLINS, J.I. & MAYER, A. (1994). Identification of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope genes recombinant between subtypes B and Fin two epidemiologically linked individuals from Brazil. *J.Virol.* **68**, 6340-6346.

SACCONE, C., LANARE, C., PESOLE, G., PREPARATA, G. (1990). Molecular evolution: Computer analysis of protein and nucleic acid sequences. pp570-598. Academic press, New York.

SAITOU, N., NEI, M. (1987). The neighbor-joining method: A new method for reconstructing phylogenetic trees. *Mol. Biol. Evol.* **4**,406-425.1

SAKAI, K., DEWHURST, S., MA, X. & VOLSKY, D.J. (1988). Differences in cytopathogenicity and host cell range among infectious molecular clones of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 simultaneously isolated from an individual. *J.Virol.* **62**, 4078-4085.

SAKAI, K., DEWHURST, S., MA, X. & VOLSKY, D.J. (1997). Differences in cytopathogenicity and host cell range among infectious molecular clones of human immunodeficiency type 1 simultaneously isolated from an individual. *J.Virol.* **62**, 4078-4085.

SAMSON, M., LIBERT, F., DORANZ, B.J., RUCKER, J., LIESNARD, C., FARBER, C.M., SARAGOSTI, S., LAPOUMEROULIE, C., COGNAUX, J., FORCEILLE, C., MUYLDERMANS, G., VERHOFSTEDE, C., BURTONBOY, G., GEORGES, M., IMAI, T., RANA, S., YI, Y.J., SMYTH, R.J., COLLMAN, R.G., DOMS, R.W., VASSART, G. & PARMENTIER, M. (1996). Resistance to HIV-1 infection in Caucasian individuals bearing mutant alleles of the CCR-5 chemokine receptor gene. *Nature* **382**, 722-725.

SANCHEZ-PESCADOR, R., POWER, M.D., BARR, P.J., STEIMER, K.S., STEMPIEN, M.M., BROWN-SHIMER, S.L., GEE, W.W., RENARD, A., RANDOLPH, A., LEVY, J.A., DINA, D. & LUCIW, P.A. (1985). Nucleotide Sequence and Expression of an AIDS-Associated Retrovirus (ARV-2). *Science* **227**, 484-492.

SASAKI, M., UCHIYAMA, J., ISHIKAWA, H., MATSUSHITA, S., KIMURA, G., NOMOTO, K. & KOGA, Y. (1996). Induction of apoptosis by calmodulin-dependent intracellular Ca2+ elevation in CD4(+) cells expressing gp160 of HIV. *Virology* **224**, 18-24.

SATTENTAU, Q.J. & MOORE, J.P. (1991). Conformational changes induced in the human immunodeficiency virus envelope glycoprotein by soluble CD4 binding. *J.Exp.Med.* **174**, 407-415.

SATTENTAU, Q.J., MOORE, J.P., VIGNAUX, F., TRAINCARD, F. & POIGNARD, P. (1993). Conformational changes induced in the envelope glycoproteins of the human and simian immunodeficiency viruses by soluble receptor binding. *J.Virol.* **67**, 7383-7393.

SATTENTAU, Q.J., ZOLLAPAZNER, S. & POIGNARD, P. (1995). Epitope exposure on functional, oligomeric HIV-1 gp41 molecules. *Virology* **206**, 713-717.

SCHERDIN, V., RHODES, K. & BREINDL, M. (1990). Transcriptionally active genome regions are preferred targets for retrovirus integration. *J. Virol.* **64**, 907-912.

SCHMIDTMAYEROVA, H., SHERRY, B. & BUKRINSKY, M. (1996). Chemokines and HIV replication. *Nature* **382**, 767

SCHUITEMAKER, H., KOOTSTRA, N.A., DE GOEDE, R.E., DE WOLF, F., MIEDEMA, F. & TERSMETTE, M. (1991). Monocytotropic human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) variants detectable in all stages of HIV-1 infection lack T-cell line tropism and syncytium-inducing ability in primary T-cell culture. *J.Virol.* **65**, 356-363.

SCHUITEMAKER, H., FOUCHIER, R.A.M., BROERSEN, S., GROENINK, M., KOOT, M., VANTWOUT, A.B., HUISMAN, H.G., TERSMETTE, M. & MIEDEMA, F. (1995). Envelope V2 configuration and HIV-1 phenotype: clarification. *Science* **268**, 115.

SCHUURMAN, H.J., KRONE, W.J.A., BROEKJUIZEN, R., GOUDSMIT, J. (1988). Expression of RNA and antigens of HIV-1 in lymph nodes from HIV-1 infected individuals. *Am. J. Pathol.* **133**, 516-524.

SCHWARTZ, O., MARECHAL, V., DANOS, O. & HEARD, J.M. (1995). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 nef increases the efficiency of reverse transcription in the infected cell. *J.Virol.* **69**, 4053-4059.

SCHWARTZ, S., FELBER, B.K., FENYO, E.M. & PAVLAKIS, G.N. (1989). Rapidly and slowly replicating human immunodeficiency virus type 1 isolates can be distinguished according to target-cell tropism in T-cell and monocyte cell lines. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **86**, 7200-7203.

SCOTTALGARA, D., VUILLIER, F., CAYOTA, A., RAME, V., GUETARD, D., MONCANY, M.L.J., MARASESCU, M., DAUGUET, C. & DIGHIERO, G. (1993). *In vitro* non-productive infection of purified natural killer cells by the BRU isolate of the human immunodeficiency virus type-1. *J.Gen.Virol.* **74**, 725-731.

SEDIVY, J.M., CAPONE, J.P., RAJBHANDARY, V.L. & SHARP, P.A. (1987).

An inducible mammalian amber suppressor: propagation of a poilovirus mutant. *Cell* **50**, 379-389.

SELMAJ, K.W., FAROOQ, M., NORTON, W.T., RAINE, C.S. & BROSHAN, C.F. (1990). Proliferation of astrocytes *in vitro* to cytokines. *J.Immunol.* **144**, 129-135.

SHARP, P.M. & LI, W. (1988). Understanding the origin of AIDS viruses. *Nature* **336**, 315

SHARP, P.M., ROBERTSON, D.L., FENG, G. & HAHN, B.H. (1994). Origins and diversity of human immunodeficiency viruses. *AIDS* **8**, S27-S42.

SHARPLESS, N.E., O'BRIEN, W.A., VERDIN, E., KUFTA, C.V., CHEN, I.S. & DUBOIS DALCQ, M. (1992). Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 tropism for brain microglial cells is determined by a region of the *env* glycoprotein that also controls macrophage tropism. *J.Virol.* **66**, 2588-2593.

SHATTOCK, R.J., BURGER, D., DAYER, J.M. & GRIFFIN, G.E. (1996). Enhanced HIV replication in monocytic cells following engagement of adhesion molecules and contact with stimulated T cells. *Res.Virology* **147**, 171-179.

SHAW, G.M., HAHN, B.H., ARYA, S.K., GROOPMAN, J.E., GALLO, R.C. & WONG STAAL, F. (1984). Molecular characterization of human T-cell leukemia (lymphotropic) virus type III in the acquired immune deficiency syndrome. *Science.* **226**, 1165-1171.

SHAW, G.M., HARPER, M.E., HAHN, B.E., EPSTEIN, L.G., GAJDUSEK, D., PRICE, R., NAVIA, B., PETITO, C., O'HARA, C. & GROOPMAN, J. (1985). HTLV-III infection in brains of children and adults with AIDS encephalopathy. *Science.* **1**, 177-182.

SHIMIZU, N.S., SHIMIZU, N.G., TAKEUCHI, Y. & HOSHINO, H. (1994). Isolation and characterization of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 variants infectious to brain-derived cells: detection of common point mutations in the V3 region of the *env* gene of the variants. *J.Virol.* **68**, 6130-6135.

SHIODA, T., LEVY, J.A. & CHENG MAYER, C. (1991a). Macrophage and T cell-line tropisms of HIV-1 are determined by specific regions of the envelope gp120 gene. *Nature.* **349**, 167-169.

SHIODA, T., LEVY, J.A. & CHENG MAYER, C. (1991b). Macrophage and T cell-line tropisms of HIV-1 are determined by specific regions of the envelope gp120 gene. *Nature* **349**, 167-169.

SHIODA, T., LEVY, J.A. & CHENG-MAYER, C. (1992). Small amino acid changes in the V3 hypervariable region of gp120 can affect the T-cell line and macrophage tropism of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA.* **89**, 9434-9438.

SHIODA, T., OKA, S., IDA, S., NOKIHARA, K., TORIYOSHI, H., MORI, S., TAKEBE, Y., KIMURA, S., SHIMADA, K. & NAGAI, Y. (1994). A naturally occurring single basic amino acid substitution in the V3 region of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 *env* protein alters the cellular host range and antigenic structure of the virus. *J.Virol.* **68**, 7689-7696.

SIEGAL, F.P., LOPEZ, C., HAMMER, G.S., BROWN, A.E., KORNFIELD, S.J., SIEGAL, M., CUNNINGHAM RUNDLES, S. & ARMSTRONG, D. (1981). Severe acquired immunodeficiency in male homosexuals, manifested by chronic perianal ulcerative *Herpes simplex* lesions. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **305**, 1439-1444.

SILICIANO, R.F., LAWTON, T. & KNALL, C. (1988). Analysis of host-virus interactions in AIDS with anti-gp120 cell clones: effect of HIV-1 sequence variation and a mechanism for CD4 cell depletion. *Cell.* **54**, 561-575.

SIMMONDS, P. (1990a). Variation in HIV virus load of individuals at different stages in infection: possible relationship with risk of transmission. *AIDS* **4**, S77-S83.

SIMMONDS, P., BALFE, P., LUDLAM, C.A., BISHOP, J.O. & LEIGH BROWN, A.J. (1990b). Analysis of sequence diversity in hypervariable regions of the external glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *J.Virol.* **64**, 5840-5850.

SIMMONDS, P., ZHANG, L.Q., MCOMISH, F., BALFE, P., LUDLAM, C.A. & LEIGH BROWN, A.J. (1991). Discontinuous sequence change of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) type 1 *env* sequences in plasma viral and lymphocyte-associated proviral populations *in vivo*: implications for models of HIV pathogenesis. *J.Virol.* **65**, 6266-6276.

SKINNER, M.A., LANGLOIS, A.J., MCDANAL, C.B., MCDOUGAL, J.S., BOLOGNESI, D.P. & MATTHEWS, T.J. (1988). Neutralizing antibodies to an immunodominant envelope sequence do not prevent gp120 binding to CD4. *J. Virol.* **62**, 4195-4200.

SMITH, C.A., WILLIAMS, G.T., KINGSTON, R., JENKINSON, E.J. & OWEN, J.J.T. (1989). Antibodies to CD3/TCR complex induce death by apoptosis in immature T cells in thymic culture. *Nature.* **337**, 181-184.

SMITH, D.D., BYRN, R.A., MARSTERS, S.A., GREGORY, T., GROOPMAN,

J.E. & CAPON, D.J. (1987). Blocking of HIV-1 infectivity by a soluble, secreted form of the CD4 antigen. *Science* **2328**, 1704-1707.

SMITH, T.F., SRINIVASAN, A., SCHOCHETMAN, G., MARCUS, M. & MYERS, G. (1988). The phylogenetic history of immunodeficiency viruses. *Nature* **333**, 573-575.

SODROSKI, J., PATARCA, R., ROSEN, C., WONG STAAL, F. & HASELTINE, W. (1985). Location of the trans-activating region on the genome of human T-cell lymphotropic virus type III. *Science.* **229**, 74-77.

SOMASUNDARAN, M. & ROBINSON, H. (1987). A major mechanism of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 induced cell killing does not involve cell fusion. *J.Virol.* **61**, 3114-3119.

SOMASUNDARAN, M. & ROBINSON, H.L. (1988). Unexpectedly high levels of HIV-1 RNA and protein synthesis in a cytocidal infection. *Science.* **242**, 1554-1557.

SOMASUNDARAN, M., ZAPP, M.L., BEATTIE, L.K., PANG, L.Z., BYRON, K.S., BASSELL, G.J., SULLIVAN, J.L. & SINGER, R.H. (1994). Localization of HIV RNA in mitochondria of infected cells: potential role in cytopathogenicity. *J.Cell Biol.* **126**, 1353-1360.

SPECTOR, D.H., WADE, E., WRIGHT, D.A., KOVAL, V., CLARK, C., JAQUISH, D. & SPECTOR, S.A. (1990). Human immunodeficiency virus pseudotypes with expanded cellular and species tropism. *J.Virol.* **64**, 2298-2308.

SRINIVASAN, A., YORK, D., JANNOUN NASR, R., KALYANARAMAN, S., SWAN, D., BENSON, J., BOHAN, C., LUCIW, P.A., SCHNOLL, S., ROBINSON, R.A. & ET AL. (1989). Generation of hybrid human immunodeficiency virus by homologous recombination. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **86**, 6388-6392.

STAHL, R.E., FRIEDMAN KIEN, A., DUBIN, R., MARMOR, M. & ZOLLA PAZNER, S. (1982). Immunologic abnormalities in homosexual men. Relationship to Kaposi's sarcoma. *Am.J.Med.* **73**, 171-178.

STAMATATOS, L. & CHENGMAYER, C. (1993). Evidence that the structural conformation of envelope gp120 affects human immunodeficiency virus type-1 infectivity, host range, and syncytium-forming ability. *J.Virol.* **67**, 5635-5639.

STANDARD, L.M., VAN DER RIET, F. & MOODIE, J.W. (1987). The morphology of human immunodeficiency virus particles by negative staining electron microscopy. *J. Gen Virol.* **68**, 919-923.

STARCICH, B.R., HAHN, B.H., SHAW, G.M., MCNEELY, P.D., MODROW, S., WOLF, H., PARKS, E.S., PARKS, W.P., JOSEPHS, S.F., GALLO, R.C. & WONG STAAL, F. (1986). Identification and characterization of conserved and variable regions in the envelope gene of HTLV-III/LAV, the retrovirus of AIDS. *Cell* **45**, 637-648.

STEIN, B.S., GOWDA, S.D., LIFSON, J.D., PENHALLOW, R.C., BENSCH, K.G. & ENGLEMAN, E.G. (1987). pH-independent HIV entry into CD4-positive T cells via virus envelope fusion to the plasma membrane. *Cell.* **49**, 659-668.

STEVENSON, M., HAGGERTY, S., LAMONICA, C.A., MANN, A., MEIER, C. & WASLAK, A. (1990). Cloning and characterization of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 variants diminished in the ability to induce syncytium-independent cytolysis. *J.Virol.* **64**, 3792-3803.

STLOUIS, M.E., KAMENGA, M., BROWN, C., NELSON, A.M., MANZILA, T., BATTER, V., BEHETS, F., KABAGABO, U., RYDER, R.W., OXTOBY, M., QUINN, T.C. & HEYWARD, W.L. (1993). Risk for perinatal HIV-1 transmission according to maternal immunologic, virologic, and placental factors. *JAMA* **269**, 2853-2859.

STREBEL, K., KLIMKAIT, T., MALDARELLI, F. & MARTIN, M.A. (1989). Molecular and biochemical analysis of HIV-1 vpu protein. *J.Virol.* **63**, 3784-3791.

STRIZKI, J.M., ALBRIGHT, A.V., SHENG, H., OCONNOR, M., PERRIN, L. & GONZALEZSCARANO, F. (1996). Infection of primary human microglia and monocyte-derived macrophages with human immunodeficiency virus type 1 isolates: Evidence of differential tropism. *J.Virol.* **70**, 7654-7662.

SULLIVAN, N., THALI, M., FURMAN, C., HO, D.D. & SODROSKI, J. (1993). Effect of amino acid changes in the V1/V2 region of the human immunodeficiency virus type-1 gp120 glycoprotein on subunit association, syncytium formation, and recognition by a neutralizing antibody. *J.Virol.* **67**, 3674-3679.

TAKAHASHI, H., MERLI, S., PUTNEY, S.D., HOUGHTEN, R., MOSS, B., GERMAIN, R.N. & BERZOFSKY, J.A. (1989). A single amino acid interchange yields reciprocal CTL specificities for HIV-1 gp160. *Science* **246**, 118-121.

TAKEDA, N., MIYAMURA, K., OGINO, M.T., NATRI, K., YAMAZAKI, S., SAKURAI, N., NAKAZONO, N., ISHII, K. & KONO, R. (1984). Evolution of Enterovirus Type 70: oligonucleotide mapping analysis of RNA genome. *Virology.* **134**, 375-388.

TAKEUCHI, Y., AKUTSU, M., MURAYAMA, K., SHIMIZU, N. & HOSHINO, H. (1991). Host range mutant of human immunodeficiency virus type 1:

modification of cell tropism by a single point mutation at the neutralization epitope in the env gene. *J.Virol.* **65**, 1710-1718.

TARDIEU, M., HENRY, C., PEUDENIER, S., BOESPFLUG, O. & MONTAGNIER, L. (1992). Human immunodeficiency virus type-1 infected monocytic cells can destroy human neural cells after cell-to-cell adhesion. *Ann.Neurol.* **32**, 11-17.

TATENO, M. & LEVY, J.A. (1988). MT-4 plaque formation can distinguish cytopathic subtypes of the human immunodeficiency virus (HIV). *Virology* **167**, 299-301.

TATENO, M., GONZALEZ-SCARANO, F. & LEVY, J.A. (1989). Human immunodeficiency virus can infect CD4-negative human fibroblastoid cells. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **86**, 4287-4290.

TAYOR, W.R., GLASS, J.D., GRIFFIN, J., BECKER, S., MCARTHUR, J., BEZMAN, L. & GRIFFIN, D. (1992). Cytokine expression in the brain during the acquired immune deficiency syndrome. *Ann.Neurol.* **31**, 349-360.

TEMIN, H.M. (1993). Retrovirus variation and reverse transcription - abnormal strand transfers result in retrovirus genetic variation. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **90**, 6900-6903.

TERAI, C., KORNBLUTH, R.S., PAUZA, C.D., RICHMAN, D.D. & CARSON, D.A. (1991). Apoptosis as a mechanism of cell death in cultured T lymphoblasts acutely infected with HIV-1. *Journal of Clinical Investigation* **87**, 1710-1715.

TERSMETTE, M., DE GOEDE, R.E.Y., AL, B.J.M., WINKEL, I.N., GRUTERS, R.A., CUYPERS, H.T.M., HUISMAN, H.G. & MIEDEMA, F. (1988). Differential syncytium-inducing capacity of human immunodeficiency virus isolates: frequent detection of syncytium-inducing isolates in patients with acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (AIDS) and AIDS-related complex. *J.Virol.* **62**, 2026-2032.

TOMKINSON, B.E., MAZIARZ, R. & SULLIVAN, J.L. (1989). Characterization of the T cell mediated cellular cytotoxicity during acute infectious mononucleosis. *J. Immunol.* **143**, 660-669.

TONIOLO, A., SERRA, C., CONALDI, P.G., BASOLO, F., FALCONE, V. & DOLEI, A. (1995). Productive HIV-1 infection of normal human mammary epithelial cells. *AIDS* **9**, 859-866.

TOOHEY, K., WEHRLY, K., NISHIO, J., PERRYMAN, S. & CHESEBRO, B. (1995). Human immunodeficiency virus envelope V1 and V2 regions influence

replication efficiency in macrophages by affecting virus spread. *Virology* **213**, 70-79.

TRISTEM, M., MARCHAL, C., KARPAS, A. & HILL, F. (1992). Evolution of primate lentiviruses: evidence from *vpx* and *vpr*. *EMBO.J.* **11**, 3405-3412.

TRKOLA, A., DRAGIC, T., ARTHOS, J., BINLEY, J.M., OLSON, W.C., ALLAWAY, G.P., CHENGMAYER, C., ROBINSON, J., MADDON, P.J. & MOORE, J.P. (1996). CD4-dependent, antibody-sensitive interactions between HIV-1 and its co-receptor CCR-5. *Nature* **384**, 184-187.

TSCHACHLER, E., GROH, V. & POPOVIC, M. (1987). Epidermal langerhans cells: a target for HTLV-II/LAV infection. *J. Invest. Dermatol.* **88**, 233-237.

TSUBOTA, H., RINGLER, D.J., KANNAGI, M., KING, N.W., SOLOMON, K.R., MACKEY, J.J., WALSH, D.G. & LETVIN, N.L. (1989). CD8+CD4- lymphocyte lines can harbour the AIDS virus *in vitro*. *J.Immunol* **143**, 858-863.

UITTENBOGAART, C.H., ANISMAN, D.J., JAMIESON, B.D., KITCHEN, S., SCHMID, I., ZACK, J.A. & HAYS, E.F. (1996). Differential tropism of HIV-1 isolates for distinct thymocyte subsets *in vitro*. *AIDS* **10**, F9-F16.

VAISHNAV, Y.N. & WONG STAAL, F. (1991). The Biochemistry of AIDS. *Annu. Rev.Biochem.* **60**, 577-630.

VALENTIN, A., ALBERT, J., FENYO, E.M. & ASJO, B. (1990). HIV-1 infection of normal human macrophage cultures: implication for silent infection. *Virology.* **177**, 790-794.

VAN TIJN, D.A., BOUCHER, C.A., BAKKER, M. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1989). Antigenicity of linear B-cell epitopes in the C1, V1, and V3 region of HIV-1 gp 120. *J.Acquir.Immune.Defic.Syndr.* **2**, 303-306.

VANDENHAESEVELDE, M.M., PEETERS, M., JANNES, G., JANSSENS, W., VANDERGROEN, G., SHARP, P.M. & SAMAN, E. (1996). Sequence analysis of a highly divergent HIV-1-related lentivirus isolated from a wild captured chimpanzee. *Virology* **221**, 346-350.

VARTANIAN, J.P., MEYERHANS, A., ASJO, B. & WAIN HOBSON, S. (1991). Selection, recombination, and G-A hypermutation of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 genomes. *J.Virol* **65**, 1779-1788.

VAZEUX, R., BROUSSE, N., JARRY, A., HENIN, D., MARCHE, C., VEDRENNE, C., MIKOL, J., WOLFF, M., MICHON, C., ROZENBAUM, L. & BRAHIC, M. (1987). AIDS subacute encephalitis: Identification of HIV infected

cells. *Am. J Pathol* **126**, 403-410.

VAZEUX, R., LACROIX-CLAUDE, C., BLANCHE, S., CUMONT, M.S., HENIN, D., GRAY, F., BOCCON-GIBOD, L. & TARDIEU, M. (1992). Low levels of HIV replication in the brain tissue of children with severe AIDS encephalopathy. *Am. J. Pathol.* **140**, 137-144.

VELLA, S. (1994). Update on a proteinase inhibitor. *AIDS* **8**, S25-S29.

VOGT, P.K. (1971). Genetically stable reassortment of markers during mixed infection with avian tumor viruses. *Virology.* **46**, 947-952.

VOLBERDING, P.A., LAGAKOS, S.W., GRIMES, J.M., STEIN, D.S., ROONEY, J., MENG, T.C., FISCHL, M.A., COLLIER, A.C., PHAIR, J.P., HIRSCH, M.S., HARDY, W.D., BALFOUR, H.H. & REICHMAN, R.C. (1995). A comparison of immediate with deferred zidovudine therapy for asymptomatic HIV-infected adults with CD4 cell counts of 500 or more per cubic millimetre. *N.Engl.J.Med.* **333**, 401-407.

VON SYDOW, M., GAINES, H., SONNERBORG, A., FORSGREN, M., PEHRSON, P.O. & STRANNEGARD, O. (1988). Antigen detection in primary HIV infection. *Br.Med.J.* **296**, 238-240.

WAIN HOBSON, S. (1992). Human Immunodeficiency Virus Type 1 Quasispecies *In Vivo* and *Ex Vivo*. *Current Topics in Microbiology and Immunology* **176**, 181-193.

WAIN-HOBSON, S. (1993). The fastest genome evolution ever described: HIV variation *in situ*. *Current Opinion in Genetics and Development.* **3**, 878-883.

WALKER, B.D., CHAKRABARTI, S., MOSS, B., PARADIS, T.J., FLYNN, T., DURNO, A.G., BLUMBERG, R.S., KAPLAN, J.C., HIRSCH, M.S. & SCHOOLEY, R.T. (1987). HIV-specific cytotoxic T lymphocytes in seropositive individuals. *Nature* **328**, 345-348.

WALKER, B.D. & PLATA, F. (1990). Cytotoxic T lymphocytes against HIV. *AIDS* **4**, 177-184.

WALKER, C.M., MOODY, D.J., STITES, D.P. & LEVY, J.A. (1986). CD8+ Lymphocytes Can Control HIV Infection *in vitro* by Suppressing Virus Replication. *Science* **234**, 1563-1566.

WANG, N., ZHU, T.F. & HO, D.D. (1995). Sequence diversity of V1 and V2 domains of gp120 from human immunodeficiency virus type 1: lack of correlation with viral phenotype. *J.Virol.* **69**, 2708-2715.

WANG, W.K., ESSEX, M. & LEE, T.H. (1995). The highly conserved aspartic acid residue between hypervariable regions 1 and 2 of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 is important for early stages of virus replication. *J.Virol.* **69**, 538-542.

WANG, W.K., ESSEX, M. & LEE, T.H. (1996). Single amino acid substitution in constant region 1 or 4 of gp120 causes the phenotype of a human immunodeficiency virus type 1 variant with mutations in hypervariable regions 1 and 2 to revert. *J.Virol.* **70**, 607-611.

WARRIER, S.V., PINTER, A., HONNEN, W.J., GIRARD, M., MUCHMORE, E. & TILLEY, S.A. (1994). A novel, glycan-dependent epitope in the V2 domain of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gpr120 is recognized by a highly potent, neutralizing chimpanzee monoclonal antibody. *J.Virol.* **68**, 4636-4642.

WATKINS, B.A., DORN, H.H., KELLY, W.B., ARMSTRONG, R.C., POTTS, B.J., MICHAELS, F., KUFTA, C.V. & DUBOIS DALCQ, M. (1990). Specific tropism of HIV-1 for microglial cells in primary human brain cultures. *Science.* **249**, 549-553.

WEBSTER, R.G., LAVER, W.G., AIR, G.M. & SCHILD, G.C. (1982). Molecular mechanisms of variation in Influenza viruses. *Nature* **296**, 115-121.

WEI, X.P., GHOSH, S.K., TAYLOR, M.E., JOHNSON, V.A., EMINI, E.A., DEUTSCH, P., LIFSON, J.D., BONHOEFFER, S., NOWAK, M.A., HAHN, B.H., SAAG, M.S. & SHAW, G.M. (1995). Viral dynamics in human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infection. *Nature* **373**, 117-122.

WEINHOLD, K.J., LYERLY, H.K., STANLEY, S.D., AUSTIN, A.A., MATTHEWS, T.J. & BOLOGNESI, D.P. (1989). HIV-1 GP120-mediated immune suppression and lymphocyte destruction in the absence of viral infection. *J.Immunol.* **142**, 3091-3097.

WEISS, R. A., TEICH, N. N., VARMUS, H. E. & COFFIN, J. (1985). In *RNA Tumor Viruses*, Cold Spring Harbor Laboratory.

WEISS, R.A., CLAPHAM, P.R., WEBER, J.N., DALGLEISH, A.G., LASKY, L.A., BERMAN, D.W. (1986). Variable and conserved neutralization agents of HIV. *Nature* **324**, 572-575.

WELLER, S., JOY, A.E. & TEMIN, H.M. (1980). Correlation between cell killing and massive second-round superinfection by members of some subgroups of avian leukosis virus. *J.Virol.* **33**, 494-506.

WELLER, S. & TEMIN, H. (1981). Cell killing by avian leukosis virus. *J. Virol.*

39, 713-721.

WESTERVELT, P., GENDELMAN, H.E. & RATNER, L. (1991). Identification of a determinant within the human immunodeficiency virus 1 surface envelope glycoprotein critical for productive infection of primary monocytes. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **88**, 3097-3101.

WESTERVELT, P., TROWBRIDGE, D.B., EPSTEIN, L.G., BLUMBERG, B.M., LI, Y., HAHN, B.H., SHAW, G.M., PRICE, R.W. & RATNER, L. (1992). Macrophage tropism determinants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in vivo. *J.Virol.* **66**, 2577-2582.

WILEY, C.A., SCHRIER, R.D., NELSON, J.A., LAMPART, P.W. & OLDSTONE, M.B.A. (1986). Cellular location of human immunodeficiency virus infection within the brains of acquired immune deficiency syndrome patients. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **83**, 7089-7093.

WILEY, C.A. & NELSON, J.A. (1990). Human immunodeficiency virus: infection of the nervous system. *Curr.Top.Microbiol.Immunol.* **160**, 157-172.

WILEY, C.A., BALDWIN, M. & ACHIM, C.L. (1996). Expression of HIV regulatory and structural mRNA in the central nervous system. *AIDS* **10**, 843-847.

WILLEY, R., SMITH, D.H., LASKY, L.A., THEODORE, T.S., EARL, P.L., MOSS, B., CAPON, D.J. & MARTIN, M.A. (1988). *In vitro* mutagenesis identifies a region within the envelope gene of the human immunodeficiency virus that is critical for infectivity. *J. Virol.* **62**, 139-147.

WILLEY, R.L., RUTLEDGE, R.A., DIAS, S., FOLKS, T., THEODORE, T., BUCKLER, C.E. & MARTIN, M.A. (1986). Identification of conserved and divergent domains within the envelope gene of the acquired immunodeficiency syndrome retrovirus. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **83**, 5038-5042.

WILLEY, R.L., ROSS, E.K., BUCKLER WHITE, A.J., THEODORE, T.S. & MARTIN, M.A. (1989). Functional interaction of constant and variable domains of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120. *J.Virol.* **63**, 3595-3600.

WOLFS, T.F., ZWART, G., BAKKER, M., VALK, M., KUIKEN, C.L. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1991). Naturally occurring mutations within HIV-1 V3 genomic RNA lead to antigenic variation dependent on a single amino acid substitution. *Virology.* **185**, 195-205.

WOLFS, T.F.W., DE JONG, J.J., VAN DEN BERG, H., TIJNAGEL, J.M., KRONE, W.J. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1990). Evolution of sequences encoding the principal neutralization epitope of human immunodeficiency virus 1 is host

dependent, rapid, and continuous. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.U.S.A.* **87**, 9938-9942.

WOLINSKY, S.M., KORBER, B.T.M., NEUMANN, A.U., DANIELS, M., KUNSTMAN, K.J., WHETSELL, A.J., FURTADO, M.R., CAO, Y.Z., HO, D.D., SAFRIT, J.T. & KOUP, R.A. (1996). Adaptive evolution of human immunodeficiency virus-type 1 during the natural course of infection. *Science* **272**, 537-542.

WONG, J., IGNACIO, C., TORRIANI, F., HAVLIR, D., FITCH, N.J.S. & RICHMAN, D.D. (1997). *In vivo* compartmentalization of human immunodeficiency virus: Evidence from the examination of *pol* sequences from autopsy tissues. *J. Virol.* **71**, 2059-2071.

WONG-STAAL, F., SHAW, G.M., HAHN, B.H., SALAHUDDIN, S.Z., POPOVIC, M., MARKHAM, P., REDFIELD, R. & GALLO, R.C. (1985). Genomic diversity of human T-lymphotropic virus type III (HTLV-III). *Science* **229**, 759-762.

WORLD HEALTH ORGANIZATION. (1995). AIDS global data. *Wkly. Epidemiol. Rec.* **70**, 353-355.

WRIGHT, S.C., JEWETT, A., MITSURJASU, R. & BONAVIDA, B. (1988). Spontaneous cytotoxicity and tumor necrosis factor production by peripheral blood monocytes from AIDS patients. *J. Immunol.* **141**, 99-104.

WU, L.J., GERARD, N.P., WYATT, R., CHOE, H., PAROLIN, C., RUFFING, N., BORSETTI, A., CARDOSO, A.A., DESJARDIN, E., NEWMAN, W., GERARD, C. & SODROSKI, J. (1996). CD4-induced interaction of primary HIV-1 gp120 glycoproteins with the chemokine receptor CCR-5. *Nature* **384**, 179-183.

WU, Z., KAYMAN, S.C., HONNEN, W., REVESZ, K., CHEN, H., VIJHWARRIER, S., TILLEY, S.A., MCKEATING, J., SHOTTON, C. & PINTER, A. (1995). Characterization of neutralization epitopes in the V2 region of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120: role of glycosylation in the correct folding of the V1/V2 domain. *J.Virol.* **69**, 2271-2278.

WYATT, R., THALI, M., TILLEY, S., PINTER, A., POSNER, M., HO, D., ROBINSON, J. & SODROSKI, J. (1992). Relationship of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 third variable loop to a component of the CD4 binding site in the fourth conserved region. *J. Virol.* **66**, 697-7004.

WYATT, R., MOORE, J., ACCOLA, M., DESJARDIN, E., ROBINSON, J. & SODROSKI, J. (1995). Involvement of the V1/V2 variable loop structure in the exposure of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 epitopes induced by receptor binding. *J.Virol.* **69**, 5723-5733.

WYKE, J.A. & BEAMAND, J.A. (1979). Genetic recombination in Rous sarcoma virus: the genesis of recombinants and lack of evidence for linkage between *pol, env,* and *src* genes in three factor crosses. *J Gen Virol* **43**, 349-364.

WYLIE, A.H., MORRIS, R.G., SMITH, A.L. & DUNLOP, D. (1991). Chromatin cleavage in apoptosis: association with condensed chromatin morphology and dependence on macromolecular synthesis. *J.Pathol.* **142**, 67-77.

YAMASHITA, A., YAMAMOTO, N., MATSUDA, J. & KOYANAGI, Y. (1994). Cell type-specific heterogeneity of the HIV-1 V3 loop in infected individuals: selection of virus in macrophages and plasma. *Virology* **204**, 170-179.

YARCHOAN, R., PERNO, C.F., THOMAS, R.V., COLLINS, J.M., MYERS, C.E. & BRODER, S. (1988). Phase 1 studies of 2',3'-dideoxycytidine in severe HIV as a single agent and altering with zidovudine (AZT). *Lancet* **i**, 76-81.

YARCHOAN, R., LIETZAU, J.A., NGUYEN, B.Y., BRAWLEY, O.W., PLUDA, J.M., SAVILLE, M.W., WYVILL, K.M., STEINBERG, S.M., AGBARIA, R., MITSUYA, H. & BRODER, S. (1994). A randomized pilot study of alternating or simultaneous zidovudine and didanosine therapy in patients with symptomatic human immunodeficiency virus infection. *Journal of Infectious Diseases* **169**, 9-17.

YOFFE, B., LEWIS, D.L., PETRIE, B., NOONAN, C.A., MELNICK, J. & BLAINE HOLLINGER, F. (1987). Fusion as a mediator of cytolysis in mixtures of uninfected CD4+ lymphocytes and cells infected by human immunodeficiency virus. *Proc.Natl.Acad.Sci.USA* **84**, 1429-1433.

YOKOYAMA, S. (1988). Molecular evolution of the human and simian immunodeficiency viruses. *Mol. Biol. Evol.* **5**, 645-659.

YOSHIYAMA, H., MO, H.M., MOORE, J.P. & HO, D.D. (1994). Characterization of mutants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 that have escaped neutralization by a monoclonal antibody to the gp120 V2 loop. *J.Virol.* **68**, 974-978.

YOUNG, J.F., DESSELBERGER, U. & PALESE, P. (1979). Evolution of human Influenza viruses in nature: sequential mutations in the genomes of new H1N1 isolates. *Cell* **18**, 73-83.

YU, X.F., ITO, S., ESSEX, M. & LEE, T.H. (1988). A naturally immunogenic virion-associated protein specific for HIV-2 and SIV. *Nature* **335**, 262-265.

YU, X.F., YU, Q.C., ESSEX, M., LEE, T.H. (1991). The vpx gene of simian immunodeficiency virus facilitates efficient viral replication in fresh lymphocytes and macrophages. *J. Virol.* **65**, 5088-5091.

ZARLING, J.M., LEDBETTER, J.A., SIAS, J., FULTZ, P., EICHBERG, J.W., GJERSET, G. & MORAN, P. (1990). HIV-1 infected humans but not chimpanzees, have circulating cytotoxic T lymphocytes that lyse infected CD4+ cells. *J.Immunol.* **144**, 2992-2998.

ZHANG, L.Q., SIMMONDS, P., LUDLAM, C.A. & LEIGH BROWN, A.J. (1991). Detection, quantification and sequencing of HIV-1 from the plasma of seropositive individuals and from factor VIII concentrates. *AIDS* **5**, 675-681.

ZHU, T.F., MO, H.M., WANG, N., NAM, D.S., CAO, Y.Z., KOUP, R.A. & HO, D.D. (1993). Genotypic and phenotypic characterization of HIV-1 in patients with primary infection. *Science* **261**, 1179-1181.

ZINKERNAGEL, R.M. & HENGARTNER, H. (1991). Games that viruses play. *Nature* **354**, 433-434.

ZINKERNAGEL, R.M. & HENGARTNER, H. (1994). T-cell-mediated immunopathology *versus* direct cytolysis by virus: implications for HIV and AIDS. *Immunology Today.* **15**, 262-268.

ZINKERNAGEL, R.M. (1995). Are HIV-specific CTL responses salutary or pathogenic. *Curr.Opin.Immunol* **7**, 462-470.

ZWART, G., LANGEDIJK, H., VAN DER HOEK, L., DE JONG, J.J., WOLFS, T.F.W., RAMAUTARSING, C., BAKKER, M., DE RONDE, A. & GOUDSMIT, J. (1991). Immunodominance and antigenic variation of the principal neutralization domain of HIV-1. *Virology* **181**, 481-489.

APPENDICES

Appendix I:Specified secondary infectious diseases listed in the CDC surveillance definition for AIDS (CDC., 1986).

This group includes patients with symptomatic or invasive disease due to one of twelve specified secondary infections listed below.

. *Pneumocystis carinni* pneumonia

. Chronic cryptosporidiosis

. Toxoplasmosis

. Extraintestinal strongglyoidiasis

. Isosporiasis

. Candidiasis (oesophageal, bronchial or pulmonary)

. Cryptococcosis

. Histoplasmosis

. Mycobacterial infection (*Mycobacterium avium*)

. Chronis mucocutaneous

. Disseminated herpes simplex virus infection

. Progressive multifocal leukoencephalopathy

Appendix II: Other specified secondary infectious diseases (CDC., 1986).

This group includes patients with one of six other specified secondary infectious diseases listed below.

- Oral hairy leukoplakia
- Multidermatomal herpes zoster
- Recurrent salmonella bactaeremia
- Nocardiosis
- Tuberculosis
- Oral candidiasis (thrush)

Appendix III: Secondary cancers (CDC., 1986).

This group includes patients with one or more of the specified cancers listed below.

. Karposi's sarcoma

. non Hodgkin's lymphoma

. Primary lymphoma of the brain

. Cervical cancer

Appendix IV: Nucleotide sequences obtained for p79.

```
P79BR-3A  GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAA AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAA TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ACC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-5A  GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC A?? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-7A  GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAA AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC A?? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-8A  GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAA AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ACC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-9A  GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
```

??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-10A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-12A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-13A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CC? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-15A GGG AGC TAG AGC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TA? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-25A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG AGC ATC AGG
CCA TA? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-29A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT

TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
TTA ATA CAG TAG CAA CCC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA AGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA ATG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-53A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TA? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-54A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TA? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79BR-60A GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TTG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAA AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGG AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CC? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-4B GGG AAC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TCA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAC TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATA CAG TAG CAA CCC TCT TTT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAG ACA AAA GTA AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AGA ACA TTC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CAA TAT AAA CCT A?? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-8B ??? ??? ??? ??? ??T TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT ATA GAC AAA TAC TGG AAC AGC TAC
GGC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG

ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTA GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-13B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAT TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TAT AAA CCT A?? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-15B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TTG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TCT
TAG AAA CAT TAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AGC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AAC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AGA ACA TTC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TAT A?? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-20B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TCA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTG ACA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TAT A?? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-50B GGG AGT TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTA GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
AGG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAA CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG ACA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AAG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-56B GGG AGT TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
AGG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGC AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT

ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-62B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG TAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCT TAT CAC CTA GA? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-64B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TTC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TAT CAC CTA GA? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-68B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AGA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CC? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-69B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TAT ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-71B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CCC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
AGG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCA TAT ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P70LN-72B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAT CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CTC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTA GCA CAG AAA ACA GCA GCC AGG CCA GTC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CC? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-74B GGG AGC TTG AAC AAT TTG AAG TTA ATC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGC AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA GTA AAA TAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTA GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TAA TAC ATC AGG
CCT TAT CAC CTA GAA ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-76B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TTG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAC TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGC AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTA GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AGA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCT TAT CAC CTA GAA ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-78B GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGC AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCT TAT CAC CTA GAA ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LN-60B GGG AGT TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AGC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTA GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-3C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAC TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT

ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
AGG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AAC ACA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTG ACA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-4C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAA AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAC TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA AAT CAT TAT
TTA ATA CAG TAG CAA CCC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA ATG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGA AAA
AGC AAA ACA AAA GTA AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGA CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-9C GAG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATA CAG TAG CAA CCC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
AGG TAA AAG ACA CCA ATG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAG ACA AAA GTA AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC A?? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-10C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TTT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA GGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC A?? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-13C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TTT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA GGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC A?? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-15C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TTG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
AGG TAA AAG ACA CCA GGG AAG CTT TAG AGC AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAG GTA AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG

CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-25C GAG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TTT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GAA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA GGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CCA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TA? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-29C GAG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTA GCC TAT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCA GGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAA CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TTC AGG GAC AAA TGG TA? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-33C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AGG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AAC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AAA CAG GAT CAA AAG AAC TTA AAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GAA TAA
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGA AAG CTT TAG AGA AAA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAA AAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TTC AGG GGC AAA TGG TA? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-36C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TTG CAA TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
TAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-38C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TTG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TAT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG AAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AGA ACA TCC AGG GGC AAA TGG TAC ATC AGG
CCT TAT CAC CTA GA? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-39C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TGT
TAG AGA CGT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-40C GGG AAC TAG AAC AAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TGT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA ACA AAA ATC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAG CAG CTG ACA CAG GAA ACA GCA GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AGA ACA TCC AG? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-41C GGG AGC TAG AAC AAT TTG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TGT
TAG AAA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA GGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CCC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AGA AAA AAG CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC AAG
CAA CAG CTG ACA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AGA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

P79LG-43C GGG AGC TAG AAC GAT TCG CAG TTA ACC CTG GCC TGT
TAG AGA CAT CAG AAG GCT GTA GAC AAA TAT TGG AAC AGC TAC
AAC CAT CCC TTC AGA CAG GAT CAG AAG AAC TTA GAT CAT TAT
ATA ATG CAG TAG CAA CTC TCT ATT GTG TGC ATC AAA AGA TAG
ATG TAA AAG ACA CAC AGG AAG CTT TAG AGA AGA TAA AGG AAG
AGC AAA GCA AAA GTC AAA AAA AAA CAC AGC AAG CAC AGC TAG
TAG CAG CTA GCA CAG GAA ACA GCG GTC AGG CCA GCC AAA ATT
ACC CTA TAG TGC AAA ACA TCC AGG ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???
??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ???

Appendix V

Data Origin	Sequence	Phenotype	V1 Charge	V1 Length	V1 CHO Sites
Wang et al.,1995	CASE.B	N	-2	26	3
	AD11	N	1	26	3
	BABYA	N	-1	25	3
	HU	N	-1	32	3
	X47	N	0	26	4
	ACTG6	N	2	36	4
	ACTG11	N	-1	31	4
	X56	N	-1	32	4
	MR	N	-2	29	3
	X44	N	-5	26	3
	AD6	N	-1	27	3
	ACTG10	N	-1	36	3
	ACTG8	N	0	29	3
	EJ	N	-1	30	4
	76B	N	0	26	4
	CASE.C	N	-1	30	4
	AD10	N	-2	29	4
	AD13	N	-2	29	3
	RT	N	1	32	3
	JCS010	N	-3	32	4
	CASE.D1	N	-1	35	5
	CASE.D7	N	-3	27	3
	AD8	N	0	39	3
	N70	N	-1	42	8
	277B	S	0	17	2
	ACTG1	S	0	19	2
	X57	S	-1	27	3
	CASE.A2	S	-1	36	5
	CASE.A1	S	-1	27	3
	X42C	S	-3	28	4
	ACTG3	S	-2	31	3
	JSH	S	-2	29	4
	X50C	S	0	37	4
	X49	S	-2	48	8

Data Origin	Sequence	Phenotype	V2 Charge	V2 Length	V2 CHO Sites
Wang et al.,1995	CASE.B	N	0	42	2
	AD11	N	-1	44	3
	BABYA	N	-1	42	2
	HU	N	2	42	3
	X47	N	1	44	2
	ACTG6	N	1	41	2
	ACTG11	N	1	41	1
	X56	N	-1	41	2
	MR	N	-1	40	2
	X44	N	-3	40	3
	AD6	N	3	45	1
	ACTG10	N	0	43	3
	ACTG8	N	2	40	2
	EJ	N	-1	46	2
	76B	N	3	46	1
	CASE.C	N	0	40	2
	AD10	N	0	43	3
	AD13	N	2	40	2
	RT	N	-2	42	2
	JCS010	N	0	40	2
	CASE.D1	N	1	47	4
	CASE.D7	N	2	41	2
	AD8	N	1	40	2
	N70	N	2	40	2
	277B	S	0	42	2
	ACTG1	S	1	46	3
	X57	S	0	41	3
	CASE.A2	S	2	42	2
	CASE.A1	S	4	43	2
	X42C	S	0	41	2
	ACTG3	S	2	41	1
	JSH	S	1	46	3
	X50C	S	-1	41	2
	X49	S	1	40	2
Groenink et al.,1993	ACH-239.11	N	-1	40	2
	Ama-44	N	1	40	2
	Ama-168.2	N	3	40	3
	Ama-96.1	N	1	40	2
	ACH-424	N	0	40	2
	Ama-24	N	2	40	1
	ACH-15.9	N	-1	40	2
	ACH-172.1	N	3	42	3
	ACH-525	N	-1	42	2
	ACH-638	N	3	39	2
	Ama-179	N	1	40	2
	Ama-180	N	2	41	2
	Ama-181	N	3	39	2
	Ama-182	N	2	39	2
	Ama-161.15	S	1	49	3
	ACH-320.2A.1.1	S	1	48	3
	Ama-16.2	S	3	43	2
	ACH-39.14.2	S	1	47	3

	Ama-72.3.3	S	0	42	2
	ACH-224.25.5	S	2	41	3
	ACH-571.16.2	S	1	42	2
	Ama-169.2	S	3	47	2
	ACH-479.5	S	2	45	2
	ACH-168.7	S	2	40	2
	Ama-55	S	2	43	2
	ACH-704.2	S	-2	40	1
	ACH-373.38	S	0	40	2
	Ama-32	S	3	43	2
	Ama-127.4.2	S	3	42	3
Cornelissen et al.,1995	BR03	N	1	38	2
	BR04	N	1	40	2
	BR17	N	-1	43	3
	BR18c	N	0	43	3
	BR19	N	0	39	2
	BR20c1	N	-1	40	1
	BR20c2	N	0	38	1
	BR21	N	0	40	2
	BR23	N	3	40	2
	BR28c1	N	2	40	3
	BR28c2	N	0	40	2
	BR30	N	2	40	3
	TH14	N	0	39	2
	TH26	N	1	39	1
	AMC-01c	N	0	40	1
	AMC-03	N	2	40	2
	AMC-04	N	1	50	4
	AMC-06	N	1	38	1
	AMC-12	N	1	42	2
	AMC-14	N	3	44	2
	AMC-15	N	0	46	3
	AMC-18	N	2	40	2
	BR14c	S	2	38	1
	AMC-02	S	0	40	2
	AMC-05	S	-1	61	5
	AMC-07c	S	4	40	2
	AMC-8	S	2	39	1
	AMC-9	S	1	40	1
	AMC-10	S	0	45	1
	AMC-19	S	3	40	1
	AMC-20c1	S	0	41	2
	AMC-20c2	S	-1	40	2
	AMC-21	S	4	40	2
	AMC-22	S	2	40	2
	AMC-24	S	0	38	1

Appendix VI

Patient No.	Origin	V1 charge	V1 length	V1 CHO Sites	V2 charge	V2 length	V2 CHO Sites
5	BR-1	-1	30	2	1	40	2
5	BR-2	-1	30	2	2	40	3
5	BR-3	-1	30	2	1	40	2
5	BR-4	0	30	3	1	40	2
5	BR-5	-2	30	3	-1	40	2
5	BR-6	-1	30	2	1	40	2
5	BR-7	-1	30	2	2	40	3
5	BR-8	0	30	3	1	40	2
5	BR-9	-1	30	2	1	40	2
5	BR-10	-1	30	2	2	40	3
5	BR-11	-1	30	2	1	40	2
5	BR-12	0	30	3	2	40	2
5	LN-1	2	30	3	2	40	2
5	LN-2	-1	30	2	1	40	2
5	LN-3	0	30	3	-1	40	2
5	LN-4	0	30	2	2	40	2
5	LN-5	0	30	3	0	40	2
5	LN-6	0	30	3	2	40	2
5	LN-7	0	30	2	1	40	2
5	LN-8	1	30	2	2	40	2
5	LN-9	0	30	2	2	40	2
5	LN-10	1	30	3	1	40	2
5	LG-1	-1	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-2	0	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-3	0	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-4	0	30	3	1	40	2
5	LG-5	-1	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-6	-1	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-7	0	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-8	1	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-9	0	30	3	-1	40	2
5	LG-10	1	30	3	1	40	2
5	LG-11	0	30	3	0	40	2
5	LG-12	1	30	3	3	40	2
5	LG-13	0	30	3	1	40	2
5	LG-14	0	30	3	2	40	2
5	LG-15	0	30	3	1	40	2
9	BR-1	2	31	2	0	43	2
9	BR-2	1	30	4	2	43	2
9	BR-3	2	32	4	1	43	2
9	BR-4	-1	31	4	2	43	2
9	BR-5	0	35	4	2	43	2
9	BR-6	0	32	4	1	43	2
9	BR-7	0	32	4	3	43	2
9	BR-8	1	31	4	3	44	3
9	BR-9	2	27	4	1	48	4
9	BR-10	3	38	5	3	43	2
9	BR-11	0	38	5	2	43	2
9	LN-1	0	38	5	0	47	5
9	LN-2	1	31	5	0	47	5
9	LN-3	0	38	5	-1	47	5
9	LN-4	1	31	4	0	47	5

9	LN-5	0	31	5	0	47	5
9	LN-6	1	31	4	0	47	5
9	LN-7	-4	31	4	0	43	2
9	LG-1	-1	38	5	3	44	3
9	LG-2	0	31	5	1	47	4
9	LG-3	0	38	5	0	47	5
9	LG-4	0	38	5	1	47	4
9	LG-5	1	32	4	-1	48	3
9	LG-6	1	31	4	-1	48	3
9	LG-7	0	32	4	0	47	5
9	LG-8	0	38	5	1	49	4
9	LG-9	0	38	5	1	48	3
9	LG-10	0	38	5	0	48	4
11	BR-1	0	40	3	1	40	2
11	BR-2	-1	42	5	1	40	2
11	BR-3	1	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-4	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-5	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-6	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-7	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-8	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-9	1	30	4	2	40	1
11	BR-10	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	BR-11	0	30	4	1	38	2
11	LN-1	1	30	4	2	40	1
11	LN-2	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	LN-3	0	31	4	2	40	1
11	LN-4	2	42	4	1	40	2
11	LB-5	-1	42	5	1	40	2
11	LN-6	0	30	4	2	38	1
11	LN-7	-1	31	4	2	40	1
11	LN-8	0	41	4	0	40	2
11	LN-9	0	31	4	1	40	1
11	LN-10	0	31	4	1	40	1
11	LN-11	-1	42	5	1	40	2

Appendix VII

Patient	Disease Status	CD4 count	V1 No. LN	V1 No. BR	V2 No. LN	V2 No. BR
4	S	8	1	1	1	1
5	S	95	5	3	3	3
6	S	10	6	3	3	1
15	S	5	1	2	1	1
21	S	6	2	3	1	1
26	S	8	5	3	2	2
30	S	0	2	2	1	1
32	S	11	5	2	1	1
42	S	28	3	3	2	1
44	S	19	2	1	3	1
51	S	10	6	3	2	2
63	S	2	1	2	2	1
69	S	90	2	3	2	1
10	S	6	2		2	
16	S	4	5		3	
17	S	12	3		3	
18	S	10	4		3	
24	S	19	4		4	
25	S	93	6		2	
27	S	5	7		2	
28	S	105	10		2	
36	S	15	3		5	
37	S	2	4		2	
38	S	40	3		2	
39	S	170	2		4	
45	S	5	2		3	
48	S	40	5		2	
54	S	13	4		4	
62	S	2	2		5	
64	S	2	3		3	
68	S	155	7		5	
72	S	140	2		3	
77	S	3	3		3	
78	S	0	2		2	
1	P	115	1		4	
2	P	140	4		2	
3	P	370	3		3	
19	P	33	3		2	
34	P	240	1		2	
35	P	180	6		2	
40	P	50	3		1	
76	P	802	2		4	

Patient	Disease status	Tissue origin	Actual length	Genomic region	CD4 count	GCE
4	S	LN	30	V1	8	X
4	S	BR	30	V1	8	X
5	S	LN	31	V1	95	X
5	S	LN	32	V1	95	X
5	S	LN	36	V1	95	X
5	S	LN	38	V1	95	X
5	S	LN	40	V1	95	X
5	S	BR	31	V1	95	X
5	S	BR	38	V1	95	X
5	S	BR	40	V1	95	X
6	S	LN	30	V1	10	X
6	S	LN	31	V1	10	X
6	S	LN	32	V1	10	X
6	S	LN	40	V1	10	X
6	S	LN	41	V1	10	X
6	S	LN	42	V1	10	X
6	S	BR	30	V1	10	X
6	S	BR	32	V1	10	X
6	S	BR	42	V1	10	X
15	S	LN	30	V1	5	X
15	S	BR	30	V1	5	X
15	S	BR	36	V1	5	X
21	S	LN	35	V1	6	X
21	S	LN	39	V1	6	X
21	S	BR	31	V1	6	X
21	S	BR	35	V1	6	X
21	S	BR	42	V1	6	X
26	S	LN	31	V1	8	X
26	S	LN	32	V1	8	X
26	S	LN	39	V1	8	X
26	S	LN	49	V1	8	X
26	S	LN	50	V1	8	X
26	S	BR	31	V1	8	X
26	S	BR	32	V1	8	X
26	S	BR	39	V1	8	X
30	S	LN	31	V1	0	X
30	S	LN	39	V1	0	X
30	S	BR	31	V1	0	X
30	S	BR	39	V1	0	X
32	S	LN	28	V1	11	X
32	S	LN	32	V1	11	X
32	S	LN	36	V1	11	X
32	S	LN	37	V1	11	X
32	S	LN	39	V1	11	X
32	S	BR	28	V1	11	X
32	S	BR	37	V1	11	X
34	P	LN	30	V1	240	O
40	S	LN	31	V1	50	X
40	S	LN	33	V1	50	X
40	S	LN	39	V1	50	X
40	S	BR	31	V1	50	X
40	S	BR	39	V1	50	X

40	S	BR	40	V1	50	X
42	S	LN	27	V1	28	X
42	S	LN	30	V1	28	X
42	S	LN	34	V1	28	X
42	S	BR	27	V1	28	X
42	S	BR	34	V1	28	X
42	S	BR	37	V1	28	X
44	S	LN	27	V1	19	O
44	S	LN	34	V1	19	O
63	S	LN	31	V1	2	X
63	S	BR	31	V1	2	X
63	S	BR	39	V1	2	X
69	S	LN	22	V1	90	X
69	S	LN	29	V1	90	X
69	S	BR	27	V1	90	X
69	S	BR	30	V1	90	X
69	S	BR	38	V1	90	X
77	S	LN	26	V1	3	O
77	S	LN	27	V1	3	O
77	S	LN	33	V1	3	O
78	S	LN	36	V1	0	O
78	S	LN	46	V1	0	O
10	S	LN	37	V1	6	O
10	S	LN	47	V1	6	O
1	P	LN	30	V1	115	O
1	P	LN	31	V1	115	O
1	P	LN	38	V1	115	O
1	P	LN	39	V1	115	O
3	P	LN	30	V1	370	O
3	P	LN	31	V1	370	O
3	P	LN	38	V1	370	O
16	S	LN	34	V1	4	O
16	S	LN	38	V1	4	O
16	S	LN	41	V1	4	O
17	S	LN	36	V1	12	O
17	S	LN	42	V1	12	O
18	S	LN	24	V1	10	O
18	S	LN	25	V1	10	O
18	S	LN	30	V1	10	O
18	S	LN	42	V1	10	O
19	P	LN	27	V1	33	O
19	P	LN	36	V1	33	O
2	P	LN	29	V1	140	O
2	P	LN	34	V1	140	O
2	P	LN	39	V1	140	O
2	P	LN	45	V1	140	O
24	S	LN	26	V1	19	O
24	S	LN	27	V1	19	O
24	S	LN	29	V1	19	O
24	S	LN	36	V1	19	O
25	P	LN	37	V1	93	O
25	P	LN	38	V1	93	O
25	P	LN	40	V1	93	O

25	P	LN	43	V1	93	O
25	P	LN	44	V1	93	O
27	S	LN	25	V1	5	O
27	S	LN	27	V1	5	O
27	S	LN	28	V1	5	O
27	S	LN	32	V1	5	O
27	S	LN	38	V1	5	O
27	S	LN	40	V1	5	O
35	P	LN	29	V1	180	O
35	P	LN	31	V1	180	O
35	P	LN	33	V1	180	O
35	P	LN	36	V1	180	O
35	P	LN	37	V1	180	O
35	P	LN	38	V1	180	O
36	S	LN	30	V1	15	O
36	S	LN	36	V1	15	O
37	S	LN	35	V1	2	O
37	S	LN	36	V1	2	O
37	S	LN	43	V1	2	O
37	S	LN	44	V1	2	O
38	S	LN	24	V1	40	O
38	S	LN	30	V1	40	O
38	S	LN	37	V1	40	O
39	S	LN	36	V1	170	O
39	S	LN	38	V1	170	O
45	S	LN	30	V1	5	O
45	S	LN	37	V1	5	O
48	S	LN	28	V1	40	O
48	S	LN	31	V1	40	O
48	S	LN	35	V1	40	O
48	S	LN	38	V1	40	O
48	S	LN	39	V1	40	O
54	S	LN	29	V1	3	O
54	S	LN	36	V1	3	O
54	S	LN	39	V1	3	O
54	S	LN	43	V1	3	O
62	S	LN	30	V1	2	O
62	S	LN	37	V1	2	O
64	S	LN	36	V1	2	O
64	S	LN	37	V1	2	O
64	S	LN	44	V1	2	O
68	S	LN	35	V1	155	O
68	S	LN	36	V1	155	O
68	S	LN	39	V1	155	O
68	S	LN	41	V1	155	O
68	S	LN	42	V1	155	O
68	S	LN	43	V1	155	O
68	S	LN	44	V1	155	O
72	S	LN	27	V1	140	O
72	S	LN	35	V1	140	O
76	P	LN	43	V1	802	O
4	S	BR	40	V2	8	X
4	S	BR	40	V2	8	X

5	S	LN	41	V2	95	X
5	S	LN	43	V2	95	X
5	S	LN	44	V2	95	X
5	S	LN	47	V2	95	X
5	S	BR	43	V2	95	X
5	S	BR	44	V2	95	X
5	S	BR	48	V2	95	X
6	S	LN	38	V2	10	X
6	S	LN	40	V2	10	X
6	S	LN	41	V2	10	X
6	S	BR	38	V2	10	X
15	S	LN	41	V2	5	X
15	S	BR	41	V2	5	X
21	S	LN	41	V2	6	X
21	S	BR	41	V2	6	X
26	S	LN	42	V2	8	X
26	S	LN	48	V2	8	X
26	S	BR	46	V2	8	X
26	S	BR	48	V2	8	X
30	S	LN	41	V2	0	X
30	S	BR	41	V2	0	X
32	S	LN	42	V2	11	X
32	S	BR	43	V2	11	X
34	P	LN	37	V2	240	O
34	P	LN	40	V2	240	O
40	S	LN	40	V2	50	X
40	S	BR	38	V2	50	X
42	S	LN	38	V2	28	X
42	S	LN	40	V2	28	X
42	S	BR	40	V2	28	X
44	S	LN	41	V2	19	O
44	S	LN	43	V2	19	O
44	S	LN	44	V2	29	O
51	S	LN	39	V2	10	X
51	S	LN	43	V2	10	X
51	S	BR	39	V2	10	X
51	S	BR	43	V2	10	X
63	S	LN	37	V2	2	X
63	S	LN	40	V2	2	X
63	S	BR	40	V2	2	X
69	S	LN	40	V2	90	X
69	S	LN	42	V2	90	X
69	S	BR	40	V2	90	X
77	S	LN	43	V2	3	O
77	S	LN	44	V2	3	O
77	S	LN	45	V2	3	O
78	S	LN	42	V2	0	O
78	S	LN	45	V2	0	O
10	S	LN	41	V2	6	O
10	S	LN	44	V2	6	O
1	P	LN	36	V2	115	O
1	P	LN	39	V2	115	O
1	P	LN	41	V2	115	O

1	P	LN	43	V2	115	O
3	P	LN	41	V2	370	O
3	P	LN	49	V2	370	O
16	S	LN	36	V2	4	O
16	S	LN	37	V2	4	O
16	S	LN	40	V2	4	O
17	S	LN	37	V2	12	O
17	S	LN	38	V2	12	O
17	S	LN	41	V2	12	O
18	S	LN	35	V2	10	O
18	S	LN	36	V2	10	O
18	S	LN	38	V2	10	O
19	P	LN	37	V2	33	O
19	P	LN	40	V2	33	O
2	P	LN	37	V2	140	O
2	P	LN	40	V2	140	O
24	S	LN	37	V2	19	O
24	S	LN	39	V2	19	O
24	S	LN	40	V2	19	O
24	S	LN	44	V2	19	O
25	P	LN	38	V2	93	O
25	P	LN	40	V2	93	O
27	S	LN	38	V2	5	O
27	S	LN	40	V2	5	O
35	P	LN	46	V2	180	O
35	P	LN	49	V2	180	O
36	S	LN	38	V2	15	O
36	S	LN	39	V2	15	O
36	S	LN	40	V2	15	O
36	S	LN	41	V2	15	O
36	S	LN	43	V2	15	O
37	S	LN	38	V2	2	O
37	S	LN	40	V2	2	O
38	S	LN	40	V2	40	O
38	S	LN	42	V2	40	O
39	S	LN	38	V2	170	O
39	S	LN	40	V2	170	O
39	S	LN	41	V2	170	O
39	S	LN	43	V2	170	O
45	S	LN	34	V2	5	O
45	S	LN	37	V2	5	O
45	S	LN	39	V2	5	O
48	S	LN	36	V2	40	O
48	S	LN	39	V2	40	O
54	S	LN	34	V2	3	O
54	S	LN	36	V2	3	O
54	S	LN	38	V2	3	O
54	S	LN	41	V2	3	O
62	S	LN	34	V2	2	O
62	S	LN	36	V2	2	O
62	S	LN	38	V2	2	O
62	S	LN	41	V2	2	O
62	S	LN	43	V2	2	O

64	S	LN	35	V2	2	O
64	S	LN	37	V2	2	O
64	S	LN	42	V2	2	O
68	S	LN	34	V2	155	O
68	S	LN	35	V2	155	O
68	S	LN	37	V2	155	O
68	S	LN	40	V2	155	O
68	S	LN	42	V2	155	O
72	S	LN	34	V2	140	O
72	S	LN	37	V2	140	O
72	S	LN	40	V2	140	O
76	P	LN	36	V2	802	O
76	P	LN	37	V2	802	O
76	P	LN	39	V2	802	O
76	P	LN	42	V2	802	O

JOURNAL OF VIROLOGY, Feb. 1997, p. 1272–1280
0022-538X/97/$04.00+0

Vol. 71, No. 2

Investigation of the Dynamics of the Spread of Human Immunodeficiency Virus to Brain and Other Tissues by Evolutionary Analysis of Sequences from the p17^{gag} and *env* Genes

E. S. HUGHES,[1] J. E. BELL,[2] AND P. SIMMONDS[1]*

Department of Medical Microbiology, University of Edinburgh, Edinburgh EH8 9AG,[1] and Department of Neuropathology, University of Edinburgh, Western General Hospital, Edinburgh EH4 2XU,[2] United Kingdom

Received 22 May 1996/Accepted 15 October 1996

The time of spread of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) from lymphoid to nonlymphoid tissues in the course of infection was investigated by sequence comparisons of variants infecting a range of lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues from three individuals with AIDS in the p17^{gag} gene and regions flanking the V1/V2 hypervariable regions. Phylogenetic analysis in both regions revealed several lineages in each individual that contained sequences from both lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues such as the brain. This observation contrasts strongly with the previously described organ-specific sequences in the V3 region in this study population and other investigations. Although individual pairwise comparisons of relatively short sequences such as p17^{gag} are subject to considerable stochastic error, we found that the diversity of *gag* sequences in variants from lymphoid tissue was consistently lower than that found among variants amplified from the brain. By estimating mean synonymous pairwise distances in the p17^{gag} region, we were able to make an approximate calculation of the ages of populations in different tissues. Those from lymphoid tissue ranged from 2.65 to 5.6 years in the three study subjects, compared with 4.1 to 6.2 years for variants in the brain. Indeed, variants infecting the brain were no more closely related to each other than they were to variants infecting other tissues in the body. In two of the three individuals, these times of divergence indicate that infection of the brain may have occurred as an early event in the progression to disease, preceding the onset of AIDS by several years. This study is the first in which it was possible to estimate times of diversification in different tissues in vivo and is of importance in understanding the dynamics of the spread of HIV-1 into nonlymphoid tissues and its possible adaptation for replication in different cell types.

Infection with human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) is associated with a slow, progressive, and irreversible impairment of the immune system, eventually leading to AIDS. Inherent in the nature of infection with HIV type 1 (HIV-1) is the prolonged asymptomatic period that precedes the development of disease (2, 11, 28, 35), where infection may be subclinical for as long as 10 to 15 years. This phenomenon was originally hypothesized to result from viral latency, whereby viral or proviral DNA became integrated into the host genome with the simultaneous cessation of viral expression and independent replication (2). The ensuing progression to AIDS would then result from subsequent reactivation of virus replication by various factors acting upon infected cells, such as antigens, mitogens, and transcriptional factors produced by other viruses. However, it has been recently shown that from the time of seroconversion, there is active replication of the virus in lymphoid tissues (11, 28, 35). There are few convincing demonstrations of active infection of nonlymphoid tissues until later in infection, and this change in distribution may be associated with increased immunosuppression in AIDS (9). Alternatively, it is possible that variants detected in nonlymphoid tissues such as the brain in patients with AIDS have been continuously present from initial infection but that infection becomes clinically significant only during severe immunosuppression. In this model, HIV encephalitis could be regarded as reactivation rather than de novo infection.

* Corresponding author. Mailing address: Department of Medical Microbiology, University of Edinburgh, Teviot Place, Edinburgh EH8 9AG, United Kingdom. Phone: (44) 131 650 3138. Fax: (44) 131 650 6531.

This study was undertaken to estimate the time of spread of HIV-1 to nonlymphoid tissues to determine whether reactivation or actual virus spread was responsible for the pathology observed in nonlymphoid tissues in AIDS. In order to do this, we obtained sequences from the p17^{gag} region and V1/V2 flanking regions of HIV-1. The p17^{gag} region was chosen because most nucleotide differences in this region are synonymous and therefore are not subject to positive selection pressures for sequence change, such as those that may be encountered by immunological recognition by antibody or cytotoxic T cells (36). Variations at silent sites occur at frequencies similar to those in the rest of the genome, and it has already been demonstrated in previous epidemiological studies that sequence relationships in this region reflect the evolutionary history of the virus (15, 17, 20). The rate of sequence change of this region (p17^{gag}) has previously been determined from hemophiliacs infected from a common source (20), allowing the time of divergence between any pairs of sequences to be determined. This region is therefore of use in reconstructing epidemiological relationships between HIV-1-infected individuals (17) and can be extended to the comparison of variants within different cell types within a single infected individual.

Tissues from various lymphoid and nonlymphoid organs were obtained at autopsy from a number of HIV-1-positive patients known to have a high viral load in the brain and evidence of giant cell encephalitis by pathology. Phylogenetic analyses of both p17^{gag} and V1/V2 flanking regions were carried out in order to explore the relationships among the various lineages present and the spread of infection to nonlymphoid tissues. It was possible to estimate the time of divergence

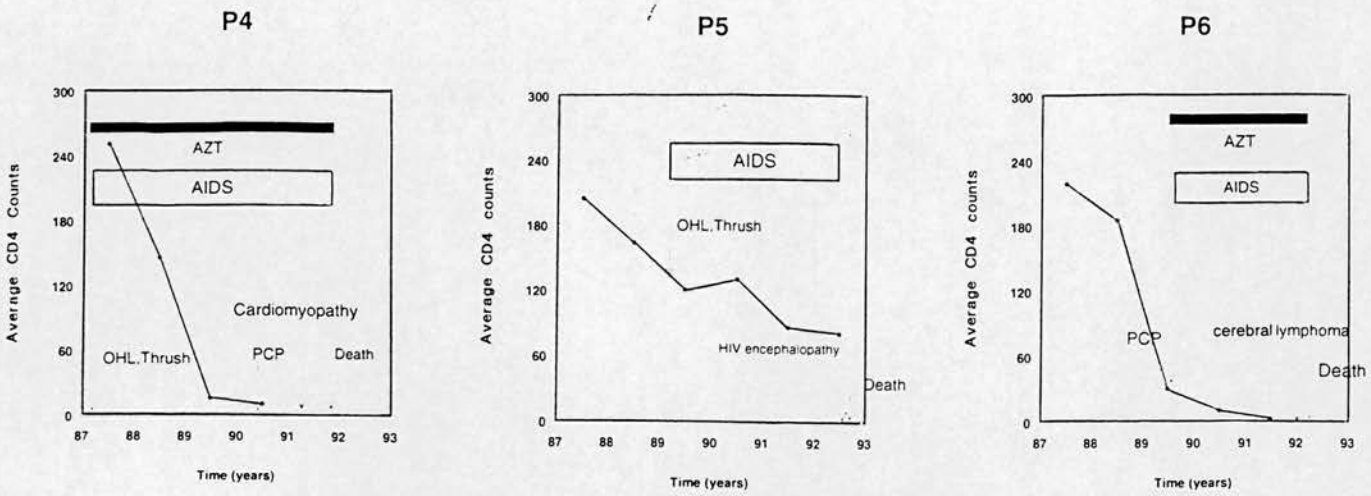


FIG. 1. Clinical and laboratory markers of disease progression in the three study patients in the 5 years before death. The duration of infection in each individual was estimated to be 9 or 10 years. Each CD4 count shown is the mean count for the indicated year. Abbreviations: AZT, zidovudine; PCP, *Pneumocystis carinii* pneumonia; OHL, oral hairy leukoplakia.

between lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues, allowing us to determine the length of time prior to death at which nonlymphoid tissues become infected.

MATERIALS AND METHODS

Patient samples. Tissues from various organs were obtained at autopsy, carried out within 3 days of death, from three individuals who died with AIDS-defining illnesses. All individuals showed evidence of HIV infection of the brain upon postmortem examination, as determined by the histological appearance of giant cells, the detection of p24 by immunocytochemistry, and the finding of high proviral loads in the brain by quantitative PCR (9). Pathological examination of the fixed brains revealed evidence of atrophy on external examination, and this was confirmed on section by the presence of ventricular dilatation and opening up of the sulci in all three patients. In one case (P6), a focal 1-cm-diameter lesion was identified on macroscopic inspection in the right basal ganglia. Histological examination of this lesion showed that it was a primary central nervous system lymphoma. Neither of the other two patients showed macroscopic focal lesions of the brain. Histological examination in all three patients displayed evidence of quite florid HIV encephalitis and leukoencephalopathy, characterized by giant cells and focal collections of macrophages and microglial cells, associated with myelin damage. There was no evidence of perivascular or leptomeningeal inflammatory infiltrates, and, in particular, lymphocytes were not identified within the central nervous system parenchyma. Further results of the pathological examinations of these three individuals and quantitation of HIV DNA sequences in brain and other tissues have been reported previously (8, 9). Clinical information in addition to the previous description (9) for the 4 or 5 years prior to death is summarized in Fig. 1. Samples of brain (left frontal lobe), spinal cord, lymph node (mesenteric), lung, and colon tissues from these patients were dissected into 1- to 2-cm pieces and stored at −70°C.

Preparation of DNA. Extraction of DNA from these tissues was carried out by resuspending small pieces of tissue in 500 μl of lysis buffer (50 mM Tris hydrochloride [pH 8.0], 100 mM NaCl, 50 mM EDTA, 1% sodium-*n*-lauroylsarcosine, 100 μg of proteinase K per ml). The digestion process was allowed to continue for 2 h at 65°C. This was followed by phenol-chloroform extraction and ethanol precipitation. DNA pellets were dried and resuspended in 100 to 200 μl of distilled water. The concentration of DNA in each sample was determined by UV absorbance at wavelengths of 260 and 280 nm.

Detection of provirus. Proviral DNA was amplified and quantified by a previously described limiting dilution and nested PCR method (43). Amplification of DNA was carried out with primers flanking hypervariable regions 1 and 2 from *env* and p17 from *gag*. The nucleotide sequences of the primers were as follows: for V1/V2, a, GAG GAT ATA ATC AGT TTA TGG, + (sense), 6539; b, GA TCA AAG CCT AAA GCC ATG, +, 6560; c, TTG AAA GAG CAG TTT, − (antisense), 6677; d, T(G/A)A AAA ACT GCT CTT TCA A, +, 6684; e, CAA TAA TGT ATG GGA ATT GG, −, 6857; and f, AAT GTA CTG TGC TGA CAT T, −, 6944; for *gag*, g, GCG AGA GCG TCA GTA TTA AGC GG, +, 795; h. GGG AAA TTC GGT TAA GGC C, +, 835; i, CTT CTA TTT TTA CCC ATG C, −, 1248; and j, TCT GAT AAT GCT GAA AAC ATG GG, −, 1296 (all positions numbered according to the HXB2 genome [33]). Amplification of target DNA was accomplished by using a thermal cycle of 36 s at 94°C, 42 s at 50°C for *gag* or 46°C for V1/V2, and 40 s at 72°C for strand extension. Each template strand was subjected to 25 cycles of amplification.

Sequence analysis. Single molecules of HIV provirus were isolated by limiting dilution and amplified in a nested PCR to produce sufficient DNA to allow direct sequencing of the PCR products. Direct sequencing of amplified DNA was achieved by using a solid-phase sequencing method. The second PCR was performed in a 100-μl volume with one biotin-labelled primer and one unlabelled primer (5 to 10 pmol per reaction mixture), generating a PCR product with one strand having a biotin moiety at either the 5′ or 3′ end. PCR products were immobilized on streptavidin-coated magnetic beads (Dynal), and single strands of DNA were purified by magnetic separation and sequenced according to the manufacturer's (Sequenase version 2.0) protocol. After this sequencing reaction, 5 to 6 μl of the reaction product was then electrophoresed on a denaturing polyacrylamide gel (6% acrylamide, 0.3% *N′,N*-bisacrylamide, 8 M urea, 0.089 M Tris, 0.089 M boric acid, 0.002 M EDTA, pH 8.3). Gels were fixed, dried, and exposed overnight on X-Omat film.

Phylogenetic analysis. Sequence comparisons between viruses from the three study patients were made for the $p17^{gag}$ gene and hypervariable flanking regions of V1 and V2 of the *env* gene of HIV-1. The amplified $p17^{gag}$ region began at nucleotide 795 of HXB2 and extended to position 1319. The amplified V1/V2 region began at position 6539 of HXB2 and extended to position 6976. The length of the *gag* region used for sequence comparisons was 413 nucleotides, and that of the V1/V2 region was 297 nucleotides. An unrooted phylogenetic tree for all 85 $p17^{gag}$ nucleotide sequences and 99 V1/V2 nucleotide sequences obtained from lymph node, brain, and lung samples was constructed by the neighbor-joining method using the NEIGHBOR program in the PHYLIP package (version 3.5) (12). Distances between each pair of sequences were estimated by using the DNADIST program in the PHYLIP package (version 3.5) (12). Rooted trees were constructed for each patient by bootstrap resampling (500 replications) using the MEGA package with the sequence of HIV_{MN} as an outgroup (25). Phylogenetic analysis of the *env* region was confined to regions flanking the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions because of the indeterminate and often arbitrary alignment of the hypervariable sequences.

Nucleotide sequence accession numbers. The sequences obtained in this study have been submitted to GenBank and assigned accession numbers U79785 to U79869 (*gag*) and U79870 to U79957 (U1/U2).

RESULTS

Rate of sequence change in $p17^{gag}$ regions. An unrooted neighbor-joining tree was constructed by using 85 sequences from the $p17^{gag}$ region (positions 835 to 1270 in the HXB2 clone [33]) from a range of lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues of three HIV-infected individuals dying from AIDS. The sequences from each of the three study patients were distinct, grouping separately into three clades. Bootstrap resampling supported the distinction of three separate groups (Fig. 2).

All three study subjects were infected with HIV through drug abuse in 1982 or 1983. Previous phylogenetic studies have implicated a common source of infection for the majority of drug users in Edinburgh, United Kingdom, including the three described here (15). The current sequence differences between

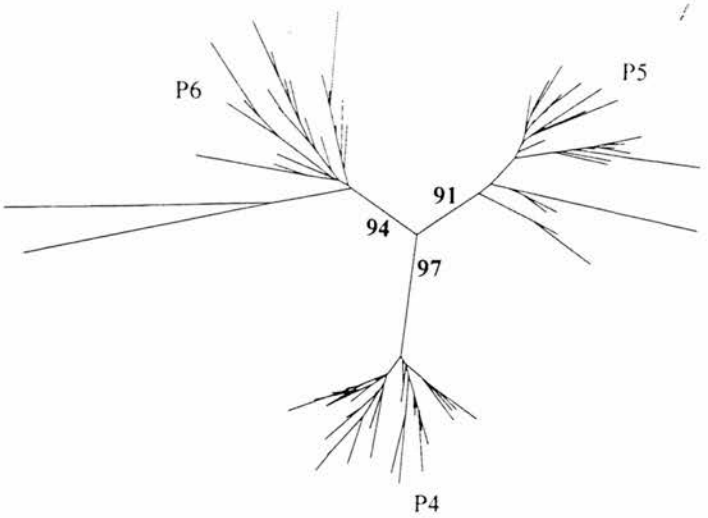


FIG. 2. Neighbor-joining tree of sequences from the p17^{gag} region of the three study subjects. Bootstrap values indicate the percentages of trees showing the observed patient-specific groupings.

the study subjects therefore must have originated from a process of divergent sequence change over a period of between 9 and 10 years. By using a mean figure of 9.5 years (or 19 years of divergent sequence change), the mean synonymous pairwise distances in the *gag* region between individual (0.149) indicated a rate of sequence change of 0.0077 per site per year. The rate of sequence change between pairs of individuals was similar, ranging from 0.006 to 0.009 (Table 1; Fig. 3A through C). This estimate was similar to those obtained in previous studies. For example, sequence comparisons in the p17^{gag} region of plasma RNA sequences from hemophiliacs infected from a common source indicated a mean rate of synonymous substitution in p17^{gag} of 0.006 to 0.0072 substitutions/site/year (21).

The mean rate of nonsynonymous substitution between the study subjects was 0.0058, lower than the silent rate. The mean d_N/d_S ratio of 0.41 indicated a bias toward silent substitutions in this region of the *gag* gene, consistent with previous estimates (13, 20, 26, 34).

In this study, we also determined the sequences of the V1 and V2 hypervariable regions and flanking regions in the *env* region from the three study patients (positions 6560 to 6876). Between individuals, the mean pairwise synonymous distance between sequences from the flanking regions (but omitting the hypervariable regions between positions 6623 to 6679 [V1] and 6701 to 6796 [V2]) was 0.104, lower than for the p17^{gag} region. In contrast, the rate of nonsynonymous substitution in the V1/V2 flanking region was higher (0.083), producing an overall d_N/d_S ratio of 0.80, similar to previous estimates for the *env* region (26, 48).

TABLE 1. Sequence comparisons between study subjects in the p17^{gag} region

Patient pair	Divergence (yr)[a]	No. of pairwise comparisons	Mean rate of substitution		d_N/d_S ratio	Silent substitution rate[b]
			Silent sites	Nonsilent sites		
P4 and P5	19	960	0.152	0.053	0.35	0.008
P4 and P6	18	736	0.112	0.052	0.47	0.006
P5 and P6	19	689	0.184	0.070	0.38	0.009
All	18.7	795	0.149	0.058	0.39	0.0077

[a] Based upon infection from a common source in 1982 (see Results).
[b] Silent substitution rate of sequence change (in substitutions per site per year) between study subjects.

In this study, we used the measured rate of sequence change in the p17^{gag} region at silent sites to estimate the time of divergence between variants infecting different tissues within an infected individual. These data should indicate when the spread of HIV into nonlymphoid tissues occurred (9).

Phylogenetic analysis of variants from different tissues. Phylogenetic analyses using sequences from the p17^{gag} region and V1 and V2 flanking regions from a range of lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues were carried out to determine the relatedness of variants between each tissue (e.g., lymph node, brain, and lung) (Fig. 4). Bootstrap resampling using 500 replicate trees was carried out to estimate the robustness of observed groupings.

In none of the patients was there consistent phylogenetic grouping by tissue origin. For example, p17^{gag} sequences from lymph node samples of patient P4 were found in two distinct lineages, both of which contained a variety of sequences from other tissues (lung and spleen) (Fig. 4A). Similarly, sequences from brain samples were interspersed with those from colon, lung, and spinal cord samples. In the V1/V2 flanking regions, there was an even more marked splitting of sequences into different lineages separated by high bootstrap values (Fig. 4D). For example, sequences from the brain were found in lineages a, b, and d, of which the latter two include sequences from lymphoid tissues (lymph nodes and spleen).

Similar mixing of sequences from lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues was observed among sequences from the other two study subjects (Fig. 4B, C, E, and F). For example, p17^{gag} sequences from both brain and lymphoid tissue samples of patient P5 were found on lineages a and b, separated from each other by high bootstrap values (Fig. 4B). In patient P6, sequences were obtained only from brain and lymph node samples but each of the lineages contained sequences from both sources (Fig. 4C and F).

Times of divergence of HIV variants in different tissues. Pairwise synonymous distances between sequences from the p17^{gag} region from each patient were calculated to estimate the time of divergence of variants within each tissue. The previously established rate of sequence change in the p17^{gag} region of 0.0066 substitutions per site per year was used (20), although similar results would have been obtained if we had used the synonymous substitution rate observed in this study (mean of three study individuals, 0.0077).

Mean synonymous pairwise sequence distances within study subjects were calculated by comparing sequences from all tissues with each other, as well as comparisons restricted to variants found in particular tissues, such as brain, lymph node, and lung tissues (Table 2; Fig. 3D through F). Comparisons of variants found in all tissues produced a range of pairwise distances from 0.035 to 0.086, approximately a third of the mean interpatient silent distance. These distances implied times of divergence of 2.6 to 6.5 years (Table 2).

For all three patients, the mean distance between sequences from brain tissue was greater than the mean distance between variants in lymphoid tissue (Table 2; Fig. 5), reflecting their wide distribution in multiple lineages by phylogenetic analysis (Fig. 4). For example, the mean synonymous pairwise distances calculated for brain tissues ranged from 0.054 to 0.086 years while those for lymphoid tissues ranged from 0.035 to 0.074 years ($P < 0.001$). These distances translate into approximate mean divergence times of 4.1 to 6.5 years and 2.65 to 5.6 years for brain and lymphoid variants, respectively. Overall, sequences between variants found in the brain were no more similar to each other (0.080 for the three study patients [Table

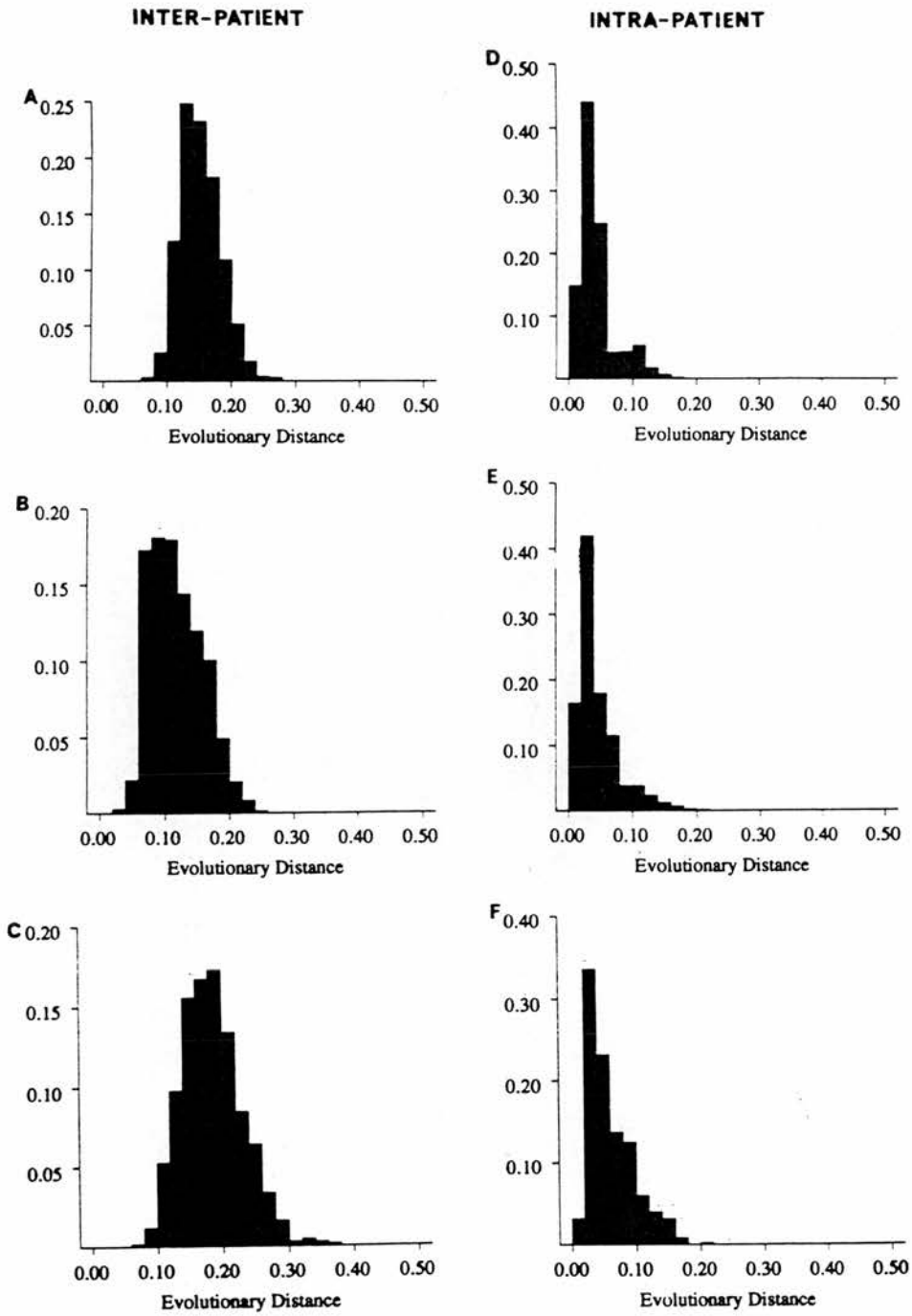


FIG. 3. Frequency histograms of silent pairwise distances in the p17^{gag} region between study subjects P4 and P5 (A), P4 and P6 (B), and P5 and P6 (C) and within study subjects between sequences obtained from different tissues of P4 (D), P5 (E), and P6 (F). The median values for distributions are shown in Tables 1 and 2.

2]) than they were to those present in lymphoid tissue (mean silent pairwise distance between brain and lymph node sequences, 0.070).

Mean nonsynonymous pairwise distances were also calculated and were found to be lower than the distances at silent sites only. Nonsynonymous distances calculated for brain tissue ranged only from 0.010 to 0.042 years and were higher than those observed between variants in lymphoid tissue of the three study individuals (0.012 to 0.020; $P < 0.001$). Subsequently, these values produced d_N/d_S ratios of between 0.158 and 0.49 for brain tissue only and between 0.16 and 0.46 for lymphoid tissue only, similar to those observed previously for interpatient comparisons. These ratios indicate that most of the substitutions which occurred within an individual in the p17^{gag} region were silent.

DISCUSSION

Rate of sequence change of HIV in vivo. In this study, we used published rates as well as estimates based upon the sequences recovered from the study patients to estimate the times of divergence of variants infecting different tissues in vivo. Measurement of the rate of sequence change was possible for the study patients because it was known that all three patients were originally infected with HIV from a common source in an outbreak around 1982 or 1983, so each was in-

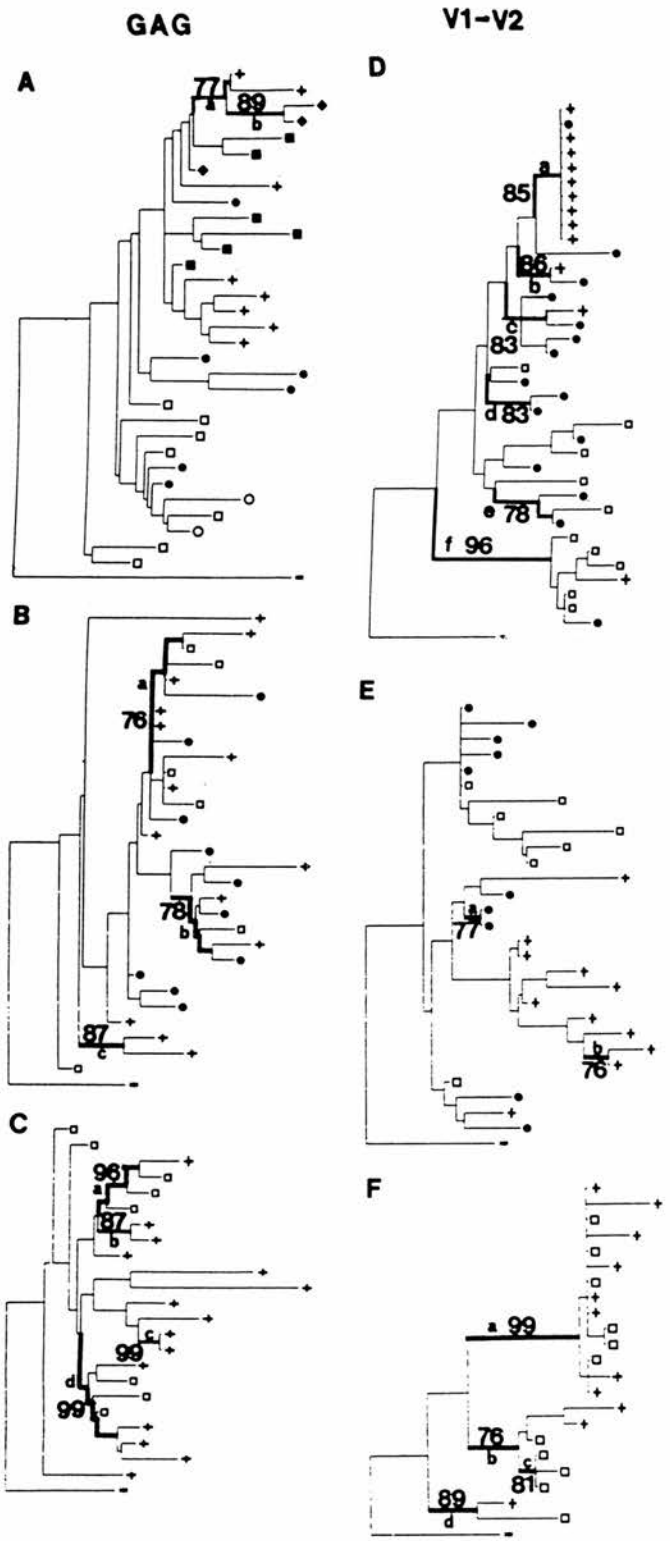


FIG. 4. Phylogenetic analysis of sequences obtained from different tissues of the three study subjects (P4 [A and D], P5 [B and E], and P6 [C and F]) in different subgenomic regions ($p17^{gag}$ region [A through C] and V1/V2 flanking regions [D through F]). Trees are shown in rooted form, with the unrelated subtype B sequence of HIV_{MN} as an outgroup. Bootstrap values of >75% for branches are in bold. Symbols: +, brain; ◆, spinal cord; ●, lung; ■, colon; □, lymph node; ○, spleen.

fected for approximately 9 or 10 years prior to death. Therefore, between any two individuals, there were approximately 19 years of divergent sequence change. Synonymous rates of substitution were calculated for each patient in $p17^{gag}$ (Table 1) and ranged from 0.006 to 0.009 substitutions per site per year (mean, 0.0077), while the rate for the V1/V2 flanking regions was slightly lower (mean, 0.0056 substitutions per site per year).

One assumption that must be made when calculating times of divergence from sequence distances is that the rate of sequence change remains constant throughout the course of infection, and there is little direct evidence of whether this is justified. Although higher levels of virus replication clearly occur later in the course of disease, this does not necessarily imply that the rate of sequence change should be higher. The rate of sequence change is proportional to the number of replication cycles, whose length is determined by the replicative processes within the cell, unless a substantial proportion of the sampled population originates from virus that has reactivated from latently infected cells, where viral replication may not have occurred for several years.

Empirically, however, the rate of sequence change at silent sites in $p17^{gag}$ over the first 2 years of infection in hemophiliacs (0.0066 per site per year [20]) was similar to that observed in the study patients (0.0077), in which the period of infection was 9 or 10 years, covering primary infection to death from AIDS. These figures are in turn within the range of rates of change estimated for viral isolates from several other studies (13, 26, 48).

Although the rate of nonsilent sequence change in the *gag* region was lower than the synonymous rate, times of divergence based on nonsilent sites were similar to times of divergence of variants in different tissues (mean time of divergence of variants within each subject, 3.1 years, compared with 3.7 years by using the published rate of silent sequence change in $p17^{gag}$ [20]). This is in spite of the theoretical possibility that the rate would be affected by phenotypic selection of variants with changes in the $p17^{gag}$ region.

By using the mean synonymous rate of substitution for $p17^{gag}$ of 0.0066 substitutions per site per year (20), the average time of divergence between brain and lymph node variants within an individual patient were calculated (Table 2) and a range of 3.5 to 6.5 years was obtained. In lymphoid tissue, the mean diversity of *gag* sequences implied an approximate population age of 2.65 to 5.6 years, while those infecting the brain were significantly more variable, suggesting an even earlier time of diversification (4.1 to 6.2 years). Despite the large potential inaccuracies in calculating times of divergence based upon sequence distances, it is clear that compared with the total duration of infection within these patients (9 or 10 years), the observed diversity within brain tissue suggests infection relatively early in the course of HIV infection and clearly preceding the onset of AIDS in two of the three study individuals (Fig. 1).

Organ-specific differences of HIV in the V3 region. Populations of HIV variants infecting different tissues in vivo are generally distinct in the V3 hypervariable region of *env* (1, 23, 37) including the three study patients in the current study (8). For example, for P5, none of the V3 sequences of either the major population (15 of 17) or minor population (2 of 17) found in the brain were found among those from lung, peripheral blood mononuclear cell, and lymph node samples; these tissues were dominated by a variant with a substitution at position 28 (35 of 42). Similarly, for P6, variants in the brain were uniform and differed from lymph node variants in all but one case by 1 to 3 amino acids. The diversity of sequences in the V3 region of P4 made comparison more difficult, but again the main variants in the brain (14 of 17) were not found in peripheral blood mononuclear cell or spleen samples (n = 16)

TABLE 2. Sequence comparisons of variants from different tissues in the p17^{gag} region

Patient(s)	Tissue type(s)	No. of sequences	Silent sites			Nonsilent sites		d_N/d_S ratio
			Mean distance	Mean divergence (yr)	P^a	Mean distance	P^a	
All	All	75	0.049	3.72		0.019		0.390
	Brain	35	0.080	6.06	0.031	0.390		
	Lymph node	21	0.055	4.20	<0.001	0.081	<0.001	0.270
	Lung	15	0.049	3.72	<0.001	0.013	<0.001	0.270
P4	All	20	0.042	3.18		0.018		0.430
	Brain	7	0.054	4.10		0.010		0.185
	Lymph node	7	0.035	2.65	0.004	0.016	0.002	0.460
	Lung	6	0.070	5.30	0.058	0.013	0.184	0.190
P5	All	30	0.045	3.40		0.020		0.440
	Brain	13	0.082	6.20		0.023		0.280
	Lymph Node	6	0.048	3.60	0.069	0.020	0.533	0.420
	Lung	11	0.043	3.25	<0.001	0.015	<0.001	0.350
P6	All	23	0.061	4.60		0.020		0.330
	Brain	15	0.086	6.50		0.042		0.490
	Lymph node	8	0.074	5.60	0.113	0.012	<0.001	0.160

[a] Significance of difference between pairwise distances among brain variants compared with those in other tissues by nonparametric Kruskall-Wallis test.

or, with a single exception, in lymph node samples (15 sequences).

On the basis of this apparent tissue-specific distribution of variants in V3, it has been suggested that these population differences have adaptive significance and reflect different tropisms for the different infected cell types in different tissues. The involvement of V3 would be consistent with the previous observation of its role in determining the ability of HIV to replicate in different cell types in vitro (29). Within macrophagetropic isolates, an acidic amino acid or alanine was predominantly seen at position 25, while a basic or uncharged amino acid at this position was associated with nonconservative basic amino acid substitutions at positions 11, 24, and 32, correlating with T-cell tropism, consistent with the findings of other studies (5, 18, 19, 31, 41, 42, 47). Extending this work, Power et al. (37) compared cloned sequences from the brains and spleens of demented and nondemented patients and found evidence for specific amino acid substitutions at two positions in the V3 loop (histidine at position 305 and proline at position 329) that correlated with neurotropism and the clinical expression of HIV dementia. However, while other studies have also found populations infecting the brain separate from those infecting lymphoid tissues, there appear to be no conserved features of the V3 loop that correlate with neurotropism (7, 10, 21, 23, 27, 39).

Furthermore, there is no evidence for a correlation between tissue distribution with the predicted phenotype of such V3 sequences in vitro. For example, in our previous study of the three study patients and others (8), we found that each tissue was predominantly infected with variants with a predicted non-syncytium-inducing (NSI)- or macrophagetropic phenotype, regardless of tissue origin. In these cases, the observed amino acid differences between brain and lymphoid tissues were relatively few and probably unlikely on their own to alter the phenotype of the virus (8) (see below).

Other studies support the conclusion that the V3 region is to some extent involved in tissue tropism but that interaction with other regions in the HIV-1 genome is required for infectivity (3, 4, 22, 44). Stamatos and Cheng-Mayer (44) have suggested that mutations altering the structure of the V3 loop can affect the conformation of gp120 and that in turn the structure of the V3 loop is influenced by the conformation of other regions in gp120. Carrillo and Ratner (3) have suggested that an interaction of the V3 loop with a small region of the C4 domain is required for infectivity of Jurkat T-cell lines, and previous studies have suggested a similar association (30, 32, 49). Therefore, although it is universally accepted that restricted variability exists in the V3 loop of HIV-1 gp120, there is no universal interpretation of this observation.

Multiple evolutionary lineages in p17^{gag} and V1/V2 regions. Given the previously observed organ-specific populations in the V3 region, we were surprised to find a different relationship between variants when sequences elsewhere in the genome were compared. In both p17^{gag} and V1/V2 flanking regions, we observed numerous independent lineages containing sequences from nonlymphoid tissues such as the brain and lung mixed with those from lymphoid organs. Some of these groupings were confirmed by bootstrap resampling analysis (Fig. 4). Comparison of the actual V1 and V2 sequences showed a pattern of sequence variability between tissues similar to that of the flanking regions and without evidence of tissue-specific groupings; these data are the subject of a further study (17a).

There are at least three possible explanations for differences in grouping in different regions of the genomes; these include (i) different rates of sequence change in different tissues, (ii) convergence, and (iii) recombination and are reviewed below.

The first hypothesis, originally proposed by Korber et al. (23), is based upon the principle that infection of nonlymphoid tissue such as the brain occurs early in the course of infection at a time when the viral population is relatively homogeneous in the V3 region. Therefore, variants infecting the brain would be initially similar to variants infecting nonlymphoid tissues. Subsequently, as disease progresses, variants found in lymphoid tissues may undergo more rapid sequence change in V3 and elsewhere in the genome associated with population replacements arising from immune escape or antiviral treatment. For example, variants resistant to neutralization or to antivirals such as zidovudine would outgrow other variants present

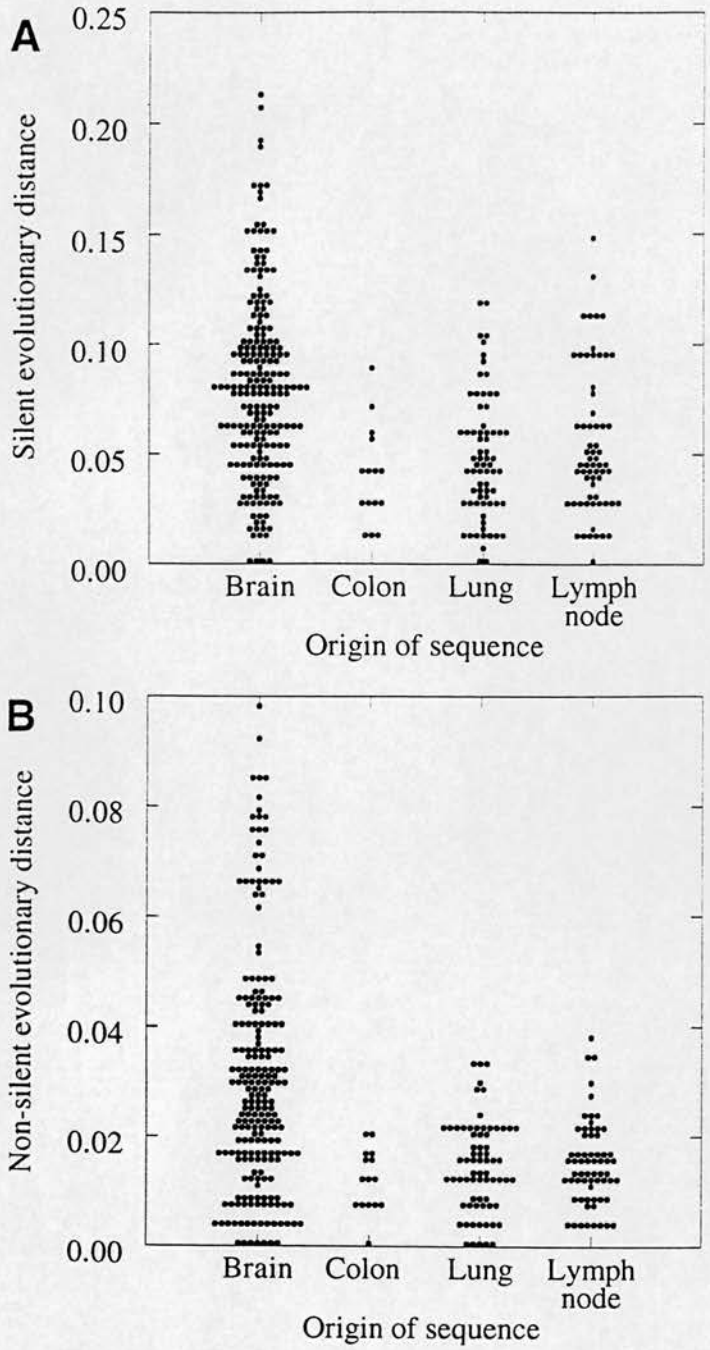


FIG. 5. Distribution of pairwise distances in different tissues from the three study patients at silent (A) and nonsilent (B) sites in the $p17^{gag}$ region.

within the lymphoid tissue. Rapid turnover and population replacements may be facilitated by the continuous movement of lymphocytes and other susceptible cells through lymphoid tissue. The previously estimated high rate of turnover of HIV-infected lymphocytes (14, 46) after antiviral treatment is consistent with the existence of a relatively dynamic lymphoid-cell population, whereas at least for antiviral resistance, the brain population is not (44a).

Alternatively, variants infecting lymphoid cells may be subject to more rapid changes over time associated with changes in the V3 region that determine the shift in the phenotype of HIV upon disease progression. Variants in the brain, however, may be unable to undergo such radical changes in the V3 region due to the continued strict requirements for replication in cells of the brain that are largely monocyte-derived cells, i.e., infiltrating macrophages and microglial cells (38, 45). The survival of the original infecting population in the brain and its replacement in lymphoid cells would explain the former's greater diversity in all parts of the genome other than those that determine tropism and the observed organ-specific differences in V3 populations. This hypothesis implies early entry of HIV into the brain, and although the V3 region is involved in tropism, it is not in the simple way it has been previously imagined.

It is possible to account for the organ-specific populations in V3 by other processes that do not necessarily imply early entry into the brain. For example, the organ-specific similarities in V3 sequences among variants that are not closely related in evolutionary terms could have originated from a process of strong convergent evolution, whereby the V3 sequence determines the ability of variants to grow in different cell types. Independent evidence for the existence of positive selection leading to convergence in V3 has been obtained from a study of hemophiliacs infected from a common source, who showed similarities in the pattern of sequence change in the V3 region in different individuals (20). Similarly, a longitudinal study of a single infected individual showed several independent occurrences of certain amino acid changes in the V3 loop in variants forming two evolutionarily distinct lineages (16).

It is unlikely that the V3 loop could be the sole determinant of tropism, as the differences between populations infecting brain and lymphoid tissues are often trivial and would be unlikely on their own to affect the phenotype of the virus. For example, all variants in the brain of P5 differed from those of lymphoid tissue at only one position (position 28), where a glutamate replaced an aspartate, a conservative amino acid change. Evidence for the functional equivalence of these two residues at this position can be inferred from their approximately equal distribution in isolates of the NSI phenotype and among variants infecting a range of tissues collected at autopsy from these and other individuals (7, 10, 21, 23, 27, 37, 39). Furthermore, if convergence were the explanation for the organ-specific grouping of V3 sequences, we might expect to observe general similarities between variants infecting specific tissues from unrelated HIV-infected individuals. However, apart from one study (37), it has generally proved impossible to demonstrate any specific conserved sequence or motif in V3 or elsewhere in *env* that correlates with the type of cell infected (see above). On the other hand, as noted above, it is possible that the actual V3 sequence required for replication in different cell types may depend upon interactions between V3 and other regions of *env* so that different V3 sequences may evolve to carry out equivalent functions in different HIV strains.

The other mechanism for different relationships in different parts of the genome is recombination, where a requirement for specific V3 sequences that confers an ability to infect different tissues may favor recombination with an already divergent preexisting population either within or without the tissue where the variants are found. Recombination occurs frequently in retroviruses, including HIV-1, and is a mechanism by which genetic variation can be increased (6). Recombination requires that multiple infection of cells occurs, and although there is evidence that this may occur in vitro (24, 40), the scarcity of HIV-infected cells in brain and other tissues seems to suggest that it may be an unlikely event in vivo. However, it is possible that recombinants are generated elsewhere, where high levels of replication occur (e.g., in lymphoid tissue), producing variants that are uniquely able to enter and replicate within the central nervous system.

Whether the similarities in V3 originated from convergence or recombination, these hypotheses suggest that the observed

diversity of variants within brain tissue could have originated by a process of multiple entry from sources outside the central nervous system. Therefore, the actual duration of infection in the brain may be substantially shorter than can be calculated by estimating its population diversity. Indeed, the grouping of variants from brain and lymphoid tissues by phylogenetic analysis of the $p17^{gag}$ and V1/V2 flanking regions is evidence for a process of multiple entry. On the other hand, this hypothesis does not easily explain how populations in the brain should be consistently more diverse than those in lymphoid tissue or other presumed sources of infection in the brain (Fig. 5). The observed greater diversity of $p17^{gag}$ sequences in the brain is more consistent with the first hypothesis of a lower rate of population replacement in the brain compared with that in lymphoid tissue.

In summary, the main findings of this study were the observation of an unusually diverse population of HIV variants in the brain without evidence for any closer evolutionary relationship between them than to variants infecting other tissues in the body. Although late entry of recombinant viruses is a possibility, it is more likely that viral entry into the brain occurs relatively early in the course of disease, based upon observations of its higher diversity in the brain than in other tissues and the existence of multiple evolutionary lineages containing sequences from the brain. These findings suggest that the loss of immune competence is not solely required for entry into nonlymphoid tissue, and the strong association between HIV-induced neuropathology and disease progression may be consequent to reactivation rather than de novo infection of the central nervous system. The finding of variants in the brain on several different evolutionary lineages challenges the hypothesis of the evolution of a uniquely neurotropic strain. It is possible that the only requirement for infection of the brain is macrophage tropism and hence the possession of a V3 loop sequence that is of low charge and shows few differences from the subtype B consensus sequence (8).

This study represents the first attempt to use evolutionary analysis of variants infecting different tissues. The finding of different interrelationships between variants in different parts of the genome, combined with uncertainty about the frequency and site of recombination in vivo and the selection pressures that could produce convergent evolution in V3, highlights the complexity in trying to understand the dynamics of HIV replication and dissemination to different tissues. However, this research at least provides a starting point for a more rigorous examination on the existence of HIV tropism in vivo.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

We are grateful to R. P. Brettle and C. Leen, Regional Infectious Diseases Unit, City Hospital, Edinburgh, United Kingdom, for providing clinical information on the study subjects before death. We are also indebted to staff at the Department of Neuropathology, Western General Hospital, Edinburgh, United Kingdom, and in the Hepatitis Reference Laboratory, University of Edinburgh, for the storage and provision of samples analyzed in this study. Thanks are also due to Eddie Holmes for helpful review and discussion of the manuscript.

This work was funded by a Medical Research Council studentship to E.S.H. and Medical Research Council Programme grants to P.S. (PG 9209918) and J.E.B. (SPG 8925719).

REFERENCES

1. **Ball, J. K., E. C. Holmes, H. Whitwell, and U. Desselberger.** 1994. Genomic variation of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1)—molecular analyses of HIV-1 in sequential blood samples and various organs obtained at autopsy. J. Gen. Virol. **75**:867–879.
2. **Bednarik, D. P., and T. M. Folks.** 1992. Mechanisms of HIV-1 latency. AIDS **6**:3–16.
3. **Carrillo, A., and L. Ratner.** 1996. Human immunodeficiency type 1 tropism for T-lymphoid cell lines: role of the V3 loop and C4 envelope determinants. J. Virol. **70**:1301–1309.
4. **Carrillo, A., and L. Ratner.** 1996. Cooperative effects of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope variable loops V1 and V3 in mediating infectivity for T cells. J. Virol. **70**:1310–1316.
5. **Chesebro, B., K. Wehrly, J. Nishio, and S. Perryman.** 1992. Macrophage-tropic human immunodeficiency virus isolates from different patients exhibit unusual V3 envelope sequence homogeneity in comparison with T cell-tropic isolates: definition of critical amino acids involved in cell tropism. J. Virol. **66**:6547–6554.
6. **Coffin, J. M.** 1979. Review. Structure, replication, and recombination of retrovirus genomes: some unifying hypotheses. J. Gen. Virol. **42**:1–26.
7. **Di Stefano, M., S. Wilt, F. Gray, M. Dubois Dalcq, and F. Chiodi.** 1996. HIV-1 V3 sequences and the development of dementia during AIDS. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **12**:471–476.
8. **Donaldson, Y. K., J. E. Bell, E. C. Holmes, E. S. Hughes, H. K. Brown, and P. Simmonds.** 1994. In vivo distribution and cytopathology of variants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 showing restricted sequence variability in the v3 loop. J. Virol. **68**:5991–6005.
9. **Donaldson, Y. K., J. E. Bell, J. W. Ironside, R. P. Brettle, J. R. Robertson, A. Busuttil, and P. Simmonds.** 1994. Redistribution of HIV outside the lymphoid system with onset of AIDS. Lancet **343**:382–385.
10. **Epstein, L. G., C. Kuiken, B. M. Blumberg, S. Hartman, L. R. Sharer, M. Clement, and J. Goudsmit.** 1991. HIV-1 V3 domain variation in brain and spleen of children with AIDS: tissue-specific evolution within host-determined quasispecies. Virology **180**:583–590.
11. **Fauci, A. S.** 1993. Immunopathogenesis of HIV infection. J. Acquired Immune Defic. Syndr. **6**:655–662.
12. **Felsenstein, J.** 1989. PHYLIP—phylogeny inference package (version 3.2). Cladistics **5**:164–166.
13. **Gojobori, T., E. N. Moriyama, and M. Kimura.** 1990. Molecular clock of viral evolution, and the neutral theory. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **87**:10015–10018.
14. **Ho, D. D., A. U. Neumann, A. S. Perelson, W. Chen, J. M. Leonard, and M. Markowitz.** 1995. Rapid turnover of plasma virions and CD4 lymphocytes in HIV-1 infection. Nature **373**:123–126.
15. **Holmes, E. C., L. Q. Zhang, P. Robertson, A. Cleland, E. Harvey, P. Simmonds, and A. J. L. Brown.** 1995. The molecular epidemiology of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in Edinburgh. J. Infect. Dis. **171**:45–53.
16. **Holmes, E. C., L. Q. Zhang, P. Simmonds, C. A. Ludlam, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1992. Convergent and divergent sequence evolution in the surface envelope glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 within a single infected patient. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **89**:4835–4839.
17. **Holmes, E. C., L. Q. Zhang, P. Simmonds, A. S. Rogers, and A. J. L. Brown.** 1993. Molecular investigation of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) infection in a patient of an HIV-infected surgeon. J. Infect. Dis. **167**:1411–1414.

17a. **Hughes, E. S., et al.** Unpublished data.

18. **Hwang, S. S., T. J. Boyle, H. K. Lyerly, and B. R. Cullen.** 1991. Identification of the envelope V3 loop as the primary determinant of cell tropism in HIV-1. Science **253**:71–74.
19. **Kasper, P., R. Kaiser, J. Oldenburg, H. H. Brackmann, B. Matz, and K. E. Schneweis.** 1994. Parallel evolution in the V3 region of HIV type 1 after infection of hemophiliacs from a homogeneous source. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **10**:1669–1678.
20. **Kasper, P., P. Simmonds, K. E. Schneweis, R. Kaiser, B. Matz, J. Oldenburg, H. H. Brackmann, and E. C. Holmes.** 1995. The genetic diversification of the HIV type 1 gag p17 gene in patients infected from a common source. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **11**:1197–1201.
21. **Keys, B., J. Karis, B. Fadeel, A. Valentin, G. Norkrans, L. Hagberg, and F. Chiodi.** 1993. V3 sequences of paired HIV-1 isolates from blood and cerebrospinal fluid cluster according to host and show variation related to the clinical stage of disease. Virology **196**:475–483.
22. **Koito, A., G. Harrowe, J. A. Levy, and C. Cheng-Mayer.** 1994. Functional role of the V1/V2 region of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope glycoprotein gp120 in infection of primary macrophages and soluble CD4 neutralization. J. Virol. **68**:2253–2259.
23. **Korber, B. T. M., K. J. Kunstman, B. K. Patterson, M. Furtado, M. M. McEvilly, R. Levy, and S. M. Wolinsky.** 1994. Genetic differences between blood- and brain-derived viral sequences from human immunodeficiency virus type 1-infected patients: evidence of conserved elements in the V3 region of the envelope protein of brain-derived sequences. J. Virol. **68**:7467–7481.
24. **Koyanagi, Y., S. Miles, R. T. Mitsuyasu, J. E. Merrill, H. V. Vinters, and I. S. Chen.** 1987. Dual infection of the central nervous system by AIDS viruses with distinct cellular tropisms. Science **236**:819–822.
25. **Kumar, S., K. Tamura, and M. Nei.** 1993. MEGA: molecular evolutionary genetics analysis, version 1.0. The Pennsylvania State University, University Park.
26. **Li, W. H., M. Tanimura, and P. M. Sharp.** 1988. Rates and dates of divergence between AIDS virus nucleotide sequences. Mol. Biol. Evol. **5**:313–330.
27. **Liu, Z. Q., C. Wood, J. A. Levy, and C. Cheng-Mayer.** 1990. The viral

envelope gene is involved in macrophage tropism of a human immunodeficiency virus type 1 strain isolated from brain tissue. J. Virol. **64**:6148–6153.
28. **Miedema, F., M. Tersmette, and R. A. W. Van Lier.** 1990. AIDS pathogenesis: a dynamic interaction between HIV and the immune system. Immunol. Today **11**:293–297.
29. **Millich, L., B. Margolin, and R. Swanstrom.** 1993. V3 loop of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 env protein: interpreting sequence variability. J. Virol. **67**:5623–5634.
30. **Moore, J. P., M. Thali, B. A. Jameson, F. Vignaux, G. K. Lewis, S. W. Poon, M. Charles, M. S. Fung, B. Sun, P. J. Durda, L. Akerblom, B. Wahren, D. D. Ho, Q. J. Sattentau, and J. Sodoroski.** 1993. Immunochemical analysis of the gp120 surface glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1: probing the structure of the C4 and V4 domains and the interaction of the C4 domain with the V3 loop. J. Virol. **67**:4785–4796.
31. **Morris, J. F., E. J. Sternberg, L. Gutshall, S. R. Petteway, and L. A. Ivanoff.** 1994. Effect of a single amino acid substitution in the V3 domain of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1: generation of revertant viruses to overcome defects in infectivity in specific cell types. J. Virol. **68**:8380–8385.
32. **Morrison, H. G., F. Kirchhoff, and R. C. Desrosiers.** 1993. Evidence for the cooperation of gp120 amino acids 322 and 448 in SIVmac entry. Virology **195**:167–174.
33. **Myers, G., B. Korber, J. Berzofsky, T. F. Smith, and G. N. Pavlakis.** 1991. Human retroviruses and AIDS 1993. Los Alamos National Laboratory, Los Alamos, N. Mex.
34. **Myers, G., and G. N. Pavlakis.** 1992. Evolutionary potential of complex retroviruses, p. 51–105. *In* J. A. Levy (ed.), The retroviridae, volume 1. Plenum Press, New York, N.Y.
35. **Pantaleo, G., C. Graziosi, J. F. Demarest, L. Butini, M. Montroni, C. H. Fox, J. M. Orenstein, D. P. Kotler, and A. S. Fauci.** 1993. HIV infection is active and progressive in lymphoid tissue during the clinically latent stage of disease. Nature **362**:355–358.
36. **Phillips, R. E., S. Rowland Jones, D. F. Nixon, F. M. Gotch, J. P. Edwards, A. O. Ogunlesi, J. G. Elvin, J. A. Rothbard, C. R. Bangham, and C. R. Rizza.** 1991. Human immunodeficiency virus genetic variation that can escape cytotoxic T cell recognition. Nature **354**:453–459.
37. **Power, C., J. C. Mcarthur, R. T. Johnson, D. E. Griffin, J. D. Glass, S. Perryman, and B. Chesebro.** 1994. Demented and nondemented patients with AIDS differ in brain-derived human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope sequences. J. Virol. **68**:4643–4649.
38. **Price, R. W., B. Brew, J. Sidtis, M. Rosenblum, A. C. Scheck, and P. Cleary.** 1988. The brain in AIDS: central nervous system HIV-1 and AIDS dementia complex. Science **239**:586–592.
39. **Reddy, T. R., C. L. Achim, D. A. Sirko, S. Tehranchi, F. G. Kraus, F. Wong-Staal, and C. A. Wiley.** 1996. Sequence analysis of the V3 loop in brain and spleen of patients with HIV encephalitis. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **12**:477–482.
40. **Rey, F., D. Salaun, J. L. Lesbordes, S. Gadelle, F. Ollivier-Henry, F. Barre-Sinoussi, J. Chermann, and A. J. Georges.** 1986. HIV-I and HIV-II double infection in Central African Republic. Lancet **2**:1391–1392.
41. **Shioda, T., J. A. Levy, and C. Cheng-Mayer.** 1992. Small amino acid changes in the V3 hypervariable region of gp120 can affect the T-cell line and macrophage tropism of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **89**:9434–9438.
42. **Shioda, T., S. Oka, S. Ida, K. Nokihara, H. Toriyoshi, S. Mori, Y. Takebe, S. Kimura, K. Shimada, and Y. Nagai.** 1994. A naturally occurring single basic amino acid substitution in the V3 region of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 Env protein alters the cellular host range and antigenic structure of the virus. J. Virol. **68**:7689–7696.
43. **Simmonds, P., P. Balfe, J. F. Peutherer, C. A. Ludlam, J. O. Bishop, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1990. Human immunodeficiency virus-infected individuals contain provirus in small numbers of peripheral mononuclear cells and at low copy numbers. J. Virol. **64**:864–872.
44. **Stamatatos, L., and C. Cheng-Mayer.** 1993. Evidence that the structural conformation of envelope gp120 affects human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infectivity, host range, and syncytium-forming ability. J. Virol. **67**:5635–5639.
44a. **Strappe, P. M., et al.** Unpublished data.
45. **Vazeux, R., N. Brousse, A. Jarry, D. Henin, C. Marche, C. Vedrenne, J. Mikol, M. Wolff, C. Michon, L. Rozenbaum, and M. Brahic.** 1987. AIDS subacute encephalitis: identification of HIV infected cells. Am. J. Pathol. **126**:403–410.
46. **Wei, X. P., S. K. Ghosh, M. E. Taylor, V. A. Johnson, E. A. Emini, P. Deutsch, J. D. Lifson, S. Bonhoeffer, M. A. Nowak, B. H. Hahn, M. S. Saag, and G. M. Shaw.** 1995. Viral dynamics in human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infection. Nature **373**:117–122.
47. **Westervelt, P., H. E. Gendelman, and L. Ratner.** 1991. Identification of a determinant within the human immunodeficiency virus 1 surface envelope glycoprotein critical for productive infection of primary monocytes. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **88**:3097–3101.
48. **Wolfs, T. F. W., J. J. de Jong, H. Van den Berg, J. M. Tijnagel, W. J. Krone, and J. Goudsmit.** 1990. Evolution of sequences encoding the principal neutralization epitope of human immunodeficiency virus 1 is host dependent, rapid, and continuous. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **87**:9938–9942.
49. **Wyatt, R., M. Thali, S. Tilley, A. Pinter, M. Posner, D. Ho, J. Robinson, and J. Sodroski.** 1992. Relationship of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 third variable loop to a component of the CD4 binding site in the fourth conserved region. J. Virol. **66**:6997–7004.

JOURNAL OF VIROLOGY, Sept. 1994, p. 5991–6005
0022-538X/94/$04.00+0

Vol. 68, No. 9

In Vivo Distribution and Cytopathology of Variants of Human Immunodeficiency Virus Type 1 Showing Restricted Sequence Variability in the V3 Loop

YVONNE K. DONALDSON,[1] JEANNE E. BELL,[2] EDDIE C. HOLMES,[3] ELIZABETH S. HUGHES,[1] HELEN K. BROWN,[4] AND PETER SIMMONDS[1]*

Department of Medical Microbiology[1] and Medical Statistics Unit,[4] University of Edinburgh, Medical School, Edinburgh EH8 9AG, Department of Pathology, University of Edinburgh, Western General Hospital, Edinburgh EH4 2XU,[2] and Department of Zoology, University of Oxford, Oxford OX1 3PS,[3] United Kingdom

Received 18 March 1994/Accepted 16 June 1994

The distribution, cell tropism, and cytopathology in vivo of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) was investigated in postmortem tissue samples from a series of HIV-infected individuals who died either of complications associated with AIDS or for unrelated reasons while they were asymptomatic. Proviral sequences were detected at a high copy number in lymphoid tissue of both presymptomatic patients and patients with AIDS, whereas significant infection of nonlymphoid tissue such as that from brains, spinal cords, and lungs was confined to those with AIDS. V3 loop sequences from both groups showed highly restricted sequence variability and a low overall positive charge of the encoded amino acid sequence compared with those of standard laboratory isolates of HIV type 1 (HIV-1). The low charge and the restriction in sequence variability were comparable to those observed with isolates showing a non-syncytium-inducing (NSI) and macrophage-tropic phenotype in vitro. All patients were either exclusively infected (six of seven cases) or predominantly infected (one case) with variants with a predicted NSI/macrophage-tropic phenotype, irrespective of the degree of disease progression. p24 antigen was detected by immunocytochemical staining of paraffin-fixed sections in the germinal centers within lymphoid tissue, although little or no antigen was found in areas of lymph node or spleen containing T lymphocytes from either presymptomatic patients or patients with AIDS. The predominant p24 antigen-expressing cells in the lungs and brains of the patients with AIDS were macrophages and microglia (in brains), frequently forming multinucleated giant cells (syncytia) even though the V3 loop sequences of these variants resembled those of NSI isolates in vitro. These studies indicate that lack of syncytium-forming ability in established T-cell lines does not necessarily predict syncytium-forming ability in primary target cells in vivo. Furthermore, variants of HIV with V3 sequences characteristic of NSI/macrophage-tropic isolates form the predominant population in a range of lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues in vivo, even in patients with AIDS.

There are several interpretations of the high degree of observed sequence diversity between published sequences of the envelope gene of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) (subtype B) (54) and of the rapid turnover of HIV envelope variants within infected individuals (69, 79). It has been suggested that changes in the hypervariable domains in the *env* gene (V1 to V5) (52, 70, 78) may facilitate evasion of the host immune system. This conclusion is supported by the observation that V3 and possibly other regions are targets of neutralizing antibodies elicited by natural infection or upon immunization with recombinant gp120 protein (20, 26, 32, 44, 49, 60).

However, changes in the V3 loop, and more recently in the V1 and V2 hypervariable domains, have also been shown to influence the phenotype of variants of HIV-1 in in vitro culture (2, 6, 11, 19, 24, 31, 72, 73). In particular, substitutions of basic amino acids in the V2 and V3 regions change virus isolates from non-syncytium-inducing (NSI) isolates to syncytium-inducing (SI) isolates (11, 19, 24) and may confer a reduction in the ability of the virus to replicate in macrophages (10, 64). Apart from the association with arginine or lysine at positions 11 and 28 in V3, the SI phenotype has been also been shown to correlate with increased V3 sequence heterogeneity in this region (10, 51). V3 sequences from NSI isolates show few sequence differences from each other or from a consensus sequence of 133 North American isolates (40) that comprise predominantly subtype B variants of HIV-1 (46). In contrast, SI isolates show a broad range of substitutions, insertions, and deletions at most positions (30 of a total of 33 to 37) between the disulfide-bridged cysteine residues of the putative V3 loop structure.

In early infection, HIV variants with an NSI/macrophage-tropic (MT) phenotype predominate. Subsequently, approximately half of those individuals who progress to AIDS show a change in virus to a more rapidly replicating (rapid/high) and cytopathic phenotype (3, 8, 18, 74); this switch in phenotype has been reported to precede an accelerated loss of $CD4^+$ lymphocytes in the peripheral circulation and a more rapid onset of AIDS than in those individuals whose isolates retain the NSI phenotype (35). However, although most investigators have found a close association between the properties of syncytium induction and inability to replicate in macrophages in vitro and vice versa (10, 12, 19, 23, 37, 63, 64, 87), others

* Corresponding author. Mailing address: Department of Medical Microbiology, University of Edinburgh, Medical School, Teviot Place, Edinburgh EH8 9AG, United Kingdom. Phone: (44) 31 650 3138. Fax: (44) 31 650 6531.

have found that disease progression is associated with a switch from NSI, non-MT isolates to SI/MT isolates (8).

Despite their more aggressive phenotype in vitro, the SI isolates are less transmissible by sexual contact than are NSI isolates (59, 87), but they are equally transmissible in cases of mother-to-child transmission (62). To explain these apparently contradictory findings, it has been speculated that macrophages may be the first cells infected at the mucosal barrier in the case of sexual transmission and that infection of this cell type is responsible for the systemic dissemination of the virus found upon primary infection (87). However, V3 sequences typical of NSI isolates were also found to be specifically selected for not only upon sexual contact but also in several cases of parenteral infection (hemophiliacs exposed to HIV-contaminated factor VIII concentrate) in which case the initially infected cells could equally well be $CD4^+$ lymphocytes (85).

An important limitation of many of the previous studies of sequence and phenotype change of HIV-1 is the reliance upon patient blood samples as sources of virus isolates, proviral DNA, or virion RNA as study material. However, HIV results in systemic disease and has been shown to be capable of infecting a wide variety of nonlymphoid tissue, including tissue from brain, lung, and the small and large bowel (reviewed in reference 41). It cannot be assumed that variants in blood are representative of populations infecting other cell types in the body. For example, isolates from brain and bowel tissues show in vitro properties different from those derived from peripheral blood mononuclear cells (PBMCs); the latter tend to replicate well in macrophages and to show an NSI phenotype (25, 36, 76). In some cases, sequence differences between populations of variants in brain tissue and those in circulating lymphoid cells have been observed (16, 25, 33, 42, 43, 57, 71). The extent to which sequence changes are responsible for the differences in in vivo tropism is discussed below.

Given the evidence for changes in the in vitro phenotype of virus isolated from PBMCs at different stages of disease progression, it is clearly important to investigate whether equivalent changes occur in virus populations outside the peripheral circulation. By carrying out detailed quantitative studies of postmortem tissue, we have recently found a highly restricted distribution of HIV in the body preceding the onset of AIDS, with proviral sequences apparently confined to cells of the lymphoid system (PBMCs, spleen, and lymph nodes). In contrast, those patients who died from complications associated with AIDS showed significant infection of cells in the central nervous system (CNS) and in lung and bowel tissues (13). These results confirm a previous study in which HIV infection was undetectable in the CNS of a large number of individuals who died while they were asymptomatic (5).

This apparent redistribution of virus upon disease progression occurs at the same stage of disease as the change from an NSI to an SI phenotype. Paradoxically, while isolates become cytopathic and often non-MT in vitro, the redistribution of HIV in vivo involves organs such as brains and lungs and other tissues in which the main targets of infection are reported to be tissue macrophages, microglia (in the CNS), and other nonlymphocyte cell types (22, 34, 47, 55, 77).

In this study, we have carried out detailed sequence comparisons of the V3 loop and flanking regions of virus variants in lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues from a series of individuals who died while asymptomatic or as a consequence of terminal AIDS. The inferred in vitro phenotypes were compared for individuals with differing degrees of disease progression and for different tissue types in order to explore the relationship between V3 variation and tissue tropism of HIV in vivo. In many cases it was possible to directly identify the target cells and degrees of associated cytopathology in different tissues (in vivo phenotype) by immunocytochemical staining of the tissues with an anti-p24 monoclonal antibody.

MATERIALS AND METHODS

Patient samples. Cardiac blood and tissue from various organs were obtained within 3 days of patient death from 11 autopsied HIV-infected patients of whom three (patients 1 to 3) died suddenly while they were in the asymptomatic stage of HIV infection as defined by Centers for Disease Control criteria and four patients (patients 4 through 6 and patient 9) who died with AIDS-defining illness. Additional lymph node samples were obtained from four further patients who died of complications associated with AIDS (patients 10 through 13) for further sequence comparisons of sequences in the V3 and *gag* regions. Clinical information and laboratory investigations pertaining to patients 1 to 6 have been detailed as part of an earlier study (13). Patient 9 was a 59-year-old male with a recent history of psychomotor slowing. One week prior to death he developed a fatal atypical pneumonia, at which time a diagnosis of full-blown AIDS was made. He received no antiviral treatment, and the duration of his infection is unknown.

Samples of brain (left frontal lobe), spinal cord (mid-thoracic), lung, large bowel, mesenteric lymph node, and spleen tissues from these patients were dissected into 1- to 2-cm pieces and were stored at −70°C. DNA was extracted from tissues and whole blood to obtain total DNA from all nucleated cells in the circulation (peripheral blood nucleated cells [PBNCs]) as previously described (68).

Quantitation. Proviral DNA was quantified by using a previously described limiting dilution and nested-primer PCR approach (68). The quantitation was performed in the first instance by using primers corresponding to the *pol* gene and was performed subsequently with primers spanning the V3 region. The nucleotide sequences of the primers and the position of the 5′ base in the HXB2 genome (54) were pol a CATGGGTACCAGCACACCGG, + (sense), position 4149; pol b GGAGGAAATGAACAAGTAGATA, +, 4175; pol c TCACTAGCCATTGCTCTCCAATT, − (antisense), 4290; pol d TCTACTTGTCCATGCATGGCTTC, −, 4380; V3 e TA CAATGTACACATGGAATT, +, 6957; V3 f TGGCAG TCTAGCAGAAGAAG, +, 7009; V3 g CTGGGTCCCCTC CTGAGG, −, 7331; and V3 h ATTACAGTAGAAAAATTC CCC, −, 7381.

All reactions were performed with appropriate positive and negative controls. The number of proviral copies was estimated by assuming a Poisson distribution for each sample by $-\log(1-p)/d$ (where p = proportion of positive samples and d = dilution). Likelihood ratio tests were used to determine whether there were significant differences between sample pairs. The likelihood function is proportional to $[1-\exp(\lambda d)]^m \times [\exp(-\lambda d)]^n$, where λ = number of proviral copies, m = number of positive replicates, and n = number of negative replicates. Ninety-five percent confidence intervals for each sample were determined by evaluating the likelihood function incrementally over the range of possible values for the number of proviral copies. The overall level of agreement between the *pol* and *env* primers was assessed by using the paired t test on the basis of the numbers of proviral copies on a log scale.

Sequence analysis. Single molecules of HIV-1 provirus were isolated by limiting dilution and amplified in a nested PCR to produce sufficient DNA to allow direct sequencing of the PCR products. Direct sequencing of amplified DNA was achieved

TABLE 1. Quantitation of proviral sequences in postmortem tissue by limiting dilution using nested primers in the *pol* and V3 regions: frequency of positive results at specified dilutions of DNA

Patient	Primer[a]	Frequency[b] of positive results						
		Lymphoid tissue			Nonlymphoid tissue			
		Lymph node	Spleen	PBNCs	Brain	Spinal cord	Lung	Colon
Presymptomatic								
1	E	9/20 (1E-3)[c]	4/20 (1E-3)	12/20 (1E-2)	0/20 (5E-1)	3/20 (5E-1)	0/20 (5E-1)	0/20 (5E-1)
	P	19/60 (5E-4)	ND[d]	18/25 (2E-2	ND	ND	ND	ND
2	E	14/20 (1E-3)	12/20 (1E-2)	7/20 (1E-3)	2/20 (5E-1)	15/20 (5E-1)	6/20 (1E-1)	10/20 (1E-1)
	P	ND	ND	20/50 (2E-3)	ND	ND	ND	ND
3	E	9/20 (1E-1)	7/20 (1E-2)	9/20 (1E-2)	3/20 (5E-1)	3/20 (5E-1)	3/20 (1E-1)	6/20 (5E-1)
	P	2/20 (5E-2)	ND	8/30 (1E-2)	ND	ND	ND	ND
Symptomatic								
4	E	14/20 (5E-3)	3/20 (1E-3)	5/20 (1E-2)	3/20 (1E-2)	7/20 (1E-2)	18/20 (1E-2)	17/20 (1E-2)
	P	19/30 (6E-3)	16/30 (5E-3)	21/50 (5E-2)	17/50 (2E-2)	10/25 (1E-2)	14/49 (2E-3)	18/30 (6E-3)
5	E	17/20 (1E-3)	4/20 (1E-3)	7/20 (1E-1)	4/20 (1E-3)	11/20 (1E-4)	17/20 (53-3)	7/20 (1E-1)
	P	41/50 (1E-3)	ND	23/50 (1.5E-1)	16/50 (1E-3)	ND	14/50 (8E-4)	ND
6	E	15/20 (1E-2)	19/20 (1E-2)	4/20 (5E-1)	12/20 (1E-2)	10/20 (1E-1)	11/20 (1E-1)	11/20 (1E-3)
	P	23/50 (5E-3)	ND	1/20 (5E-2)	14/50 (4E-3)	ND	ND	12/50 (8E-4)
9	E	7/50 (2E-2)	ND	ND	22/49 (2.5E-4)	ND	ND	ND
	P	ND	ND	03/ (1)[e]	ND	2/3 (1E-2)[e]	0/3 (1)[e]	0/3 (1)[e]

[a] E, *env* primer quantitation; P, *pol* primer quantitation.
[b] Expressed as number positive/total number.
[c] Test dilution (in micrograms); 1E-3 = 1×10^{-3} μg.
[d] ND, not done.
[e] $p24^{gag}$ quantitation.

either as previously described or by using a solid-phase sequencing method (30). For solid-phase sequencing, the second PCR reaction was performed in a 100-μl volume by using one biotin-labelled and one unlabelled primer (5 to 10 pmol of primer per reaction mixture), generating a PCR product with one strand having a biotin moiety at the 5′ end. PCR products were immobilized on streptavidin-coated magnetic beads (Dynal), and single strands of DNA were purified by magnetic separation and were sequenced according to the manufacturer's protocol.

A Fisher's exact test for $2 \times n$ contingency tables (48) was used to compare amino acid frequencies at each position in the V3 loop (n is the number of alternative amino acids at a single position). The test is based on exact multinomial probabilities and is appropriate here because many values in the contingency tables were small. Comparisons of V3 loop charge and diversity were made between sequences obtained in this study and those of a series of isolates of HIV-1 of known biological properties. V3 loop sequences of 30 isolates with an SI phenotype and 29 NSI/MT isolates were obtained from references 10 and 19, as were corresponding sequences from MN, RF, SF2, GUN-1, HAN-2, SF33, LAI, ADA, YU2, SF162, JF-L, and SF-128A isolates (51, 54).

Evolutionary analysis of p17 sequences. Sequence comparisons between viruses from the 11 study patients were made in the region of the *gag* gene encoding p17, as previously described (29). Phylogenetic relationships between single nucleotide sequences from each of the study patients and from representative sequences obtained both in Edinburgh, United Kingdom (29a), and from other widely separated geographical localities (54) were estimated by using the neighbor joining method with a bootstrap resampling program (PHYLIP programs SEQBOOT, DNADIST, NEIGHBOR, and CONSENSE) (17). Branch lengths on this tree were estimated by using the maximum-likelihood method (DNAML). Nucleotide distances between sequences were estimated by using the substitution model of Felsenstein (program DNADIST).

Immunocytochemical staining. Five-micrometer sections of formalin-fixed paraffin-embedded tissue from the study organs were stained with hematoxylin and eosin by standard methods. p24 antigen was detected by an avidin/biotin immunocytochemical technique (5) with a monoclonal antibody to p24 (Dupont) as first antibody at a dilution of 1/200 and diaminobenzidine as the visualizing agent. Prior to antibody incubations, the sections were irradiated in an 800-W microwave oven for three cycles of 5 min each while they were immersed in 0.01 M citrate buffer (pH 6.0) (Fisons).

Nucleotide sequence accession numbers. Sequences obtained in this study have been deposited into GenBank and have accession numbers L34422 to L34541.

RESULTS

Quantitation of proviral load in different organs. The numbers of copies of provirus per million cells in a range of lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissues from the study patients were determined by limiting-dilution PCR with primers from both *pol* and *env* regions of the genome (Table 1; results obtained with the *pol* primers for patients 1 to 6 have been previously reported) (13). We found high levels of HIV in lymphoid organs (spleen and lymph node) from all presymptomatic and symptomatic individuals with both sets of primers, whereas nonlymphoid organs were infected only in patients who died of complications associated with AIDS. Although low levels of provirus were found in many of the nonlymphoid tissues of the presymptomatic patients (up to 46 copies per 10^6 cells; Table 2), such virus may have originated from PBNCs in residual blood within the organs (forming between 1 and 10% of the extracted DNA from the tissue, depending on its vascularity), as previously discussed (13). For example, the sample of colon tissue from patient 2 contained 46 copies of provirus per 10^6 cells, 60 times lower than the frequency of infected cells in peripheral blood (2,843 copies per 10^6 PBNCs) and attributable to the presence of peripheral blood in the

TABLE 2. Quantitation of proviral sequences in postmortem tissue by limiting dilution using nested primers in the *pol* and V3 regions: calculated proviral copies per 10^6 cells

Patient	Primer[a]	No. of copies (confidence interval[b])						
		Lymphoid tissue			Nonlymphoid tissue			
		Lymph node	Spleen	PBNCs	Brain	Spinal cord	Lung	Colon
Presymptomatic								
1	E	3946 (2092–7616)	1472 (601–3788)	337 (172–673)	0[c] (0–2.44)	2.18[c] (0.79–6.27)	0[c] (0–2.44)	0[c] (0–2.44)
	P	5026 (3227–7880)	ND[d]	420 (264–700)	ND	ND	ND	ND
2	E	7946 (4693–14051)	605 (343–1089)	2843 (1399–5920)	1.39[c] (0.46–5.02)	18[c] 11–32	23[c] 11–51	46[c] 24–64
	P	ND	ND	1686 (1096–2620)	ND	ND	ND	ND
3	E	39[c] (21–63)	284 (139–594)	394 (211–759)	2.18[c] (0.79–6.27)	2.18[c] (0.79–6.27)	11[c] (4–31)	4.69[c] (2.18–10.36)
	P	14[c] (4–49)	ND	205 (106–403)	ND	ND	ND	ND
Symptomatic								
4	E	1589 (937–2811)	1073 (389–3141)	190 (86–449)	107 (40–317)	284 (139–594)	1520 (917–2897)	1252 (759–2270)
	P	1103 (700–1775)	1006 (620–1663)	72 (46–112)	137 (86–218)	337 (185–627)	1110 (667–1868)	1009 (634–1630)
5	E	12520 (7583–22704)	1473 (601–3788)	28 (13-57)	1473 (601–3782)	52701 (27997–65049)	2504 (1518–4541)	28 (14–57)
	P	11317 (8144–16210)	ND	27 (28–40)	2545 (1570–4151)	ND	2710 (1624–4567)	ND
6	E	915 (548–1617)	1977 (1175–4402)	2.97 (1.19–7.59)	604 (343–1089)	46 (24–64)	53 (28–65)	5270 (2950–9682)
	P	813 (541–1234)	ND	6.80 (1.65–37.55)	542 (323–911)	ND	ND	2264 (2086–6349)
9	E	49 (23–65)	ND	ND	15733 (12988–30049)	ND	ND	ND
	P	ND	ND	0 (0–8.05)	ND	725 (231–3155)	0 (0–8.05)	0 (0–8.05)

[a] E, *env* primer quantitation; P, *pol* primer quantitation.
[b] Ninety-five percent.
[c] Below 1/10 of value in PBNC, accounted for by residual blood in the organ.
[d] ND, not done.

postmortem tissue. In contrast, the majority of organs from the patients with AIDS showed high levels of provirus, consistent with actual infection of cells within the tissue by HIV. Only samples with clear evidence of infection by these criteria were used for comparisons of sequences in the *env* gene (see below).

The accuracy of quantitation by limiting dilution is dependent on the number of replicates tested and the frequency of positive reactions. We calculated the confidence intervals for quantitation with *pol* and *env* primers by evaluating the likelihood function for each sample (see Materials and Methods) and found that there was no statistically significant difference between the primers for any of those tested (Table 2). When the samples were taken together, the frequency of provirus quantified with *env* and *pol* primers showed a ratio of 1.18 (confidence interval, 0.94 to 1.48; Fig. 1). The correlation coefficient for quantitation with the two sets of primers was 0.96 ($P = 0.0001$), and there was no evidence for an over- or underrepresentation of *env* or *pol* sequences in either lymphoid or nonlymphoid tissue. These results indicate that the V3 primers are as efficient as *pol* primers in amplifying HIV and that we did not amplify only a specific subset of variants in our subsequent sequence comparisons (see Discussion).

Sequence variation in the V3 loop. DNA extracted from different organs or from PBNCs was diluted until only 10 to 20% of replicates gave a PCR product, thus ensuring that nucleotide sequences were derived from single molecules of provirus (68). The lack of peripheral infection in the asymptomatic group restricted our sequence comparisons to virus within lymphoid tissue only (PBNCs and lymph node). For the patients who died of complications associated with AIDS, we were able to carry out more extensive comparisons with a range of samples from nonlymphoid tissues, such as those from brain and lung tissues (Table 2). None of the 322 nucleotide sequences in the V3 loop or flanking regions contained inactivating substitutions such as stop codons or frameshifts. Only one sequence (from lymph node tissue from patient 3) showed G→A hypermutation, producing a highly unusual and probably nonfunctional provirus. Like previous researchers who used the limiting-dilution/direct-sequencing method of sequence determination (4, 68, 85), we have found no evidence for high rates of defective genomes in vivo.

In the asymptomatic patients, a wide range of sequence variants were found in both PBNCs and lymph nodes (Fig. 2). In patients 1 and 3 there were statistically significant differences in the frequency of major and minor amino acid sequences present in the two types of sample. In these two patients, the majority form, in the PBNCs, differed from that in the lymph nodes and vice versa, although in each case such variants were present as minority components in the other sample.

There was a similar diversity of V3 sequences as well as of population differences between samples from the patients who died of complications associated with AIDS. Extreme sequence diversity in all samples from patient 4 was observed, while samples from patient 9 were restricted to only two different sequences in the brain and to three in the lymph nodes. As with the presymptomatic patients, the frequencies of different variants between some organs were statistically significant, although a general observation was of a common set of sequences being present at varying frequencies throughout the body. For example, for patient 4, the main sequence in the brain (12 of 17) and spinal cord (6 of 7) also occurred in the colon (5 of 16), lung (7 of 15), and lymph nodes (1 of 16). However, there are also variants that appear to be more restricted in distribution (e.g., the colon of patient 4, the brain of patient 5, and the colon of patient 6). This type of analysis

provides no evidence for the existence of a shared determinant in the V3 loop that governs the distribution of HIV variants. This problem is compounded by not knowing whether the different sequences within an organ represent genuine diversity of HIV in a single cell type, or whether they result from the presence within the same organ of various proportions of several different HIV-infected cell types, each bearing different proviral variants (such as $CD4^+$ lymphocytes, dendritic cells, and macrophages in the lymph nodes).

To investigate in more detail the process of sequence diversification of the V3 loop upon disease progression, we compared the number of different V3 amino acid sequences found within samples from the presymptomatic patient group and from the group of patients with AIDS (Table 3). In both cases, frequent nonidentical sequences were found; the presymptomatic patients showed a total of 21 different sequences of 84 sampled, compared with 18 of 92 in lymphoid tissue and 23 of 146 from nonlymphoid tissue in the patients with AIDS. Similarly, the mean evolutionary distances between nucleotide sequences in the presymptomatic group (0.042) differed little from distances between sequences found in the patients with AIDS (0.038; Table 4). These comparisons also show that little difference in diversity exists between populations of HIV infecting lymphoid tissue and those replicating in nonlymphoid tissue such as that from the brain, lung, and colon (Tables 3 and 4).

Prediction of in vitro phenotype from V3 loop sequences. There exist well-defined relationships between the properties of macrophage tropism and syncytium induction on the one hand, and between the net V3 charge (11, 19) and similarity to the subtype B consensus V3 sequence (10) on the other hand. Comparison of the 54 different V3 loop sequences produced a consensus sequence that was identical in all but one position to the subtype B consensus (40). There was a striking similarity between this set of sequences and a sequence set of 29 isolates characterized in vitro as showing an MT and NSI phenotype, not only in overall consensus sequence but also in the position and nature of amino acid substitutions that did occur (Fig. 3). For example, both data sets contain frequent substitutions of asparagine (N) and proline (P) for histidine (H) at position 15 and contain either aspartate (D) or glutamate (E) at position 29, with frequent substitutions of alanine (A) or glutamine (Q).

In contrast, V3 loop sequences from a collection of SI sequences were highly variable and contained a number of amino acid replacements not found in the other sequences. For example, residues 7 to 9 are invariant among the postmortem and NSI/MT sequences but are highly polymorphic in the SI isolates. Other residues such as that at position 12 show differences of the consensus sequence (serine [S] in postmortem and NSI/MT sequences and arginine [R] in the SI variants). To investigate whether the postmortem sequences were significantly more similar to those of MT isolates, we carried out Fisher's exact tests (see Materials and Methods) at each amino acid position in the V3 loop. Results at each amino acid position are not independent, so statistical results have to be interpreted cautiously; values are listed only when P is less than 0.01. These tests showed that between postmortem and NSI/MT isolates, there were significant differences in the populations of amino acids only at positions 16 ($P \approx 0.003$) and 22 ($P \approx 10^{-4}$) (Fig. 4). In contrast, postmortem sequences differed significantly at several positions from the SI variants, the most divergent residues being 10 ($P < 10^{-8}$), 12 ($P < 10^{-8}$), and 29 ($P < 10^{-6}$). This statistical evidence supports the previously observed association between the presence of basic (arginine or lysine) residues at positions 12 and 29 and the SI phenotype (19), although other types of substitutions at these

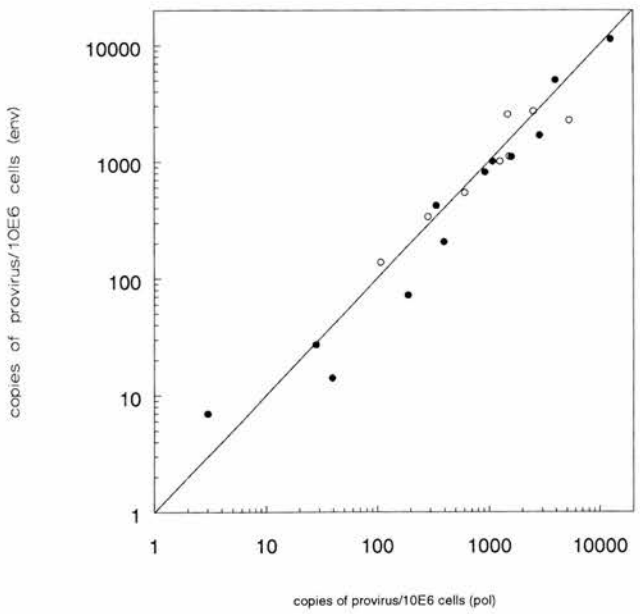


FIG. 1. Comparison of quantitation of provirus by using *pol* and V3 primers by limiting dilution (log scales). ○, samples extracted from lymphoid tissue (lymph node, spleen, and PBNCs); ●, samples extracted from brain, spinal cord, lung, and colon.

sites also occur specifically in the SI variants. There are also further positions at which SI variants differ considerably from postmortem and NSI/MT variants (positions 7 to 10, 15, 28, and 36).

To investigate the relationship between in vitro phenotype and V3 sequence, we have calculated the overall V3 charge and the degree of sequence divergence from the subtype B consensus for a series of isolates with known biological properties (Fig. 5a). In agreement with a previous report which used a similar method for sequence analysis of V3 (51), NSI/MT isolates consistently showed lower charge, greater similarity to the subtype B consensus, or both, than did SI and non-MT variants. A diagonal line almost completely separates the two populations. Using this analysis to predict the phenotype of variants found in postmortem tissue of presymptomatic and terminal patients with AIDS, we found that almost all sequences were located to the left of the dividing line and that they could therefore be predicted to be of the NSI/MT phenotype (Fig. 5b and c). Indeed, there was a tendency for some of the postmortem sequences, particularly those from nonlymphoid tissue, to show a lower charge and fewer differences from the subtype B consensus than did the "typical" NSI isolate. The only sequences with overall charge and divergence approaching that of SI variants were some of those found in patients 3 and 9.

Although the sequences obtained in this study conform closely to those previously described for MT variants in vitro, it is possible that the restriction in sequence diversity in V3 was, at least in part, the result of sampling a population of individuals infected with a very limited subset of HIV-1 variants. To investigate this possibility, we carried out sequence comparisons in the $p17^{gag}$ for all of the 11 study patients. Phylogenetic analysis of sequences in the p17 region have been shown to provide a reliable indication of epidemiological relationships between variants within the same subtype B of HIV-1 (27, 29).

p1

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
PBNCS	....P..... ....D.....	5
	....A..D.....	4
	....D.....	2
	.....N..... .A..D.....	2
	.....P.....	1
	.....N..... ....D.....	1
Lymph node	.... .A..D.....	8
	.....N..... .A..D.....	3
	.....P..... ....D.....	1
	.... .A..D...N.	1
	.....G..... .A..G...N.	1

p2

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
PBNCS	....A..... ....A...N.	10
	.....L...S.. ....G.....	4
	.....L...S.. ....G...N.	1
	.....V.L...S.. ....A...N.	1
Lymph node	....A..... ....A...N.	8
	....A..... ....A.....	2
	....A.....	1
	.....L...S.. ....G.....	1

p3

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
PBNCS	..... G..... .A..... .K...	11
	..... G..... .A.....N.	4
	..... G..... .A.....	2
Lymph node	..... G..... .A.....	3
	..... G..... .A..... .K...	2
	.... .A.....	1
	....D.....	1
	....	1
	....Q.....	1
	..K..... G...E..... .A.E...EN. .K...	1

p4

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain	....L...S.. .A..D.....	12
	....L...S.. ....D.....	2
	....S.. .A..D.....	2
	....N..... ....D.....	1
Spinal cord	....L...S.. .A..D.....	6
	....S.. .A..D.....	1
Colon	....S..... ..N.....I ....D.....	6
	....L...S.. .A..D.....	5
	....S..... ....D.....	1
	....L...S.. ....D.....	1
	....I ....D.....	1
	....S.. ....D.....	1
	....L...S.I .A..D.....	1
Lung	....L...S.. .A..D.....	7
	....S..... G.....	3
	....S..... .....S.. ....D.....	1
	....A..S.. .A..D.....	1
	....N..... ....D.....	1
	....S..... ..N..... ....D.....	1
	....L...S.. ....D.....	1
PBNCS	....S..... G.....	12
	....S..... ..N..... ....D.....	1
	....S..... G..... ....D.....	1
Spleen	....S..... G..... ....D.....	1
	....D.....	1
Lymph node	....S..... G.....	5
	....S..... ..N..... ....D.....	3
	....S.. .A..D.....	2
	....	2
	....S..... G..... ....D.....	1
	....L...S.. .A..D.....	1
	....N..... ....D.....	1

p5

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain	.... .A.....	15
	...L..... ..... .A.....	2
Lung	.... .A..D.....	10
	....P..... .A..D.....	3
PBNCS	.... .A..D.....	13
	.....K.... ..... .A..D.....	2
	....P..... .A..D.....	1
Lymph node	.... .A..D.....	12
	....P..... .A..D.....	1

p6

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain	....NL.....L .....T...	16
Colon	....NL..... ....Q.....	10
	....NL..... ....Q.V...	3
	....L..... ....Q.....	2
PBNCS	....NL.....L .....T...	2
Lymph node	....L..... .....T...	12
	....NL..... ....Q.V...	2
	....NL.....L .....T...	1
	....NL..... .....T...	1

p9

Consensus	CTRPNNNTRK SIHIGPGRAF YTTGEIIGDI RQAHC	n
Brain (L)	....G..... G.....S.. ...-Q.....	11
	....G..... G.....S.L ...-K.....	3
Brain (R)	....G..... G.....S.. ...-Q.....	16
Lymph node	....G..... G.....S.L ...-K.....	10
	....G..... ..P.....I ...-Q.....	3
	....G..... G.....S.. ...-K.....	1

FIG. 2. Proviral V3 loop amino acid sequences from infected organs from asymptomatic patients (1 [p1] through 3) and from patients with terminal AIDS (patients 4 through 6 and patient 9). All sequences are compared with subtype B consensus sequence for V3 (40); a period indicates identity with subtype B consensus; minus indicates a gap introduced to preserve alignment with consensus sequence. n, number of sequences observed.

TABLE 3. Comparison of sequence variability in the V3 loop upon disease progression: frequency of different sequences

Patient type	No. of sequences					
	Lymphoid tissue		Nonlymphoid tissue		Total	
	Total	Unique	Total	Unique	Total	Unique
Presymptomatic	84	21			84	21
Symptomatic	92	18	146	23	238	31
Total	176	36	146	23	322	47

TABLE 4. Comparison of sequence variability in the V3 loop upon disease progression: mean sequence diversity

Patient type	Sequence diversity[a]		
	Lymphoid tissue	Nonlymphoid tissue	Total
Presymptomatic	0.042		0.042
Symptomatic	0.038	0.039	0.0385
Total	0.040	0.039	0.040

[a] Mean evolutionary distance between nucleotide sequences.

No direct epidemiological relationship was found between viruses infecting the 11 study subjects (Fig. 6). Although many of the subjects were infected with variants that fell within the main (heterosexual and intravenous-drug user) cluster of Edinburgh patients, there was no evidence of direct epidemiological contact between them. Furthermore, several variants were separated by those of published isolates of HIV-1 from North America and elsewhere, suggesting a distant evolutionary relationship between them. This analysis confirms the clinical impression that the patients in this study were unrelated epidemiologically to each other. However, there was no phylogenetic information within the V3 region of the *env* gene: sequences showed at most six amino acid changes (patient 9) from the subtype B consensus sequence. All but one V3 sequence (patient 10) is predicted to have an in vitro NSI/MT phenotype according to the analysis presented in Fig. 5. Although certain V3 sequences are more divergent than others, this does not correlate with the underlying phylogenetic relationships between the corresponding $p17^{gag}$ sequences within the HIV-1 B subtype.

Localization and cytopathology of HIV-1 in vivo. None of the previous investigations described in this study identify the cells infected with HIV. It is therefore not clear whether the predicted macrophage tropism and NSI phenotype of the postmortem sequences reflects the tropism and cytopathology of HIV-1 in vivo. To show this, we performed immunocytochemical detection of p24 antigen to localize the infected cells in the tissues for which we carried out the sequence analysis.

For nonlymphoid tissue, we found a very good agreement between the detection of p24 antigen and virus load as determined by limiting-dilution PCR (Table 5). No p24 was found in nonlymphoid tissue of any of the presymptomatic patients, while antigen-expressing cells were frequently found in the brains, spinal cords, and lungs of several of the patients with AIDS (Tables 1 and 5). For example, patient 5 showed high levels of provirus and p24 antigen in several organs, while antigen-expressing cells in patient 6 were confined to the brain.

The lymph node architecture of the presymptomatic patients was relatively normal or showed hyperplasia (Fig. 7a), with none of the evident T-cell depletion, involution, or fibrosis which is found in the lymphoid tissue of patients with AIDS. The interpretation of p24 antigen staining in lymph nodes and spleen was complicated by the presence of extracellular virions captured on the surface of follicular dendritic cells in the B-cell areas (Fig. 7b) (15, 58). p24 antigen was confined to cellular processes of what morphologically appeared to be follicular

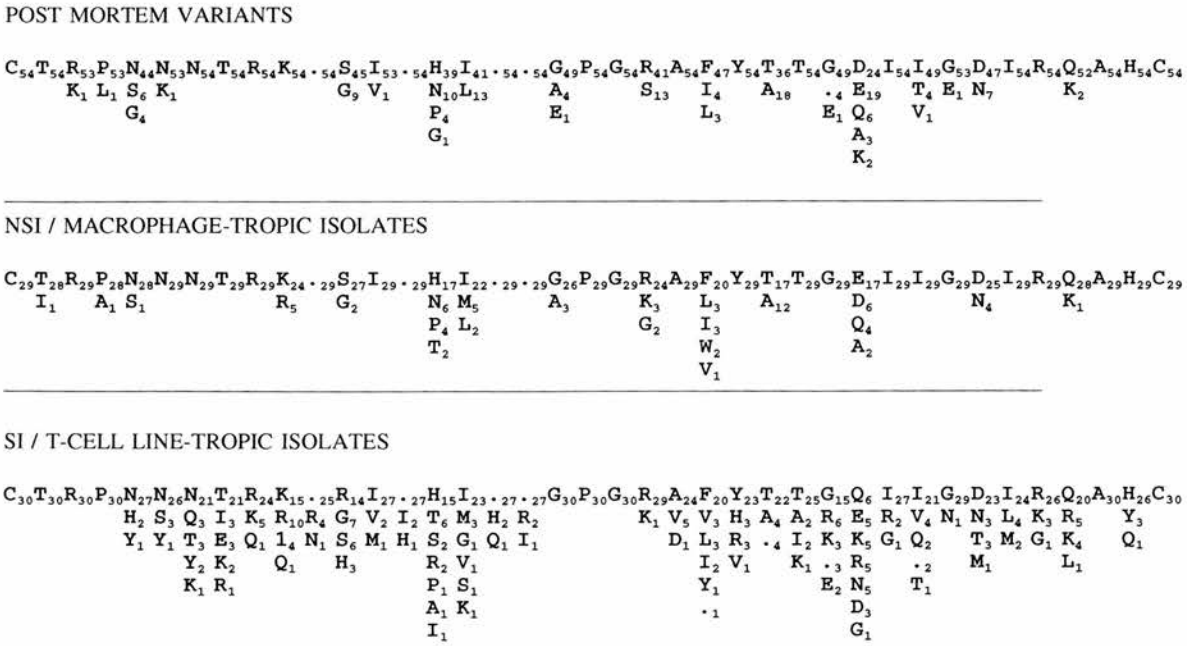


FIG. 3. Comparison of sequences obtained in this study from postmortem material (54 different V3 loop sequences from a total of 322) with those of isolates of HIV-1 showing an NSI and MT phenotype ($n = 29$), and isolates that are SI and non-MT ($n = 30$). Position and frequency (in subscript) of specific substitutions are indicated below the consensus. See Materials and Methods for sources of sequences.

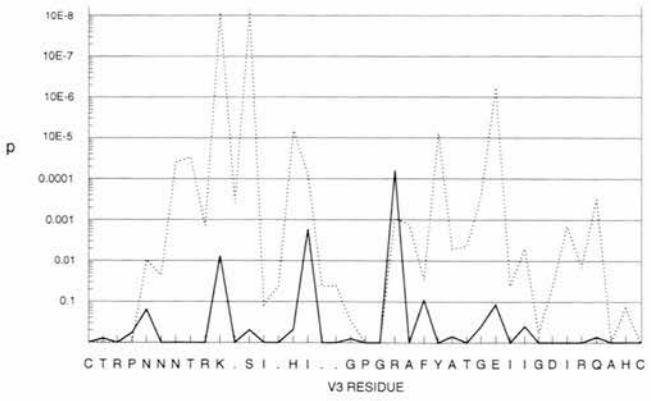


FIG. 4. Comparison of the distributions of amino acid changes at each position in the V3 loop between postmortem sequences and those of NSI/MT isolates (solid line) and those of SI/T-cell-tropic isolates (dotted line) in vitro. The probability of the distribution of changes arising by chance is indicated on the *y* axis on a log scale. Sequences compared correspond to those shown in Fig. 3.

dendritic cells and was not found in the T-cell areas of either presymptomatic or terminal patients with AIDS (Fig. 7b). The failure to detect p24 antigen staining outside the lymphoid follicles suggests that the provirus-bearing cells in lymphoid tissue are largely transcriptionally inactive, although the p24 assay used in this study may not be able to detect low-level expression of virus proteins.

Elsewhere, p24 antigen-expressing cells in vivo were found in brain (Fig. 7c and d), spinal cord, and lung tissue (Fig. 7f and h). In brain and spinal cord tissues of patients with AIDS, p24 antigen was detected in multinucleated giant cells (Fig. 7c), in mononuclear macrophages, and frequently in morphologically normal microglial cells (Fig. 7d). In general, the presence of p24 antigen-positive cells was associated topographically with evidence of tissue damage.

In the lung tissue of patient 4, frequent p24 antigen-expressing lung macrophages were found, and, as in the brain, infected cells formed pronounced multinucleated syncytia (Fig. 7f). For this patient, the predominant V3 sequence of provirus amplified from lung tissue was identical to the major variants infecting the brain and spinal cord and to a proportion of those in colon tissue (Fig. 2). However, this sequence was not represented significantly among sequences of provirus infecting lymphoid tissue from the same patient. The other patient who by quantitative PCR (patient 5; Table 1) showed significant infection of the lungs showed a sharply contrasting tissue distribution of infection. Pathological examination of the lung revealed prominent lymphocytic infiltration into lung tissue and formation of poorly formed lymphoid follicles adjacent to bronchioles (Fig. 7g and h). p24 antigen was detected within the lymphoid follicles but not elsewhere in the lung despite the presence of some multinucleated macrophages. In this patient the population of V3 sequences in lung tissue corresponded closely to that in lymphoid tissue and was distinct from that of provirus variants infecting the brain, where infection of macrophages and microglial cells was prominent (Fig. 2).

DISCUSSION

Restricted sequence variability in the V3 region. An unanticipated finding in this study was the limited sequence variability in the V3 loop of HIV amplified from tissues in vivo. This restriction was evident irrespective of the degree of

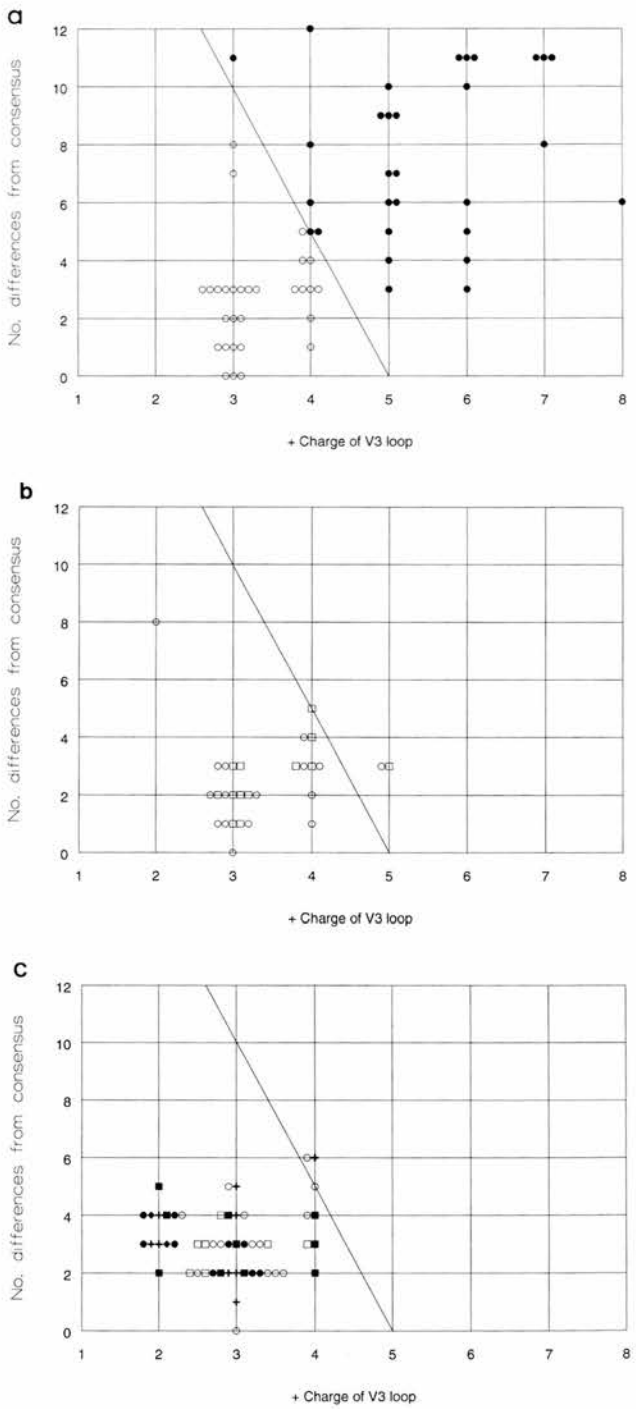


FIG. 5. Comparison of V3 loop sequences on the basis of predicted overall charge (*x* axis) and number of amino acid changes from the subtype B consensus (40) (*y* axis). (a) Fifty-nine isolates of known phenotype in vitro; ○, NSI and MT; ●, SI, non-MT. See legend to Fig. 3 for sources of sequences. A diagonal line separates the two populations. Equivalent analysis was carried out upon the nonidentical V3 loop sequences collected postmortem from three presymptomatic individuals (b) and four patients who died from complications associated with AIDS (c). Origins of sequences: ○, PBNCs, □, lymph nodes; +, brain; ◆, spinal cord; ●, lung; ■, colon. The V3 loop charge was calculated by assigning a unitary positive charge to arginine and lysine residues and a unitary negative charge to glutamate and aspartate residues. The potential partial charge contributed by histidine residues was discounted.

TABLE 5. Detection[a] of p24 antigen in postmortem tissue

Patient	Staining result				
	Lymphoid tissue		Nonlymphoid tissue		
	Lymph node	Spleen	Brain	Spinal cord	Lung
Asymptomatic					
1	+	+	−	−	−
2	+++	+++	−	−	−
3	ND[b]	−	−	−	−
Symptomatic					
4	ND	−	++	++	+++
5	+++	++	+++	+++	++
6	−	−	++	−	−
9	ND	++	+++	−	−

[a] Graded from − (negative) to +++ (extensive staining, frequent antigen-expressing cells).
[b] ND, not done.

disease progression and tissue origin, whether lymphoid or nonlymphoid. Both the consensus and observed polymorphisms almost exactly matched those found in a separate analysis of isolates showing an MT/NSI phenotype in vitro, but were quite distinct from those of SI variants (Fig. 4). The infrequency with which variants with a predicted SI phenotype were detected in vivo contrasts with their frequent isolation from patients upon disease progression (3, 8, 18, 74). For example, among the four patients with AIDS in this study, only two variants were found to show sufficient positive charge and divergence from the consensus sequence to place over the dividing line that separates isolates with different properties (Fig. 5c).

We were able to rule out two possible sources of bias in our results, i.e., that the primers used for amplification of the V3 loop preferentially amplified NSI variants, and that we were studying an epidemiologically very restricted group of patients. To address the first possibility, we compared quantitation of proviral sequences by using primers specific for both V3 and the well conserved *pol* region. Evaluating the likelihood function to determine confidence intervals for the quantitation method used in this study, we found no significant differences between virus loads when we used the two sets of PCR primers. These data make it unlikely that we failed to amplify a significant proportion of envelope sequences and, indeed, the close concordance between the results for *pol* and V3 in every sample further suggests that each of the sequences analyzed was derived from a complete provirus (see below).

The second potential bias was addressed by phylogenetic analysis of $p17^{gag}$ sequences from the 11 patients from whom we obtained V3 loop sequences. This analysis suggested that the individuals were infected with a representative range of HIV-1 subtype B variants and that the similarities observed in the V3 loop did not result simply from infection with relatively homogeneous and possibly epidemiologically related variants.

The high frequency of variants with a predicted NSI phenotype is not inconsistent with the results of previous studies. Variants with predicted NSI phenotypes were frequently detected in several published analyses of viral sequences in vivo, in many cases from patients with advanced HIV-related disease (16, 28, 33, 37, 51, 56, 62, 67, 80, 81, 86), although their frequency relative to SI variants varies considerably between patient groups. Sequence comparisons of the V3 loop of

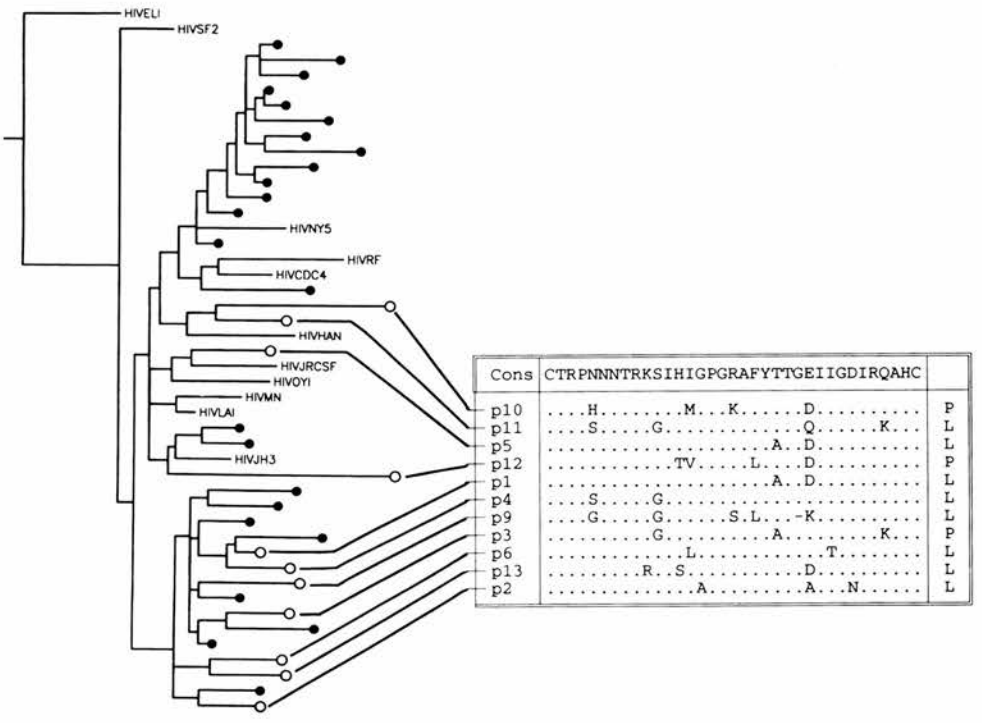


FIG. 6. Phylogenetic analysis of sequences in the $p17^{gag}$ gene of the study patients, and comparison with V3 loop sequence diversity. (Left panel) Phylogenetic relationships represented by a rooted tree, with the HIV-1 subtype D sequence ELI as an outgroup. ○, study patients; ●, other HIV-infected Edinburgh patients. (Right panel) Majority amino acid sequence from PBNCs (P) or lymph node (L) of samples from study patients in the V3 loop; only differences from the subtype B consensus sequences (40) are shown (see legend to Fig. 2).

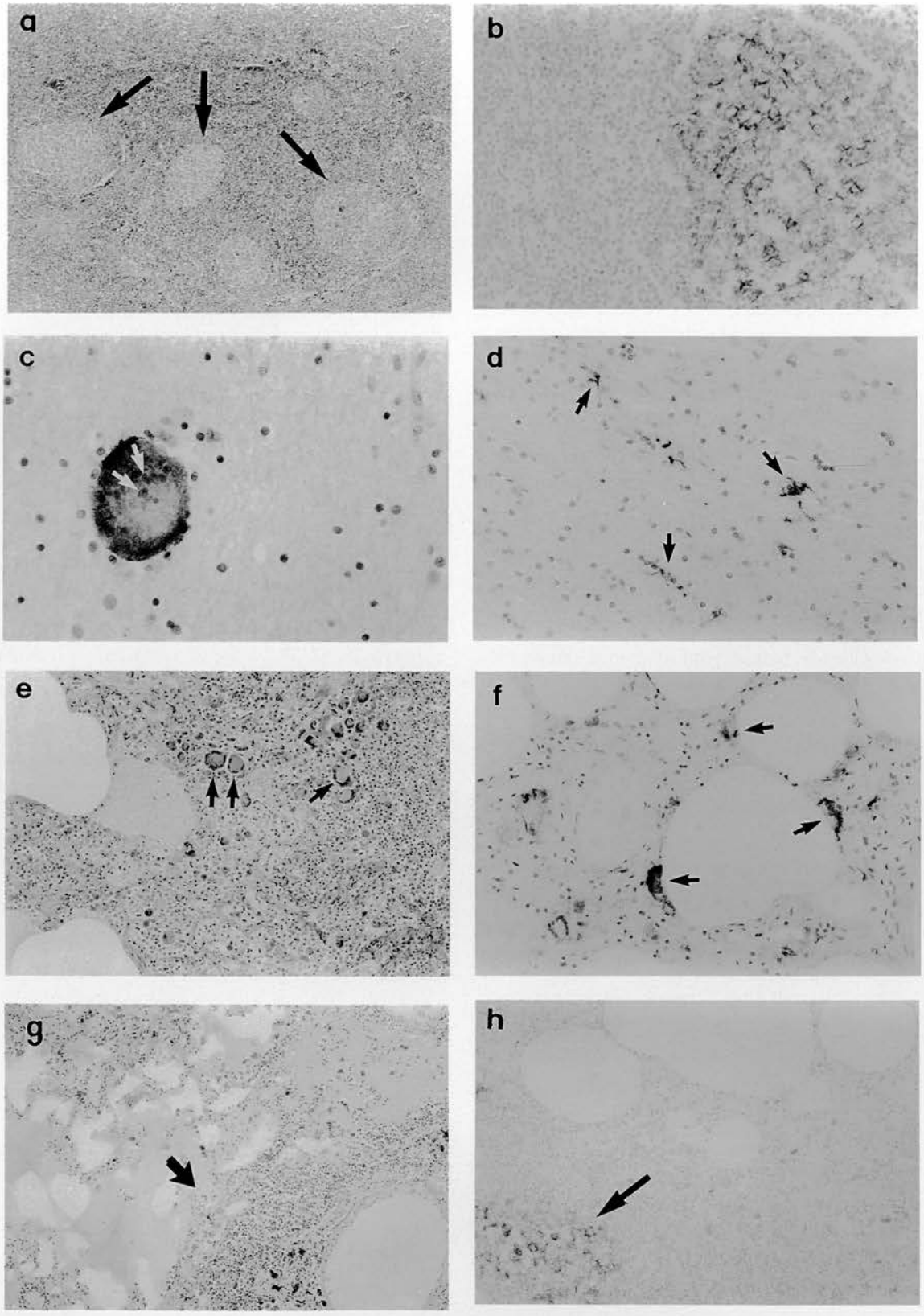


FIG. 7. Morphology and immunocytochemical detection of p24 antigen in lymphoid and nonlymphoid tissue. (a) Lymph node of patient 2 (asymptomatic) at low magnification (×31); hematoxylin and eosin stain. Normal germinal centers are set in the lymphocyte cortex (arrows). (b) High-magnification (×193) view of the same lymph node stained for p24 antigen, showing association of viral protein with follicular dendritic cells. (c) High-magnification view of section of frontal lobe of the brain from patient 5, stained for p24 antigen, showing prominent virus expression in giant (syncytial) cells (nuclei indicated by arrows; ×308). (d) Same case showing p24 positivity in cells of microglial morphology (arrows; ×193). (e) Section of lung from patient 4 showing frequent macrophage syncytia (arrows) in lung alveoli filled with mononuclear macrophages and edema

sequential samples collected upon disease progression often show a change from a predicted NSI to SI phenotype (80), although there is no evidence for a complete replacement. For example, in an HIV-infected hemophiliac monitored over a period of 6 years, V3 loop sequences were NSI in early infection and became predominantly SI between 4 and 5 years after infection but subsequently reverted to an apparent NSI phenotype (28, 69).

The observed restriction in sequence variability of the V3 loop can be plausibly accounted for by strong selection against sequence change in this region, although with some tolerance of certain amino acid replacements at specific sites (28, 51). The mechanism of selection for these variants remains obscure (see below), but it is significant that exactly the same restriction in sequence diversity in the V3 loop in variants associated with primary infection has been observed in vivo (38, 85, 87).

In vitro phenotype of HIV. Although we have not been able to confirm the phenotype of the postmortem variants experimentally, direct evidence that variants found in the CNS were indeed MT has been reported by others (9, 33). In one study, it was found that almost all isolates derived from the cerebrospinal fluid from a range of asymptomatic and symptomatic individuals were capable of efficient replication in primary macrophage culture (33); these variants showed V3 loop sequences with low charge and little divergence, if any, from the subtype B consensus.

Most of the published sequences of SI variants used for sequence comparisons were derived from isolates of HIV-1 that were often passaged extensively in cell culture prior to biological characterization. It is possible that whatever selective constraint restricts sequence diversity in vivo is absent in the conditions used for virus culture and that the virus is therefore free to drift away from the subtype B consensus sequence. It is also possible that a V3 (or V2) loop with a large positive charge confers a growth advantage in vitro, leading to the selective isolation of variants bearing such divergent sequences from a heterogeneous in vivo population. Indeed, the isolation of SI variants from patients progressing to AIDS is associated with increased virus load and therefore with a greater likelihood that such extreme variants might by chance be present in the initial PBMC culture.

Changes in the properties of isolates upon in vitro passaging are commonly observed. Repeated passaging enables HIV to adapt to efficient replication in different cell types, including permanently transformed T-cell lines. It has also been shown that in vitro culture leads to a rapid loss of sequence variability in the *env* gene (39) and often to the replacement of the predominant in vivo variant with a minor population (37, 39, 50). Indeed, specific outgrowth of SI variants has been found upon short-term primary lymphocyte culture of PBMCs with V3 loop sequences that could be predicted to be mainly NSI/MT (37, 47a, 61). These data are consistent with the hypothesis that the overrepresentation of SI isolates from patients with AIDS compared with their frequency in vivo is at least in part the direct result of their competitive advantage over NSI/MT variants in certain in vitro culture conditions and therefore does not necessarily reflect their prevalence in vivo.

Other lentiviruses such as HIV-2 and several of the simian immunodeficiency viruses (SIV) have envelope proteins with many structural similarities to HIV-1 gp160. In particular, it is possible to identify the homologs of the V1/V2 and V4 hypervariable regions in these different viruses. One puzzling feature has been the low degree of sequence variability in the counterpart of the HIV-1 V3 loop in HIV-2 and SIV_{mac} (1, 7, 66). The results in this paper suggest that the designation of V3 as a hypervariable region may have been unduly influenced by the characteristics of cultured isolates of HIV-1 and may not reflect the relative homogeneity of sequences in this region in vivo. The similarities between HIV-1 and other lentiviruses may be greater than were previously imagined.

In vivo phenotype of HIV. The sensitive and specific detection of actively replicating virus in cells by immunocytochemical staining for p24 antigen provided an opportunity to identify the main target cells of the sequence variants identified in this study in vivo and their associated cytopathology. The only infected cells that could be identified by this technique were tissue macrophages in the lung and either macrophages or microglial cells in the CNS. This macrophage infection was associated with tissue damage and with frequent giant cell formation.

In contrast, infected cells in the lymph node were not detected despite the detection of high frequencies of proviral sequences in DNA extracted from lymphoid tissue in both presymptomatic patients and those with AIDS. These findings, however, are consistent with previous reports of extensive but latent infection in lymphoid tissue (14), which were based upon the finding that the number of provirus-bearing cells within a lymph node greatly exceeded the number of those in which viral RNA sequences could be detected (58). Proviral loads calculated in this study and in others using similar techniques (58) range from 10^2 to 2×10^4 copies per 10^6 cells. These figures are not inconsistent with the reported high frequencies of provirus-bearing cells detected by in situ PCR (14, 15), as the former figures are for total lymph node DNA, which includes nucleic acids from cells not susceptible to HIV infection (B cells, follicular dendritic cells, cells within connective tissue, etc.).

The reason why HIV infection is largely latent in lymphoid tissue remains unclear. One possibility is that the DNA detected by PCR is partially reverse-transcribed provirus produced within extracellular virions (45, 75, 84). Alternatively, the DNA may be in the form of intracellular (cytoplasmic) partial transcripts previously observed in vitro upon exposure of HIV to cells that are nonpermissive for infection (21, 82, 83). As first-strand synthesis of provirus proceeds from the 3′ end of the genomic RNA, transcripts for the 3′ long terminal repeat and *env* should be relatively more abundant than transcripts of the *pol* and *gag* genes, as has been documented in vitro (82, 84). However, in this study careful quantitation by limiting-dilution PCR with nested primers showed no difference in the relative frequencies of V3 and *pol* region sequences, irrespective of whether the samples were from tissue of lymphoid or nonlymphoid origin (Tables 1 and 2; Fig. 1); this suggests strongly that the sequences detected and sequenced in this study originated from complete proviruses.

HIV tropism in vivo. We were unable to differentiate variants in this study in terms of SI/NSI phenotype, as all showed similar low charge and high degree of sequence conservation in the V3 loop. However, it was evident that differences existed in the populations of variants infecting

fluid (×77). (f) High-magnification (×193) view showing p24 antigen-expressing syncytia in the walls of alveoli. (g) Section of lung from patient 5 showing prominent lymphocytic infiltration (arrow) and containing carbon debris. The lung alveoli are partially filled with edema fluid (×77). (h) Distribution of p24 antigen within lung lymphoid tissue (arrow), similar to that observed in lymph nodes and spleen tissue.

different organs. For example, no patient showed equivalent distributions of variants in the CNS and in lymphoid tissue.

Although it is possible to document rapid turnover of *env* sequence variants with time in plasma of HIV-infected individuals (69, 79), little if anything is understood about the dynamics of sequence change outside the peripheral circulation. In particular, it is not known if separate populations of HIV develop in isolation from variants in other parts of the body (local evolution) or whether there is a process of continuous infection and spread from variants circulating in the blood (systemic evolution). Local evolution in nonlymphoid tissues might follow the widespread dissemination of HIV upon primary infection and persist at a low level (undetectable by PCR or by immunocytochemical staining) throughout the asymptomatic phase of infection because of cytotoxic T-cell activity or other immune effector mechanisms. This restriction on virus replication would become increasingly ineffective upon progression; the reactivation of virus replication in nonlymphoid tissue would form the basis for the previously observed redistribution of HIV in patients with AIDS (5, 13). In this model, different populations would develop in different tissues, through evolutionary drift and possibly through specific adaptive changes for replication in different cell types.

However, a consistent feature of the sequence distributions in this study and in others was the dispersed nature of many of the variants. For example, for many of the study patients, the major components of populations in brain and other nonlymphoid samples were often found as minor variants in lymphoid tissue (and vice versa), suggesting repeated traffic of virus between the two in patients who were severely immunosuppressed. These findings are more consistent with the hypothesis of systemic evolution of HIV, in which virus variants disseminate freely throughout different tissues in the later stages of infection and restrict the development of local populations.

One method of virus spread documented in this paper is by lymphocyte infiltration of a tissue. In patient 5, the high proviral load detected by quantitative PCR resulted from the formation of differentiated lymphoid tissue within the lung and was associated with the presence of a virus population which was indistinguishable from that in lymph nodes and spleen tissue. In contrast, widespread dissemination of infected macrophages most plausibly accounts for the sequence similarity between variants infecting lung, colon, and brain tissue in patient 4, since the sequence identity of the V3 loop would be unlikely to have arisen by chance at several sites in the body, as would be necessary in the local model of evolution.

What remains unclear is whether variants associated with infected macrophages are functionally distinct from those found in lymphoid tissue. We are currently investigating this question through further sequence comparisons of different parts of the *env* gene, and through in vitro characterization of isolates derived from lymphocyte- and macrophage-infiltrated tissues.

This study provides no information on the possible origins or fate of syncytium-inducing variants of HIV that are frequently isolated upon disease progression. In this study, not only did we fail to detect variants with a predicted SI phenotype in the patients with AIDS, but the observed behavior of HIV in vivo consistently differed from that observed with cultures. Immunocytochemical staining for p24 antigen in the CNS (and lung tissue) of the patients with AIDS revealed cytopathic infection of macrophage/microglial cells by variants with a predicted NSI phenotype. These findings suggest that in vivo observations of giant cell formation are not reproduced by infection of cell lines such as MT-2. Furthermore, the ability of HIV to infect macrophages is not lost with disease progression as was previously suggested (10, 63). Indeed, the findings in this paper appear more consistent with previous findings that progression is accompanied by a change in the phenotype of isolates to SI variants that retain an ability to replicate in primary macrophage culture (8).

Independent evidence for the importance of macrophage tropism in pathogenesis has been obtained from observations of a more rapid $CD4^+$ lymphocyte depletion in SCID-Hu mice infected with an MT variant than in those infected with SF-2 (53). In another animal model, the lack of disease progression, the stable $CD4^+$ count, and the low circulating virus loads in chimpanzees infected with HIV-1 were attributed to a species-specific inability of HIV to infect chimpanzee macrophages (65). Directly or indirectly, the investigations described in this communication may contribute to our understanding of the mechanism by which T cells become depleted, the influence of macrophage infection, and the role of infection in the lymph nodes and spleen. These questions are essential for understanding the pathogenesis of HIV infection but are currently unresolved.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

We thank staff in the Department of Neuropathology and Medical Microbiology, University of Edinburgh, for technical assistance in storage and preparation of postmortem samples used in this study.

This work was funded by grants awarded by the Medical Research Council to P.S. (PG 9209918 with A. J. Leigh Brown) and to J.E.B. (SPG 8925719).

REFERENCES

1. **Almond, N., A. Jenkins, A. B. Heath, and P. Kitchin.** 1993. Sequence variation in the env gene of simian immunodeficiency virus recovered from immunized macaques is predominantly in the V1 region. J. Gen. Virol. **74:**865–871.
2. **Andeweg, A. C., P. Leeflang, A. D. M. E. Osterhaus, and M. L. Bosch.** 1993. Both the V2 and V3 regions of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 surface glycoprotein functionally interact with other envelope regions in syncytium formation. J. Virol. **67:**3232–3239.
3. **Asjo, B., J. Albert, A. Karlsson, L. Morfeldt Manson, G. Biberfeld, K. Lidman, and E. M. Fenyo.** 1986. Replicative properties of human immunodeficiency virus from patients with varying severity of HIV infection. Lancet **ii:**660–662.
4. **Balfe, P., P. Simmonds, C. A. Ludlam, J. O. Bishop, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1990. Concurrent evolution of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in patients infected from the same source: rate of sequence change and low frequency of inactivating mutations. J. Virol. **64:**6221–6233.
5. **Bell, J. E., A. Busittil, J. W. Ironside, S. Rebus, Y. K. Donaldson, P. Simmonds, and J. F. Peutherer.** 1993. Human immunodeficiency virus and the brain: investigation of virus load and neuropathological changes in pre-AIDS individuals. J. Infect. Dis. **168:**818–824.
6. **Boyd, M. T., G. R. Simpson, A. J. Cann, M. A. Johnson, and R. A. Weiss.** 1993. A single amino acid substitution in the V1 loop of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 alters cellular tropism. J. Virol. **67:**3649–3652.
7. **Burns, D. P., and R. C. Desrosiers.** 1991. Selection of genetic variants of simian immunodeficiency virus in persistently infected rhesus monkeys. J. Virol. **65:**1843–1854.
8. **Cheng-Mayer, C., D. Seto, M. Tateno, and J. A. Levy.** 1988. Biological features of HIV-1 that correlate with virulence in the host. Science **240:**80–82.
9. **Cheng-Mayer, C., C. Weiss, D. Seto, and J. A. Levy.** 1989. Isolates of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 from brain may constitute a special group of the AIDS virus. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **86:**8575–8579.
10. **Chesebro, B., K. Wehrly, J. Nishio, and S. Perryman.** 1992. Macrophage-tropic human immunodeficiency virus isolates from

different patients exhibit unusual V3 envelope sequence homogeneity in comparison with T cell-tropic isolates: definition of critical amino acids involved in cell tropism. J. Virol. **66:**6547–6554.

11. **de Jong, J. J., A. de Ronde, W. Keulen, M. Tersmette, and J. Goudsmit.** 1992. Minimal requirements for the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 V3 domain to support the syncytium-inducing phenotype: analysis by single amino acid substitution. J. Virol. **66:**6777–6780.
12. **de Jong, J. J., J. Goudsmit, W. Keulen, B. Klaver, W. Krone, M. Tersmette, and A. de Ronde.** 1992. Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 clones chimeric for the envelope V3 domain differ in syncytium formation and replication capacity. J. Virol. **66:**757–765.
13. **Donaldson, Y. K., J. E. Bell, J. W. Ironside, R. P. Brettle, J. R. Robertson, A. Busuttil, and P. Simmonds.** 1994. Redistribution of human immunodeficiency virus outside the lymphoid system with the onset of AIDS. Lancet **343:**382–385.
14. **Embretson, J., M. Zupancic, J. Beneke, M. Till, S. Wolinsky, J. L. Ribas, A. Burke, and A. T. Haase.** 1993. Analysis of human immunodeficiency virus-infected tissues by amplification and in-situ hybridization reveals latent and permissive infections at single-cell resolution. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **90:**357–361.
15. **Embretson, J., M. Zupancic, J. L. Ribas, A. Burke, P. Racz, K. Tennerracz, and A. T. Haase.** 1993. Massive covert infection of helper T lymphocytes and macrophages by HIV during the incubation period of AIDS. Nature (London) **362:**359–362.
16. **Epstein, L. G., C. Kuiken, B. M. Blumberg, S. Hartman, L. R. Sharer, M. Clement, and J. Goudsmit.** 1991. HIV-1 V3 domain variation in brain and spleen of children with AIDS: tissue-specific evolution within host-determined quasispecies. Virology **180:**583–590.
17. **Felsenstein, J.** 1989. PHYLIP-phylogeny inference package (version 3.2). Cladistics **5:**164–166.
18. **Fenyö, E. M., L. Morfeldt-Manson, F. Chiodi, B. Lind, A. von Gegerfelt, J. Albert, E. Olausson, and B. Åsjö.** 1988. Distinct replicative and cytopathic characteristics of human immunodeficiency virus isolates. J. Virol. **62:**4414–4419.
19. **Fouchier, R. A. M., M. Groenink, N. A. Kootstra, M. Tersmette, H. G. Huisman, F. Miedema, and H. Schuitemaker.** 1992. Phenotype-associated sequence variation in the third variable domain of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 molecule. J. Virol. **66:**3183–3187.
20. **Fung, M. S., C. R. Sun, W. L. Gordon, R. S. Liou, T. W. Chang, W. N. Sun, E. S. Daar, and D. D. Ho.** 1992. Identification and characterization of a neutralization site within the second variable region of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120. J. Virol. **66:**848–856.
21. **Gao, W. Y., A. Cara, R. C. Gallo, and F. Lori.** 1993. Low levels of deoxynucleotides in peripheral blood lymphocytes—a strategy to inhibit human immunodeficiency virus type-1 replication. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **90:**8925–8928.
22. **Gartner, S., P. Markovits, D. M. Markovitz, H. Kaplan, R. C. Gallo, and M. Popovic.** 1986. The role of mononuclear phagocytes in HTLV-III/LAV infection. Science **233:**215–219.
23. **Gendelman, H. E., L. M. Baca, H. Husayni, J. A. Turpin, D. Skillman, D. C. Kalter, J. M. Orenstein, D. L. Hoover, and M. S. Meltzer.** 1990. Macrophage-HIV interaction: viral isolation and target cell tropism. AIDS **4:**221–228.
24. **Groenink, M., R. A. M. Fouchier, S. Broersen, C. H. Baker, M. Koot, A. B. van't Wout, H. G. Huisman, F. Miedema, M. Tersmette, and H. Schuitemaker.** 1993. Relation of phenotype evolution of HIV-1 to envelope V2 configuration. Science **260:**1513–1516.
25. **Haggerty, S., and M. Stevenson.** 1991. Predominance of distinct viral genotypes in brain and lymph node compartments of HIV-infected individuals. Viral Immunol. **4:**123–131.
26. **Haigwood, N. L., J. R. Shuster, G. K. Moore, H. Lee, P. V. Skiles, K. W. Higgins, P. J. Barr, C. George Nascimento, and K. S. Steimer.** 1990. Importance of hypervariable regions of HIV-1 gp120 in the generation of virus neutralizing antibodies. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **6:**855–869.
27. **Holmes, E. C., A. J. L. Brown, and P. Simmonds.** 1993. Sequence data as evidence. Nature (London) **364:**766.
28. **Holmes, E. C., L. Q. Zhang, P. Simmonds, C. A. Ludlam, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1992. Convergent and divergent sequence evolution in the surface envelope glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 within a single infected patient. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **89:**4835–4839.
29. **Holmes, E. C., L. Q. Zhang, P. Simmonds, A. S. Rogers, and A. J. L. Brown.** 1993. Molecular investigation of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) infection in a patient of an HIV-infected surgeon. J. Infect. Dis. **167:**1411–1414.

29a. **Holmes, E. C., et al.** Unpublished data.

30. **Hultman, T., S. Stahl, E. Hornes, and M. Uhlen.** 1989. Direct solid-phase sequencing of genomic and plasmid DNA using magnetic beads as solid support. Nucleic Acids Res. **17:**4937–4946.
31. **Hwang, S. S., T. J. Boyle, H. K. Lyerly, and B. R. Cullen.** 1991. Identification of the envelope V3 loop as the primary determinant of cell tropism in HIV-1. Science **253:**71–74.
32. **Javaherian, K., A. J. Langlois, G. J. LaRosa, A. T. Profy, D. P. Bolognesi, W. C. Herlihy, S. D. Putney, and T. J. Matthews.** 1990. Broadly neutralizing antibodies elicited by the hypervariable neutralizing determinant of HIV-1. Science **250:**1590–1593.
33. **Keys, B., J. Karis, B. Fadeel, A. Valentin, G. Norkrans, L. Hagberg, and F. Chiodi.** 1993. V3 sequences of paired HIV-1 isolates from blood and cerebrospinal fluid cluster according to host and show variation related to the clinical stage of disease. Virology **196:**475–483.
34. **Koenig, S., H. E. Gendelman, J. M. Orenstein, M. C. Dal Canto, G. H. Pezeshkpour, M. Yungbluth, F. Janotta, A. Aksamit, M. A. Martin, and A. S. Fauci.** 1986. Detection of AIDS virus in macrophages in brain tissue from AIDS patients with encephalopathy. Science **233:**1089–1093.
35. **Koot, M., I. P. M. Keet, A. H. V. Vos, R. E. Y. Degoede, M. T. L. Roos, R. A. Coutinho, F. Miedema, P. T. A. Schellekens, and M. Tersmette.** 1993. Prognostic value of HIV-1 syncytium-inducing phenotype for rate of CD4+ cell depletion and progression to AIDS. Ann. Intern. Med. **118:**681–688.
36. **Koyanagi, Y., S. Miles, R. T. Mitsuyasu, J. E. Merrill, H. V. Vinters, and I. S. Chen.** 1987. Dual infection of the central nervous system by AIDS viruses with distinct cellular tropisms. Science **236:**819–822.
37. **Kuiken, C. L., J.-J. de Jong, E. Baan, W. Keulen, M. Tersmette, and J. Goudsmit.** 1992. Evolution of the V3 envelope domain in proviral sequences and isolates of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 during transition of the viral biological phenotype. J. Virol. **66:**4622–4627.
38. **Kuiken, C. L., G. Zwart, E. Baan, R. A. Coutinho, J. A. R. Vandenhoek, and J. Goudsmit.** 1993. Increasing antigenic and genetic diversity of the v3 variable domain of the human immunodeficiency virus envelope protein in the course of the AIDS epidemic. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **90:**9061–9065.
39. **Kusumi, K., B. Conway, S. Cunningham, A. Berson, C. Evans, A. K. N. Iversen, D. Colvin, M. V. Gallo, S. Coutre, E. G. Shpaer, D. V. Faulkner, A. deRonde, S. Volkman, C. Williams, M. S. Hirsch, and J. I. Mullins.** 1992. Human immunodeficiency virus type 1 envelope gene structure and diversity in vivo and after cocultivation in vitro. J. Virol. **66:**875–885.
40. **LaRosa, G. J., J. P. Davide, K. Weinhold, J. A. Waterbury, A. T. Profy, J. A. Lewis, A. J. Langlois, G. R. Dreesman, R. N. Boswell, and P. Shadduck.** 1990. Conserved sequence and structural elements in the HIV-1 principal neutralizing determinant. Science **249:**932–935.
41. **Levy, J. A.** 1993. Pathogenesis of human immunodeficiency virus infection. Microbiol. Rev. **57:**183–289.
42. **Li, Y. X., J. C. Kappes, J. A. Conway, R. W. Price, G. M. Shaw, and B. H. Hahn.** 1991. Molecular characterization of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 cloned directly from uncultured human brain tissue: identification of replication-competent and -defective viral genomes. J. Virol. **65:**3973–3985.
43. **Liu, Z.-Q., C. Wood, J. A. Levy, and C. Cheng-Mayer.** 1990. The viral envelope gene is involved in macrophage tropism of a human immunodeficiency virus type 1 strain isolated from brain tissue. J. Virol. **64:**6148–6153.
44. **Looney, D. J., A. G. Fisher, S. D. Putney, J. R. Rusche, R. R. Redfield, S. D. Burke, R. C. Gallo, and F. Wong Staal.** 1988. Type restricted neutralization of molecular clones of HIV. Science **241:**357–359.

45. **Lori, F., F. di Marzo Veronese, A. L. De Vico, P. Lusso, M. S. Reitz, Jr., and R. C. Gallo.** 1992. Viral DNA carried by human immunodeficiency virus type 1 virions. J. Virol. **66:**5067–5074.
46. **Louwagie, J., F. E. McCutchan, M. Peeters, T. P. Brennan, E. Sandersbuell, G. A. Eddy, G. Vandergroen, K. Fransen, G. M. Gershydamet, R. Deleys, and D. S. Burke.** 1993. Phylogenetic analysis of gag genes from 70 international HIV-1 isolates provides evidence for multiple genotypes. AIDS **7:**769–780.
47. **Macatonia, S. E., R. Lau, S. Patterson, A. J. Pinching, and S. C. Knight.** 1990. Dendritic cell infection, depletion and dysfunction in HIV-infected individuals. Immunology **71:**38–45.
47a. **Mayer, A.** Personal communication.
48. **Mehta, C. R., and N. R. Patel.** 1993. A network algorithm for performing Fisher's exact test in r × c contingency tables. J. Am. Stat. Assoc. **78:**427–434.
49. **Meloen, R. H., R. M. Liskamp, and J. Goudsmit.** 1989. Specificity and function of the individual amino acids of an important determinant of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 that induces neutralizing activity. J. Gen. Virol. **70:**1505–1512.
50. **Meyerhans, A., R. Cheynier, J. Albert, M. Seth, S. Kwok, J. Sninsky, L. Morfeldt Manson, B. Asjo, and S. Wain Hobson.** 1989. Temporal fluctuations in HIV quasispecies in vivo are not reflected by sequential HIV isolations. Cell **58:**901–910.
51. **Milich, L., B. Margolin, and R. Swanstrom.** 1993. V3 loop of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 Env protein: interpreting sequence variability. J. Virol. **67:**5623–5634.
52. **Modrow, S., B. H. Hahn, G. M. Shaw, R. C. Gallo, F. Wong-Staal, and H. Wolf.** 1987. Computer-assisted analysis of envelope protein sequences of seven human immunodeficiency virus isolates: prediction of antigenic epitopes in conserved and variable regions. J. Virol. **61:**570–578.
53. **Mosier, D. E., R. J. Gulizia, P. D. Macisaac, B. E. Torbett, and J. A. Levy.** 1993. Rapid loss of CD4+ T cells in human-PBL-SCID mice by noncytopathic HIV isolates. Science **260:**689–692.
54. **Myers, G., B. Korber, J. Berzofsky, T. F. Smith, and G. N. Pavlakis.** 1991. Human retroviruses and AIDS 1993. Los Alamos National Laboratory, Los Alamos, N.M.
55. **Nicholson, J. K., G. D. Cross, C. S. Callaway, and J. S. McDougal.** 1986. In vitro infection of human monocytes with human T lymphotropic virus type III/lymphadenopathy-associated virus (HTLV-III/LAV). J. Immunol. **137:**323–329.
56. **Ou, C. Y., C. A. Ciesielski, G. Myers, C. I. Bandea, C. C. Luo, B. T. Korber, J. I. Mullins, G. Schochetman, R. L. Berkelman, and A. N. Economou.** 1992. Molecular epidemiology of HIV transmission in a dental practice. Science **256:**1165–1171.
57. **Pang, S., H. V. Vinters, T. Akashi, W. A. OBrien, and I. S. Chen.** 1991. HIV-1 env sequence variation in brain tissue of patients with AIDS-related neurologic disease. J. Acquired Immune Defic. Syndr. **4:**1082–1092.
58. **Pantaleo, G., C. Graziosi, J. F. Demarest, L. Butini, M. Montroni, C. H. Fox, J. M. Orenstein, D. P. Kotler, and A. S. Fauci.** 1993. HIV infection is active and progressive in lymphoid tissue during the clinically latent stage of disease. Nature (London) **362:**355–358.
59. **Roos, M. T. L., J. M. A. Lange, R. E. Y. Goede, R. A. Coutinho, P. T. A. Schellekens, F. Miedema, and M. Tersmette.** 1992. Viral phenotype and immune response in primary human immunodeficiency virus type 1 infection. J. Infect. Dis. **165:**427–432.
60. **Rusche, J. R., K. Javaherian, C. McDanal, J. Petro, D. L. Lynn, R. Grimaila, A. Langlois, R. C. Gallo, L. O. Arthur, P. J. Fischinger, D. P. Bolognesi, S. D. Putney, and T. J. Matthews.** 1988. Antibodies that inhibit fusion of human immunodeficiency virus-infected cells bind a 24-amino-acid sequence of the viral envelope, gp120. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **85:**3198–3202.
61. **Sánchez-Palomino, S., J. M. Rojas, M. A. Martínez, E. M. Fenyö, R. Nájera, E. Domingo, and C. López-Galíndez.** 1993. Dilute passage promotes expression of genetic and phenotypic variants of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in cell culture. J. Virol. **67:**2938–2943.
62. **Scarlatti, G., T. Leitner, E. Halapi, J. Wahlberg, P. Marchisio, M. A. Clericischoeller, H. Wigzell, E. M. Fenyo, J. Albert, M. Uhlen, and P. Rossi.** 1993. Comparison of variable region-3 sequences of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 from infected children with the RNA and DNA sequences of the virus populations of their mothers. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **90:**1721–1725.
63. **Schuitemaker, H., M. Koot, N. A. Kootstra, M. W. Dercksen, R. E. Y. de Goede, R. P. van Steenwijk, J. M. A. Lange, J. K. M. E. Schattenkerk, F. Miedema, and M. Tersmette.** 1992. Biological phenotype of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 clones at different stages of infection: progression of disease is associated with a shift from monocytotropic to T-cell-tropic virus populations. J. Virol. **66:**1354–1360.
64. **Schuitemaker, H., N. A. Kootstra, R. E. Y. de Goede, F. de Wolf, F. Miedema, and M. Tersmette.** 1991. Monocytotropic human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1) variants detectable in all stages of HIV-1 infection lack T-cell line tropism and syncytium-inducing ability in primary T-cell culture. J. Virol. **65:**356–363.
65. **Schuitemaker, H., L. Meyaard, N. A. Kootstra, R. Dubbes, S. A. Otto, M. Tersmette, J. L. Heeney, and F. Miedema.** 1993. Lack of T cell dysfunction and programmed cell death in human immunodeficiency virus type-1 infected chimpanzees correlates with absence of monocytotropic variants. J. Infect. Dis. **168:**1140–1147.
66. **Sharma, D. P., M. C. Zink, M. Anderson, R. Adams, J. E. Clements, S. V. Joag, and O. Narayan.** 1992. Derivation of neurotropic simian immunodeficiency virus from exclusively lymphocytotropic parental virus: pathogenesis of infection in macaques. J. Virol. **66:**3550–3556.
67. **Simmonds, P., P. Balfe, C. A. Ludlam, J. O. Bishop, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1990. Analysis of sequence diversity in hypervariable regions of the external glycoprotein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. J. Virol. **64:**5840–5850.
68. **Simmonds, P., P. Balfe, J. F. Peutherer, C. A. Ludlam, J. O. Bishop, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1990. Human immunodeficiency virus-infected individuals contain provirus in small numbers of peripheral mononuclear cells and at low copy numbers. J. Virol. **64:**864–872.
69. **Simmonds, P., L. Q. Zhang, F. McOmish, P. Balfe, C. A. Ludlam, and A. J. Leigh Brown.** 1991. Discontinuous sequence change of human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) type 1 *env* sequences in plasma viral and lymphocyte-associated proviral populations in vivo: implications for models of HIV pathogenesis. J. Virol. **65:**6266–6276.
70. **Starcich, B. R., B. H. Hahn, G. M. Shaw, P. D. McNeely, S. Modrow, H. Wolf, E. S. Parks, W. P. Parks, S. F. Josephs, R. C. Gallo, and F. Wong Staal.** 1986. Identification and characterization of conserved and variable regions in the envelope gene of HTLV-III/LAV, the retrovirus of AIDS. Cell **45:**637–648.
71. **Steuler, H., B. Storch Hagenlocher, and B. Wildemann.** 1992. Distinct populations of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 in blood and cerebrospinal fluid. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **8:**53–59.
72. **Sullivan, N., M. Thali, C. Furman, D. D. Ho, and J. Sodroski.** 1993. Effect of amino acid changes in the V1/V2 region of the human immunodeficiency virus type 1 gp120 glycoprotein on subunit association, syncytium formation, and recognition by a neutralizing antibody. J. Virol. **67:**3674–3679.
73. **Takeuchi, Y., M. Akutsu, K. Murayama, N. Shimizu, and H. Hoshino.** 1991. Host range mutant of human immunodeficiency virus type 1: modification of cell tropism by a single point mutation at the neutralization epitope in the *env* gene. J. Virol. **65:**1710–1718.
74. **Tersmette, M., J. M. Lange, R. E. Y. de Goede, F. de Wolf, J. K. Eeftink Schattenkerk, P. T. Schellekens, R. A. Coutinho, J. G. Huisman, J. Goudsmit, and F. Miedema.** 1989. Association between biological properties of human immunodeficiency virus variants and risk for AIDS and AIDS mortality. Lancet **1:**983–985.
75. **Trono, D.** 1992. Partial reverse transcripts in virions from human immunodeficiency and murine leukemia viruses. J. Virol. **66:**4893–4900.
76. **Watkins, B. A., H. H. Dorn, W. B. Kelly, R. C. Armstrong, B. J. Potts, F. Michaels, C. V. Kufta, and M. Dubois Dalcq.** 1990. Specific tropism of HIV-1 for microglial cells in primary human brain cultures. Science **249:**549–553.
77. **Wiley, C. A., R. D. Schrier, J. A. Nelson, P. W. Lampart, and M. B. A. Oldstone.** 1986. Cellular location of human immunodeficiency virus infection within the brains of acquired immune

deficiency syndrome patients. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **83:**7089–7093.

78. **Willey, R. L., R. A. Rutledge, S. Dias, T. Folks, T. Theodore, C. E. Buckler, and M. A. Martin.** 1986. Identification of conserved and divergent domains within the envelope gene of the acquired immunodeficiency syndrome retrovirus. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **83:**5038–5042.
79. **Wolfs, T. F. W., J. J. de Jong, H. Van den Berg, J. M. Tijnagel, W. J. Krone, and J. Goudsmit.** 1990. Evolution of sequences encoding the principal neutralization epitope of human immunodeficiency virus 1 is host dependent, rapid, and continuous. Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA **87:**9938–9942.
80. **Wolfs, T. F. W., G. Zwart, M. Bakker, and J. Goudsmit.** 1992. HIV-1 genomic RNA diversification following sexual and parenteral virus transmission. Virology **189:**103–110.
81. **Wolinsky, S. M., C. M. Wike, B. T. M. Korber, C. Hutto, W. P. Parks, L. A. Rosenblum, K. J. Kunstman, M. R. Furtado, and J. L. Munoz.** 1992. Selective transmission of human immunodeficiency virus type-1 variants from mothers to infants. Science **255:**1134–1137.
82. **Zack, J. A., S. J. Arrigo, S. R. Weitsman, A. S. Go, A. Haislip, and I. S. Y. Chen.** 1990. HIV-1 entry into quiescent primary lymphocytes: molecular analysis reveals a labile, latent structure. Cell **61:**213–222.
83. **Zack, J. A., A. M. Haislip, P. Krogstad, and I. S. Y. Chen.** 1992. Incompletely reverse-transcribed human immunodeficiency virus type 1 genomes in quiescent cells can function as intermediates in the retroviral life cycle. J. Virol. **66:**1717–1725.
84. **Zhang, H., Y. Zhang, T. P. Spicer, L. Z. Abbott, M. Abbott, and B. J. Poiesz.** 1993. Reverse transcription takes place within extracellular HIV-1 virions: potential biological significance. AIDS Res. Hum. Retroviruses **9:**1287–1296.
85. **Zhang, L. Q., P. MacKenzie, A. Cleland, E. C. Holmes, A. J. Leigh Brown, and P. Simmonds.** 1993. Selection for specific sequences in the external envelope protein of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 upon primary infection. J. Virol. **67:**3345–3356.
86. **Zhang, Y. M., S. C. Dawson, D. Landsman, H. C. Lane, and N. P. Salzman.** 1994. Persistence of four related human immunodeficiency virus subtypes during the course of zidovudine therapy: relationship between virion RNA and proviral DNA. J. Virol. **68:**425–432.
87. **Zhu, T. F., H. M. Mo, N. Wang, D. S. Nam, Y. Z. Cao, R. A. Koup, and D. D. Ho.** 1993. Genotypic and phenotypic characterization of HIV-1 in patients with primary infection. Science **261:**1179–1181.